



Unrolling the Scroll

Episode Five The Time of the Beast

The Rapture has already taken place
The Bride has been caught up in the air
And YOU have been left behind...

WILL YOU BE ABLE TO SURVIVE ???

©Copyright 2009 by Dr. Ray Young
Final Great Awakening Ministries
42 Forest Drive
Jeffersonville, IN 47130

All rights reserved under International and Pan-American Copyright Conventions. Published in the United States by Final Great Awakening Ministries. No part of this publication may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system, or transmitted in any form or by any means – electronic, mechanical, photocopying, recording or scanning – without the prior written permission of the author. Requests for permission should be addressed to the author at 42 Forest Drive, Jeffersonville, IN 47130.

ISBN # 978-1-60743-950-9

All Scripture quotes found in this book are taken from the New King James Translation Bible, unless otherwise specified.

Table of Contents

Dedication	5
Acknowledgements	7
Preface	9
Day 1 – The Worst Is Yet to Come	11
Day 2 – 7-7-7, not 6-6-6	21
Day 3 – Woe, Woe and... Whoa!	31
Day 4 – Silence in Heaven	37
Day 5 – The Prayers of the Saints	45
Day 6 – Hail, Fire and...Blood???	57
Day 7 – Oxygen Shortage!	63
Day 8 – Mountain from the Sky	69
Day 9 – Splitting Mountains in Two	75
Day 10 – Bitter Waters	79
Day 11 – Smoke Gets in Your Eyes	83
Day 12 – Locusts from Hell	89
Day 13 – The Mutant Menace	97
Day 14 – Float like a Locus, Sting like a Scorpion	103
Day 15 – Math Whiz!	111
Day 16 – 200 Million Man Army	117
Day 17 – The Seven Thunders	125
Day 18 – The Little Book	131
Day 19 – Don't Bug Agabus	141
Day 20 – Blueprints from the Future	149
Day 21 – Elijah Who Is to Come	155
Day 22 – My Two Witnesses	163
Day 23 – A Woman Clothed With the Son	171
Day 24 – Disgruntled Employee	179
Day 25 – Cast Out of Heaven	189
Day 26 – The Beast from the Sea	195
Day 27 – Strange Critter, Strange Bedfellows	205
Day 28 – Cheap Imitations	213
Day 29 – Fire from Heaven	221
Day 30 – Mark of the Beast	229
Revelation Master Timeline	237
Episode Master Outline	243
Meet Dr. Young	247

Dedication

Every time I write another book, one of the most perplexing things I have to do is to figure out who to dedicate it to. The first book was easy...my precious wife. The second book a little harder...close friends who had helped to make this entire process happen. The third book a little harder still...a dear friend who had been a constant companion and armor-bearer during his time in our ministry who is now with the Lord. This is now the fourth book to be written, even though it is the fifth book in this series. Confused? Don't worry. It's a Star Wars kind of thing. If you're a Star Wars fan, you will know immediately what I am talking about. If you're not...don't worry about it. Because either way, this book is dedicated to **you**. After battling with rock-headed Pre-Tribbers for years who wouldn't listen to what Scripture actually had to say, I am finally now starting to find folks like you who have started to come to their senses and realize that in order to get to Heaven, there's gonna be Hell to pay! Already you are starting to realize that this ain't your mamma's kind of theology book! Good. It's high time. This book is dedicated to that new breed of tough-minded, pure-hearted Christian who knows that we are about to enter the most perilous times in the history of the world, and that unless they are truly ready for what is coming, they are going to fall away, just like the untold millions who will become offended, betray one another and generally get nasty with each other after they find themselves uncomfortably left behind after the Resurrection/Rapture leaves them behind, wondering what on earth happened? Actually, dear friends, it's not just what is happening **on earth**, it's what's happening **in heaven**. This book is also dedicated to those individuals who, **after** the Resurrection/Rapture, are desperately trying to figure out (1) what happened to everybody else and (2) what they need to do now to try and climb back into God's good graces so that they can (3) make heaven and (4) miss the Lake of Fire just up ahead. Either way, I'm going to set teeth a-grindin' during this Episode, just like I did in the last one, because I am going to present some very unpleasant truths in as pleasant a way as I can. What is contained in this Episode is the kind of stuff that should scare you enough to get right with God **right now!** And for those of you who **didn't** live right and are stuck here after we're gone, this is going to show you how to **live** and how to **die** for your faith, so that you can still be counted worth of the Resurrection. Dear readers, **this book's for you**, to borrow a phrase. Enjoy. Learn. Prepare. Above all, may God richly bless each and every one of you as you walk in faith and obedience to Him!

Dr. Ray Young

Acknowledgements

I want to acknowledge my wife, helpmeet, friend and companion, Beverly. Without her love and support, I would not be in the ministry today. When a heart attack and malignant, inoperable cancer both threatened to take my life within the span of one year, she faithfully ministered to my needs just as she had done as a child for her invalid father. She loved me, nursed me and nurtured me through the crisis. When the church I was pastoring betrayed me and fired me as I lay in the hospital, she stood by me, comforted me and protected me. Aside from Jesus Christ, I owe her everything. This book would not be in existence if she had not patiently prodded me to pick up the work I had begun three years ago and then let go, entangled in other issues and problems. Darling, acknowledging you is not nearly enough. Thanking you is not nearly enough. Praising you is closer to the truth, but Proverbs 31 still says it best:

"Charm is deceitful and beauty is passing, but a woman who fears the Lord, she shall be praised. Give her the fruit of her hands, and let her own works praise her in the gates" – Proverbs 31:30-31

Preface

Oh, NO! Yet ANOTHER book on Revelation! When will it ever end?

Yup! Another book (actually **Seven Books**) on **The Revelation of Jesus Christ**, the most important book in the entire Bible! Why do I say that? Because it Cross-foots the entirety of Scripture together into one ultimate, masterful piece of non-fiction literature; the **Story of All Stories about the Love of All Loves**.

But a zillion books have already been written on this subject. **Why another one???**

Because many of them are dreadfully, dangerously, deadly wrong.

Certain things are being taught in American Christianity about the Rapture and the events contained in The Revelation Of Jesus Christ that are so completely out of context that the truth appears to be a lie, and vice versa. Now, wait a second, pastor! Are you saying that these folks don't love the Lord? Nope! Do they love Jesus with all their hearts? Yup! Do I love the folks that are writing these books and teaching these things? Yup! But being absolutely sure and absolutely right isn't the same thing. Let me give you an example: For many years I believed a certain way about the Rapture and the Tribulation and the Wrath of God, etc, etc. And I believed firmly, passionately, and, I thought, accurately. I faithfully repeated everything I ever heard any TV preacher say. I even looked up the Scriptures, kinda, sorta, that they quoted from. It all seemed good at first glance. Then, one day about 15 years ago, I was pastoring a little Spirit-filled church in Southeastern Indiana when the Lord spoke to me and said, *"I want you to teach from The Revelation of Jesus Christ"*. My reply was, *"No way! Every lunatic and wacko from Waco uses Revelation as a hidey-hole for their crazy doctrines and practices. They twist and distort the Word of God to suit their own purposes."* The Lord replied, *"Then who will teach it correctly?"*

That floored me. Now I no longer had an argument, because He knew how very much I valued Scripture, and how much emphasis I placed on **rightly dividing the Word of God**. So, I had to make several quality decisions. The first was to **scrap everything I had ever been taught about this wonderful book**. The second was to **read the book literally, logically and chronologically**. That meant that I had to begin with the following assumptions:

- (1) What I was reading was **literally true, not symbolically true**.
- (2) That this book was **designed to be logical, and meant to be understood**.
- (3) That the events portrayed in this book were **chronological**, forming an **accurate time-line** that could be followed, and into which **all other Scriptures** regarding the Second Coming of the Lord Jesus Christ could be cleanly placed, **without distortion or manipulation**.

When I finally got done, with passages underlined, cross-footed, dove-tailed, doubled-underlined, noted, commented on and read again and again, everything fell into place, exactly as it was supposed to.

Not only that, but, to my absolute horror, **what The Revelation of Jesus Christ REALLY SAID, literally and clearly, was in absolute variance to what most so-called prophecy experts were saying it said!** Now I had a dilemma. I could no longer teach what I had been teaching. And I knew that I could no longer rely on the so-called experts. So I began to teach this little congregation the book, line by line and precept by precept. The old guard were outraged. It violated their long-held, highly cherished theology. And they were in no mood to change their minds. The young adults in the church were astonished, but thrilled, and took up my challenge to search the Scriptures to see if these things be so. Time and time again, they came back to me, saying *"You were right, pastor! That's what it actually says! In context! Literally!"*

But for the next ten years, virtually every attempt I made to teach this new, but very old, truth fell on deaf ears. America was not willing to listen to anything that stretched its comfort zone. Suburbanianity, masquerading as Christianity, didn't want to be moved out of its three bedroom, two-car garage dream world to face what was actually going to come on the world and the church in their lifetimes. Only in the Black Christian community did I find ears that were willing to listen, and hearts that were willing to accept and change, even though I am Indo-European myself, of Welsh and German ancestry. Then God moved us to a suburb of Cincinnati, Ohio. After pastoring a small, African-American congregation for about three years, circumstances necessitated us forming a new, multi-cultural, non-denominational church. Suddenly, everyone I encountered wanted to hear what I had to say. Everyone I taught these truths to eagerly searched them out for themselves, and readily embraced them. What had happened? Perhaps the deadly events of 9-11 shocked America so badly that she started to wake up. Perhaps the Holy Spirit had finally decreed that it was time for this to be preached. No matter why, the door suddenly swung wide open. I was eternally grateful, and very, very relieved.

As you read this book, the fifth of seven episodes, you will begin the most exciting Scripture journey you have ever taken. If you complete this journey (and you only need to "walk" about 15 minutes each day to do it), you will come to understand exactly how The Revelation Of Jesus Christ is put together, what each of the key symbols represent, in what order the events will occur, when the Rapture will occur, who the Wrath of God will fall on, and, most importantly, **what you must do to ensure that when the roll is finally called up yonder, YOU will be there!**

For further information on how to obtain additional copies of this book, any of the other Episodes, please contact us at the address listed below, email us, or phone us. We stand ready and willing to talk with you, answer your questions, and, most importantly, **pray with you and for you.**

May God richly bless you as you walk in faith and obedience to Him!

Dr. Ray Young
Final Great Awakening Ministries
42 Forest Drive
Jeffersonville, IN 47130

(812) 590-2395 or (513) 227-5416
pastorray@insightbb.com
www.fgam.org

Day 1 – The Worst Is Yet to Come



“⁸ Then the second angel sounded: *And something like a great mountain burning with fire* was thrown into the sea, and a third of the sea became blood.⁹ And a third of the living creatures in the sea died, and a third of the ships were destroyed.” – Revelation 8:8-9

As we begin this **Fifth Episode** out of seven, we need to stop for just a second and take inventory of what has already happened. In **Episode One**, we were introduced to **Jesus Christ**, Son of God, in His full power, glory and divinity. We began to understand something of His awesome nature. In **Episode Two**, we discussed the **Things That Are**, or, more accurately, **that were** at the point in history when Jesus dictated this most important letter of all to John the Revelator. Actually, if you want to get technical about it, John was not the Revelator, Jesus was. What, then, was John? The **Revelatee**, if such a word exists. If not, heck, I just made it up! The things that were current business in his day were seven rebellious churches in Asia Minor, his marketing territory, if you will. Since John was in exile on the Isle of Patmos, 20 some miles off the coast of Asia Minor, he couldn't go to them personally, so Jesus handled the matter for him by using extreme Word of Knowledge and Prophecy to scare the pants off of them (hopefully!) In **Episode Three**, we began to discuss **Things That Shall Be**, or future events, beginning with the opening of the **Scroll** and the Seven Seals, at least the first five of them. In **Episode Four** we examined the nature of the **Crucified Bride**, or what it will take to make the Church ready for the terrible Tribulation, Great Tribulation and eventual Rapture. We also discussed the troubling fact that only half of the “church” will actually go in the Rapture, leaving a stunned and frightened half on an earth about to be torn to shreds in the terrible **Seventh Seal**, or **Wrath of God**.

This Episode, **The Time of the Beast**, begins the study of this awful time in history. Our Discussion of the Seventh Seal will conclude at the end of **Episode Six**, with **Episode Seven** devoted to the time of peace on earth during the **Millennial Reign** of the Son of David on this earth, **the destruction of the heavens and the earth** at the end of that period, the **Bema Seat / Great White Throne Judgment** of most of mankind and all the works of all men, believer and non-believer alike, and, finally, the **New Heavens and the New Earth**, our ultimate destination, if we hold fast to our faith and faint not. So hold on to your seats, boys and girls, we still have a long way to go, and quite a ride ahead of us, with all kinds of twists, turns and explosions of every imaginable sort ahead of us. It won't be pretty for a while, but just clench your fists and think of it like a tetanus shot, something you hate to get but which you need to have.

As always, most prophecy experts are in complete denial that **any of us** are going to have to go through **any of that**. The Pre-Tribulation camp, of course, denies that we will have to suffer anything for the cause of Christ. That stance is particularly difficult to explain to our brothers and sisters in the 3rd World, who are already actively involved in suffering for the sake of the Name of Jesus. For those of you who have blinders on in this country, have you not noticed one legal decision after another being rendered by our own courts against Christians? Within the last year, a judge issued an edict threatening any high school student who even **spoke** the Name of Jesus at their graduation ceremony with six months behind bars, and told them that “they would wish that they had never been born” when the court was done with them. True! Each year, the screws are being tightened a little more and a little more, as we allow the atheists, homosexuals, lesbians and all those who rebel against a God

who issues moral absolutes to take control of our nation. The generation of lawlessness is slowly being raised up in preparation for the Man of Lawlessness. The Mid-Tribulation camp is closer to the truth, except that there is no such thing as a Seven-Year Tribulation. Pastor Ray, are you saying that there is no such thing as the Tribulation? Did I say that? No, dear friends. Listen very carefully to what I am saying. Yes. There is such a Tribulation. No. It will not last seven years. **It will last much longer than seven years.** And, we, dear friends, will be here through **the entire period.** Unless, of course, you are martyred for the sake of Christ. Sudden death, sudden glory. Many of us will not get to see the Rapture, because our lives and our blood will have been shed for the cause of Christianity. We will be tested, and our faith will be challenged, even unto death. If it was good enough for the boss...

But even then, we are not out of the woods. Following the terrible time of the **Thlipsis** or **Tribulation**, there will come an even more terrible time called the **Megas Thlipsis** or **Great Tribulation.** We have already discussed the characteristics of this period in the previous Episode. At the end of the **Sixth Seal**, **after** war, **after** ethnic genocide, **after** crop failure, **after** plague and famine, **after** global persecution, **after** a global earthquake, **after** the eruption of every volcano, active or dormant, across the globe, **after** a global blackout, **after** a massive meteorite shower, **then and only then** does the prepared **Bride** portion of the church lift off the surface of this planet, following the resurrection of all those who have died in Christ up until that point in time plus all the Old Testament saints.

All of that, however, is just the precursor of things to come. Truly, **the worst is yet to come.** Since this is my book, I get the right to tell an occasional bad joke. Since this one applies, here goes:

A trucker was coming down a steep mountain grade carry a full load of steel on his trailer. (Let's go for the worst possible scenario. It wouldn't be nearly as much fun if he were running empty, or "deadhead" as the trucking industry likes to call it). Suddenly, about half way down the mountainside, he realized that his brakes were gone. He was an exceptional driver, and somehow managed to keep the rig on the road down the twisting and turning route, narrowly missing one vehicle after another. Soon he realized that even if he successfully managed to make it all the way down without incident, one final obstacle remained: This mountain road emptied out into one of the busiest intersection in the state, where three major interstates, six lanes each, all came together. Accepting his inevitable fate, he got on his CB and called all his trucker buddies in the area: "10-4 now, c'mon all you truckers out there," he said. "Git yerself to the intersections of I-40 and I-29 and I-52. I'm headed full steam into the intersection with a full load o' steel, no brakes, no way to stop, and **you ain't never seen no bad wrecks before!**" I know, I know! It's a really, really bad joke. But it illustrates the point I am trying to make. Everything up to this point in time has been horrible. But we ain't seen no really bad wrecks up to this point in time. **Now** we are going to see some **really bad wrecks, the complete and total destruction of the surface of our planet**, a time of which Jesus said that if those days had not deliberately been cut short, **no flesh would have survived.** In short, the events contained in the dreaded Seventh Seal constitute an **ELE**, or **Extinction-Level Event.** According to the fossil record, the earth has already suffered two near-misses, one that destroyed about 80% of all life on earth, and another that seems to have destroyed 90% or even more of the life on earth. This time, it will be **100%** except for the timely intervention of the Son of God and an invasion from outer space which will take place in Revelation Chapter 19. If not for that intervention, the earth would be reduced to a charred, blackened, airless ball of rock spinning slowly around the sun, just as dead as her sister world Mars and her cousin world Venus. But we are not to that point just yet.

As we nudge closer and closer to this time, more and more Christians start to squirm and try to find a way out, some magical escape clause in Scripture. They point to Jesus' parable about the days of Noah and try to say that Jesus was saying that we would be spared just as Noah and his family were spared. I have already dealt at length with that fantasy in **Episode Four, Day 7 – They Never Knew What Hit 'Em!** Jesus never said that we would be spared from that time. Go back and read the passage carefully, and then read the article. You will quickly see what I mean about twisting Scriptures.

It is extremely interesting to examine exactly what **is** said about these events in the Gospels, what Paul said about them in his Epistles, and what Jesus had to say in closing in **The** Revelation of Jesus Christ, His final, definitive work on the subject. In doing my research for this article, I made yet another

astounding discovery, and I am blessed and privileged to share it with you. Let's examine each of the Scriptures that talk about **wrath**, and see what they say, starting with the Gospel of Matthew:

"⁴ Now John himself was clothed in camel's hair, with a leather belt around his waist; and his food was locusts and wild honey. ⁵ Then Jerusalem, all Judea, and all the region around the Jordan went out to him ⁶ and were baptized by him in the Jordan, confessing their sins. ⁷ But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees coming to his baptism, he said to them, "Brood of vipers! Who warned you to flee from the **wrath to come**?" -- Matthew 3:4-7

We begin our word search with the famous quote from John the Baptist. When he spotted the Pharisees and Sadducees hanging around, watching the show, with no real interest in repentance, but keeping a close eye on this wild man who dressed just like Elijah, he tore into them, calling them a brood of vipers and asking them who warned them to flee from the **wrath to come**. Since the Seventh Seal is called the **Wrath of God** (something that I'll document for you in just a little bit), I decided to see what **Koine Greek** word was used for the key word **wrath**. Remember in our previous Episode, I showed you how to link or connect similar Scriptures by **symbol** or **phrase**? Well, using an exact match on a key word is the same as matching a key phrase. When John the Baptist uses the word **wrath**, what Greek word is used? It is the word **orge**, not to be confused with the similar sounding word **ogre**, as in **Shreck**. What does **orge** mean? How about **anger, wrath, indignation, anger exhibited in punishment, or the punishment itself triggered by anger**? It's the kind of thing that an outraged father would exact on someone who had seriously hurt his child, a violent lashing out in justifiable pain and a desire for retribution. Clearly embedded in the meaning of the word is the implied **exacting of just punishment for an evil deed**. Boy, does **that** ever fit the Seventh Seal! Remember, neither John nor Jesus warns us to try to escape **Tribulation**, the Greek word **Thlipsis**. In every use of the word, either to describe the Fifth Seal, the Tribulation itself, or the Sixth Seal, the **Megas Thlipsis**, or Great Tribulation, we find the church going **through** these events and not escaping them. In fact, in Revelation 7:9 and 7:13-14, we find a **vast multitude from every nation, kindred and tribe coming out of the Great Tribulation (megas thlipsis)**. Nowhere is there any listed escape from those two previous events. However, John must have been warning the people he was baptizing about fleeing from the **wrath to come**, because he challenged the Pharisees and Sadducees, asking them who had warned **them**. Get the picture? In the parallel passage in Luke, we find virtually the same statement:

"² while Annas and Caiaphas were high priests, the word of God came to John the son of Zacharias in the wilderness. ³ And he went into all the region around the Jordan, preaching a baptism of repentance for the remission of sins, ⁴ as it is written in the book of the words of Isaiah the prophet, saying: 'The voice of one crying in the wilderness: 'Prepare the way of the LORD; make His paths straight. ⁵ Every valley shall be filled and every mountain and hill brought low; the crooked places shall be made straight and the rough ways smooth; ⁶ And all flesh shall see the salvation of God.' ⁷ Then he said to the multitudes that came out to be baptized by him, 'Brood of vipers! Who warned you to flee from **the wrath to come**?' " -- Luke 3:2-7

Luke's statement is a little harsher, applied to the whole crowd. By using the **Eyewitness Account Principle**, we have to grant Matthew's account a higher degree of authority, since even though he may not have actually witnessed the event, his sources (Jesus Himself and the other disciples) probably did so, whereas Luke came into the picture **after the fact**, gathering information second hand some time after the event. Either way, the Greek word used for **wrath** is **orge**. As we move into the writings of Paul, the plot thickens considerably. Paul will use the **exact same Greek word three times**, and in every case it will mean **exactly the same thing**. Let's look at his first use of the word, found in his letter to the church at Ephesus:

"⁵ For this you know, that no fornicator, unclean person, nor covetous man, who is an idolater, has any inheritance in the kingdom of Christ and God. ⁶ Let no one deceive you with empty words, **for because of these things the wrath of God comes upon the sons of disobedience**. ⁷ Therefore do not be partakers with them." -- Ephesians 5:5-7

There's that **wrath** thing again. Guess what Greek word is used? Right you are! **Orge**. As we compare Scripture to Scripture, it is becoming obvious that this wrath thing is not just a generalized concept, something like "Just wait till your father gets home!". No, dear friends, it is becoming clear that we are looking at a regularly scheduled event, something which is going to happen at a specific point in time. But since misery loves company, we should see if there are more supportive Scriptures for this particular interpretation. As such, we move to the next two uses of the term **wrath**, this time in the first letter to the believers at Thessalonica:

*"⁹For they themselves declare concerning us what manner of entry we had to you, and how you turned to God from idols to serve the living and true God,¹⁰ and to wait for His Son from heaven, whom He raised from the dead, **even Jesus who delivers us from the wrath to come.**"*

-- I Thessalonians 1:9-10

*"¹⁴For you, brethren, became imitators of the churches of God which are in Judea in Christ Jesus. For you also suffered the same things from your own countrymen, just as they did from the Judeans,¹⁵ who killed both the Lord Jesus and their own prophets, and have persecuted us; and they do not please God and are contrary to all men,¹⁶ forbidding us to speak to the Gentiles that they may be saved, so as always to fill up the measure of their sins; but **wrath has come upon them to the uttermost.**"*

-- I Thessalonians 2:14-16

Wow! Paul makes it sound as if the event has already happened, doesn't he? But in verse 19, he talks about the coming of the Lord, all in the context of the same train of thought, so it looks like he was connecting the two events together. He wasn't far from being correct in that respect, although he was clearly convinced, as were all the apostles, that Jesus' return would be in their lifetimes. They placed that hope on several comments that He had made earlier in His ministry, and tended to ignore the statements that He made later on, with only a few days left to live, when He began to realize, through the Holy Spirit, that this whole project was going to take a lot longer than He originally thought. We also talked about that situation in our previous Episode. I hate to do that to you, the making reference to things in other Episodes, but there's no way around it. Please understand that during this whole process, God has developed in me a complete systematic theology, with each concept interrelated to all the others. This is not some random compendium of aimless statements. Each and every concept and principle that undergirds these works has been developed in my mind and heart by God over a period of many years. Each principle has been carefully tested against Holy Scripture, and, as Wesley dictated, against reason and common sense as well. If it didn't line up with the Word of God in context, and it didn't make sense logically, it never made it into print in these pages. However, there is a problem with explaining a new systematic theology to people. It is impractical to explain a concept or principle over and over again when it has already been explained or defined previously. Does that mean that you have to buy all the Episodes for all of this to make complete sense? Yup! Mean, ain't I? It's kind of like Star Wars. If you just saw one movie, it was exciting in and of itself, but there were missing pieces that you could never understand unless you saw **all** the Star War movies. As an example, in the very first movie George Lucas released, we encounter a very evil individual named Darth Vader. We know he's a bad guy, but we don't find out until later that he is also Luke Skywalker's father. Which raises the question: **How the heck did that happen?** It is only in the **final** Star Wars movie that we discover the terrible tragedy and horrible mistake that Anakin Skywalker made that turned him into Darth Vader. In the same way, **Unrolling the Scroll** is being rolled out in a non-sequential fashion. I've already discussed why. It does, however, raise a problem for our readers. If you purchase just one of the Episodes, I will often make reference to ideas, concepts and principles that have already been defined elsewhere in the series, but not necessarily in the book you purchased. And just like Star Wars, you will need to purchase **all** the Episodes to fully understand all of the concepts and revelations that God has graciously given me. But when you are done, you will understand Holy Scripture in a way that surpasses most pastors and many serious Bible scholars. Isn't that a little arrogant? Perhaps. But I have never met anyone who could prove me wrong on any single theory or doctrine through the Word of God or by logical argument. I am open to reason. My mind is not closed to rational discussion. But once a concept is developed and proven through the process that the Lord has given me, it becomes literally unbreakable. To repeat myself on this point only, then: **I have the revelation by inspiration, but the confirmation by investigation.** This is the guiding principle that He gave me many years ago. And, like Solomon's wisdom, granted as a result of prayers

and offerings, it has never failed me in all these years, nor do I anticipate it doing so in the future. It will cost you a little money to pick up all the Episodes, but, purchased over a period of time, it will not be a burden. By the time you need this information, starting around 2014 or so, you should have the entire concept down pat. On the other hand, if you are reading this article in the year 2012, you'd better get cracking! Everything is going to start cascading downward in 2014, including the complete economic collapse of the United States, and a limited nuclear war involving North Korea, South Korea, Israel, Iran, Iraq, Syria, Saudi Arabia, and, unfortunately, the United States itself. How do I know that? I hate to do this to you, but that also is in Episode Four. Just go buy the book, OK???

Meanwhile... Back to the **wrath** thing. Sorry I got off track. You ought to know me well enough by now to know I tend to do that. If you just bought this book and are reading one of my works for the first time, I apologize. The Lord takes me off on tangents from time to time, but we always manage to find our way back to the main topic eventually.

What might have begun as a generalized concept is now clearly defined as an actual event, or, as we are about to discover, a whole series of events. According to Revelation, all of these end-time events are encapsulated in a **Scroll with Seven Seals**. As each seal is opened, certain key events take place, cumulating in the eventual return of Christ with His conquering armies in Revelation Chapter 19. For those of you who have only this book to work from, here is the chain of events:

1. **Seal One – The White Horse – War** – A Bow, A Crown, conquering and to conquer.
2. **Seal Two – The Red Horse – Ethnic Genocide** – A Sword, that men should slay one another.
3. **Seal Three – The Black Horse – Crop failure** of wheat and barley, in the northern hemisphere.
4. **Seal Four – The Pale Horse – Plague and famine** in the southern hemisphere.
5. **Seal Five – The Tribulation** – Global persecution against the church, men hate, betray one another.
6. **Seal Six – The Great Tribulation** – Global earthquake, Global blackout, meteorite shower, 144,000 male virgin Jews sealed, Holy Spirit removed from the Gentile world, Rapture of the Bride portion of the church.
7. **Seal Seven – The Wrath of God**, now that the Bride has been removed, violent punishment of all mankind.

That's how it plays out, dear friends. No other way. Matthew, Mark, Luke, Revelation and Paul all agree on this timeline. No early exits. No dramatic escapes from the testing of your faith. All of us who are yet alive during this period must endure to the end. Didn't Jesus say that very thing Himself in Matthew Chapter 24? Who am I to argue with Him or tell Him that He doesn't mean what He says? Wouldn't that be more than a little arrogant?

Now we come to the actual event itself. Near the end of the Sixth Seal, a pronouncement is made regarding the impending event, ironically, by the unbelieving world who are now totally convinced that they are goners, but who still stubbornly refuse to repent of their actions:

*"¹² I looked when He opened the **sixth seal**, and behold, there was a **great earthquake; and the sun became black as sackcloth of hair, and the moon became like blood.** ¹³ And **the stars of heaven fell to the earth, as a fig tree drops its late figs when it is shaken by a mighty wind.** ¹⁴ Then **the sky receded as a scroll when it is rolled up, and every mountain and island was moved out of its place.** ¹⁵ And the kings of the earth, the great men, the rich men, the commanders, the mighty men, every slave and every free man, hid themselves in the caves and in the rocks of the mountains, ¹⁶ and said to the mountains and rocks, **"Fall on us and hide us from the face of Him who sits on the throne and from the wrath of the Lamb!"** ¹⁷ **For the great day of His wrath has come, and who is able to stand?"** -- Revelation 6:12-17*

See the chain reaction of events? The great earthquake? The global blackout? The massive meteorite shower? The atmospheric blow-off? (Gee! I forgot to talk about that one! Oh, well! You know, it's in another Episode! Grrr!) And finally, even the unbelieving Gentile world, hostile to and opposed to the Gospel of Jesus Christ, knows that their time is up, and His time is just beginning. At the point that this announcement is made, there are still two events which must take place before the Lord can pour

out His totally justified wrath on the disobedient sons of men. First, He must seal 144,000 male virgins Jews from twelve of the thirteen tribes, excluding Dan, for the purposes of evangelizing the remnant of Israel left alive after all of this calamity. Second, He must remove the Bride, found in Revelation 7:9-17, where a great multitude from every nation, kindred and tribe suddenly find themselves dressed in white robes and standing in front of the Lamb and His Throne. Wow! Halleluia!

All of that is impressive, but it isn't the Wrath of God. That comes next. After the removal of the Bride and the transferring of the Holy Spirit off of the Gentile world, where He has been acting as a major restraining agent and impediment to satanic activity, and the placing of Him squarely on Israel for the complete conversion of all remaining Jews, there are no longer any forces left to hold back the unbridled activity of satan. As such, the world suddenly surges forward in terms of the evil rampant in it. Think it's bad right now? Just wait. The worst is yet to come. The level of evil in the world will be ten times what it is now, internationally, regionally, locally and individually. As Jesus said, wickedness will abound, as will the temptation and the pressure to recant any faith you might have had in Jesus Christ. That also poses a very sticky question. We know that 50% of the church will be left behind. We also know that the Holy Spirit will be taken from the Gentile world. What, then, is the fate of those unfortunate enough to not have been ready, who were left behind? Will the Holy Spirit also be taken from them as well? The thought of that is terrifying. Imagine the horror of knowing that the Rapture has come, those crazy fanatical Christians are now gone, and now you, too, feel the presence of the Holy Spirit being taken from you. Actually, most of those "Christians" would never know it if the Holy Ghost had left them. This same thing happened in Ezekiel, when the Glory of God left the Temple, and no one even noticed it. How sad!

After the events of the Sixth Seal wrap up, there is a totally unexpected lull in the action of about 20 years. Never heard of that? Just wait. We'll cover **Silence in Heaven** about two articles from now. After that, the Wrath of God swings into full effect. The next time we encounter the term, it is in Chapter 11:

*"¹⁶ And the twenty-four elders who sat before God on their thrones fell on their faces and worshiped God,¹⁷ saying: 'We give You thanks, O Lord God Almighty, the One who is and who was and who is to come, because You have taken Your great power and reigned.¹⁸ The nations were angry, and **Your wrath has come**, and the time of the dead, that they should be judged, and that You should reward Your servants the prophets and the saints, and those who fear Your name, small and great, and should destroy those who destroy the earth.'*" -- Revelation 11:16-18

By now it is obvious that the Wrath of God is in full swing. The 24 Elders clearly say **Your wrath has come**.

Now something very interesting begins to take place. Up until now, the Greek word translated **wrath** has always been **orge**, which we have already defined as **just and righteous punishment**. But now the devil enters the picture, with his own kind of wrath:

*"⁷ And war broke out in heaven: Michael and his angels fought with the dragon; and the dragon and his angels fought,⁸ but they did not prevail, **nor was a place found for them in heaven any longer.**⁹ So **the great dragon was cast out**, that serpent of old, called the Devil and Satan, who deceives the whole world; **he was cast to the earth**, and his angels were cast out with him.¹⁰ Then I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, 'Now salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of His Christ have come, **for the accuser of our brethren**, who accused them before our God day and night, **has been cast down.**¹¹ And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb and by the word of their testimony, and they did not love their lives to the death.¹² Therefore rejoice, O heavens, and you who dwell in them! Woe to the inhabitants of the earth and the sea! For the devil has come down to you, **having great wrath**, because he knows that he has a short time.'*" —Revelation 12:7-12

This passage has some controversy surrounding it. Most Bible scholars teach that this casting of the devil out of heaven actually took place a long time ago. In fact, I normally do it myself. But if we look at the passage as being literal and not symbolic, then we have a problem, because it is obvious that the passage says that the casting of satan out of heaven occurs right **then** and **there** in the timeline.

The key to this whole problem lies once again in the original Greek word used that we translate as **heaven**. The word in question is **ouranos**. It has, unfortunately, **more than one meaning**. Here's what the **Blue Letter Bible** has to say about the various meanings of the word:

- 1) **The vaulted expanse of the sky with all things visible in it**
 - a) **The universe, the world**
 - b) **The aerial heavens or sky, the region where the clouds and the tempests gather, and where thunder and lightning are produced**
 - c) **The sidereal or starry heavens**
- 2) **The region above the sidereal heavens, the seat of order of things eternal and consummately perfect where God dwells and other heavenly beings**

Man! That's a lot of choices. According to Paul in II Corinthians Chapter 12 there are **three** heavens. They can best be understood in the following manner:

1. The **first** heaven is the **atmosphere surrounding this planet**.
2. The **second** heaven is the **physical universe in which we live**.
3. The **third** heaven is the **ultimate heaven of heavens where God dwells and has His source of being**.

With that in mind, we have to take a look at Satan, formerly known as Lucifer before he got fired from his job keeping an eye on us (What? Yeah. That's a whole other story. He was the anointed guardian cherub over the Garden of Eden. His outlook post was on top of Mount Ararat. It's all in Ezekiel 28:11-17, and is one of the most amazing untold stories of the whole Bible. Why on earth would Eve trust a talking snake unless **she already knew and trusted the spirit inside of it as a friend and protector?** Maybe some day I'll get to share **that** story with you, but, not today!). Anyway... It looks like he actually got evicted from **two** positions or two heavens. The first apparently came when he got the heave-ho from the **third** heaven for the stunts he pulled during that first 1,000 year **Shabbat** after creation, while his boss, Jesus, was taking a break from all that strenuous creation stuff. During that period of time, he attempted to engineer a takeover of the third heaven. Needless to say, that didn't go well. It got him and his cronies pitched out and down to this physical universe. So he was demoted from the **third** heaven to the **second** heaven. From that point on, his whole objective was to make life down here for us as miserable as possible. Paul called him the **prince of the power of the air** in Ephesians 2:2, and Jesus said after the disciples went out and began to work in supernatural power, casting out demons, that He saw satan **fall from heaven like lightning** in Luke 10:18. When you take the word **air** that is used in Ephesians and substitute the logical alternative word **atmosphere**, everything starts to make sense. What we are looking at here are a series of **demotions due to bad conduct**. First, Lucifer manages to get himself kicked out of the **third** heaven at the beginning of time. Then, the operation of the disciples and, later on, the church, pulled him down from the **second** heaven or the physical universe in which we live. At this point in time, his only sphere of activity is the **first** heaven, or the atmosphere of our planet. Friends, he doesn't have much further to fall. Small wonder then, that when he finally gets kicked out of the atmosphere of this planet down to the **ground** (Ugh! Talk about beneath his dignity!), that he is outraged by this final indignity and knows that he doesn't have a lot of time left, so he goes out to wreak as much havoc as possible.

Now, back once again to that word, **wrath**. Up until now we have only encountered the Greek word **orge**, defined as a **just anger and action against bad conduct**. But the word used to describe Satan's wrath is a totally different word, **thumos**. And **thumos** has a **very** different meaning from **orge**. **Thumos** means **passionate, boiling over anger, drunk to the point of being mad or insane**. Wow. Not a lot of rational, logical thought going on there, is there? Basically, the devil **goes completely out of control**. I know that most of you know **exactly** what I am talking about. Either you or someone you know has, at one time or another, completely **"lost it"** and gone stark raving crazy for a brief moment in time. Often, drunks will get that way if they drink way too much. I used to have a terrible time dealing with my temper. Once, in 8th grade, my best friend angered me and I proceeded to toss him through a closed door. Yeah. Good old compassionate, godly, patient Pastor Ray. The door was still closed after he went through it. It never came unlocked. He just went crashing through the center panel, leaving a gaping hole and many gaping 8th grade students.

Somehow, he was miraculously unharmed. Kids didn't mess with me much after that. Can't understand why. Hmm... That's how it is with the devil. In plain parlance, he **just plain goes nuts!** Now I am sure you can understand why Jesus says that **no flesh would have remained alive** if He had not deliberately cut the process off before it reached it's logical conclusion.

Later on, in Revelation 14, we read about **the destruction of Babylon (Rome):**

*"⁸ And another angel followed, saying, 'Babylon is fallen, is fallen, that great city, because she has made all nations drink of the wine of **the wrath of her fornication.**' "* – Revelation 14:8

There's that **wrath** word again, and, appropriately, it's not **orge**, reserved for the Lord's wrath, but rather **thumos**, an uncontrolled, Viking berserker wrath. At this point in my research, I was feeling pretty proud of myself. I had uncovered a remarkable truth, I thought, and one that I had never heard discussed or written about before. And that may well be true. But it was not quite true enough, because the Lord had a little lesson that He wanted to teach me about Himself that I **wasn't** expecting. I was busy moving quickly from one word reference to another when the Lord suddenly threw me a huge curve. The next occurrence of **wrath** was also in Revelation 14, just a few verses down the line:

*"⁹ Then a third angel followed them, saying with a loud voice, 'If anyone worships the beast and his image, and receives his mark on his forehead or on his hand, ¹⁰ **he himself shall also drink of the wine of the wrath of God,** which is poured out full strength into the cup of His indignation. He shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels and in the presence of the Lamb.' "* – Revelation 14:9-10

As I moved to the Blue Letter Bible, I fully expected, smart as I am, that I would find the Greek work **orge**, because, after all, we are now referring to **the Lord, God Almighty, the Holy One of Israel** here. Instead, I found the word **thumos**, the exact same word used to describe the devil's uncontrollable, violent, near-crazy anger. I was stunned. Surely **God** wouldn't stoop to such an action! This was clearly beneath His dignity. And then I began to think about all the times that we have hurt Him and rejected Him and disobeyed Him and how we took His Only Begotten Son and nailed Him to a cross and mocked Him and spit on Him and hit Him in the face. As I shared these thoughts with my wife Beverly, the Holy Spirit had her to remind me about what happened with the Lord and Moses on Mount Sinai when the people rose up to eat and drink and decided to make a golden calf and say that it was god and that it had brought them out of Egypt. God was so outraged that He told Moses to get out of the way. He was going to kill **all** of them and restart the project from scratch with Moses, making a great and mighty nation out of him! Then she also reminded me of how Jesus made a whip and drove the moneychangers out of the Temple. I am sure that He wasn't nice about it. I am equally sure that there was a violent, righteous rage about Him when He did it. He was so mad that the following morning, when they left the Garden of Gethsemane and headed back to Jerusalem and they encountered a fig tree and found no fruit on it, Jesus **curse**d the poor fig tree from the roots, even though it wasn't the season for figs. The poor tree hadn't done anything wrong. But Jesus knew that unless He discharged that anger from inside of Him before He hit town, God help the first Pharisee or Sadducee that got in His way! Rather than curse a human being who had a soul, and send him screaming into Gehenna, it was better to take His **wrath** out on something that **didn't** have a soul. Clearly, there have been several times when either God the Father or God the Son has been so violently angry that He completely lost it. And you know what? Understanding that doesn't diminish Him in any way in my eyes. All it tells me is that He is a **person** with a **personality**, just like you and me! Yes, He has infinite power and glory. Yes, His patience is beyond our comprehension. Yes, He is eternal, glorious and wonderful, love personified. But if you mess with His kids long enough, sooner or later He is going to get **really, really mad** and He is going to come after your sorry rear end with a **really, really big** whipping stick! Gosh! Did I just say that? Heck, why not! Forget the phony religiosity. God is real. And He is a real person, with real emotions, real feelings, and He can get hurt and wounded and angry just like you and I. The Bible even says that we can **grieve** the Holy Spirit, who works with us and in us constantly and understands how flaky we can be.

So, what is really going on here in this passage? Just this: that God has finally had his fill with all of the ungodliness that we and the devil have been putting out all these years, and now, with matters

coming to a close, He is allowing Himself some really righteous anger, getting it out of His system, once and for all. This, more than anything else, is why you **do not want to be here during the 7th Seal, the Wrath of God.** This is the one time **in all eternity** when God is going to really let it all hang out, and He is going to take personal vengeance for everything that has been done to Him and His precious Son through all time. **Just once** He is going to **give 'em Hell!** And they deserve it. There's nothing unfair or unjust about what is happening and what will happen. We have it coming, and so do the devil and all his demons and imps. **Just wait till your father gets home.** Well, saints of God, **Daddy's home,** and it ain't lookin' very good for the home team just now!

The next time we encounter the **wrath of God,** He's still on a rampage:

*"¹⁷ Then another angel came out of the temple which is in heaven, he also having a sharp sickle. ¹⁸ And another angel came out from the altar, who had power over fire, and he cried with a loud cry to him who had the sharp sickle, saying, 'Thrust in your sharp sickle and gather the clusters of the vine of the earth, for her grapes are fully ripe.' ¹⁹ So the angel thrust his sickle into the earth and gathered the vine of the earth, and threw it into **the great winepress of the wrath of God.** ²⁰ And the winepress was trampled outside the city, and blood came out of the winepress, up to the horses' bridles, for one thousand six hundred furlongs." -- Revelation 14:17-20*

Talk about gory! This is one of the most disturbing passages in all the Bible. The destruction and carnage described in this passage is almost beyond belief. Blood up to the bridle of a horse? That is, for you city dwellers out there, between 5 and 6 feet deep, depending on the horse. Imagine, if you will, blood **five feet deep** and then try to imagine the number of humans who would simultaneously have to die violently, torn to shreds, in order to produce this much blood. What Greek word is used in this passage? Yup! **Thumos.** Violent, uncontrolled, near-crazy anger. And He's still not done. We move on to the next chapter, and what do we find?

*"¹ Then I saw another sign in heaven, great and marvelous: **seven angels having the seven last plagues, for in them the wrath of God is complete.**" -- Revelation 15:1*

The word used to describe wrath? **Thumos.** He's still thumping heads. Let's see how far this goes before His righteous anger is finally spent.

*"⁵ After these things I looked, and behold, the temple of the tabernacle of the testimony in heaven was opened. ⁶ And out of the temple came **the seven angels having the seven plagues,** clothed in pure bright linen, and having their chests girded with golden bands. ⁷ Then one of the four living creatures gave to the seven angels **seven golden bowls full of the wrath of God** who lives forever and ever. ⁸ The temple was filled with smoke from the glory of God and from His power, and no one was able to enter the temple till the seven plagues of the seven angels were completed." -- Revelation 15:5-8*

May we have the envelope, please? And the answer is....**thumos.** He's **still** thumping heads, but He's almost done. When these seven bowl judgments are finished, so will His **wrath.** We move on to the next chapter:

*"¹ Then I heard a loud voice from the temple saying to the seven angels, 'Go and pour out **the bowls of the wrath of God on the earth.**' " -- Revelation 16:1*

Is it safe to come out yet, Pastor Ray? No, not yet. The word **thumos** is still being used. "Not far now", said Papa Smurf.

*"¹⁷ Then the seventh angel poured out his bowl into the air, and a loud voice came out of the temple of heaven, from the throne, saying, '**It is done!**' ¹⁸ And there were noises and thunderings and lightnings; and there was a **great earthquake,** such a mighty and great earthquake as had not occurred since men were on the earth. ¹⁹ Now the great city was divided into three parts, and **the cities of the nations fell.** And **great Babylon was remembered** before God, **to give her the cup of the wine of the fierceness of His wrath.** ²⁰ Then **every island fled away, and the mountains were not found.** ²¹ And **great hail from heaven fell upon men,** each hailstone about the weight of a talent*

(about 100 pounds each!). *Men blasphemed God because of the plague of the hail, since that plague was exceedingly great.*" – Revelation 16:17-21

An angel shouts, "**It is done!**" What is done? **The Wrath of God.** Finally, everything that had been building up for all eternity has now been discharged, and God is finally regaining His composure and collecting Himself. How do I know that? Because of the Greek word that is used in this passage. **Orge.** The Almighty is finally calming down a little. But we're not completely done with violent, uncontrollable anger. Fortunately, it's not from Him.

"¹ *After these things I saw another angel coming down from heaven, having great authority, and the earth was illuminated with his glory.* ² *And he cried mightily with a loud voice, saying, 'Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and has become a dwelling place of demons, a prison for every foul spirit, and a cage for every unclean and hated bird!'* ³ *For all the nations have drunk of **the wine of the wrath of her fornication**, the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth have become rich through the abundance of her luxury.'*" – Revelation 18:1-3

The word used for **wrath** is **thumos**, but fortunately for us and the entire planet, it's referring to Babylon or Rome, and what she (the city) had done, not the Lord. Our journey is almost complete. Only one Scripture remains.

"¹¹ *Now I saw heaven opened, and behold, **a white horse**. And **He who sat on him was called Faithful and True**, and in righteousness He judges and makes war.* ¹² *His eyes were like a flame of fire, and on His head were many crowns. He had a name written that no one knew except Himself.* ¹³ *He was clothed with a robe dipped in blood, and **His name is called The Word of God**.* ¹⁴ *And the armies in heaven, clothed in fine linen, white and clean, followed Him on white horses.* ¹⁵ *Now out of His mouth goes a sharp sword, that with it He should strike the nations. And He Himself will rule them with a rod of iron. **He Himself treads the winepress of the fierceness and wrath of Almighty God.***"
– Revelation 19:11-15

Finally, our journey through the 7th Seal is at an end. With the appearance of Jesus Christ, the **Word of God** and the armies of heaven with Him, the **Wrath of God** is finally completed. And the Greek word used for **wrath? Orge.** The righteous, logical punishment for crimes committed. The Father has finally emptied His totally justifiable wrath out on rebellious mankind, satan and all his foul demons and imps. This final battle won't take very long. The sharp sword coming out of His mouth will utterly destroy the armies of Gog and Magog north of Jerusalem at a place called **Armageddon**, and also the 200 million man army from the east in the Valley of Jehoshaphat. His foot will touch down on the Mount of Olives at the same time that the Anti-Christ is in the Temple proclaiming himself to be god. As every one of his soldiers drops dead around him, terror will grip he and the False Prophet. Jesus will stride into His Father's House, and remove the pretender, once and for all. And then, finally, the **Wrath of God** will be totally spent and done, and we will begin to rebuild this shattered, broken world and recreate the paradise that it once was, a very long time ago. Then, for a thousand years, we will be able to enjoy our resurrection bodies as we reign and rule with Him. Halleluia!

Stay tuned tomorrow, when we analyze the structure of the 7th Seal in an article entitled **7-7-7, not 6-6-6!**

Day 2 ~ 7-7-7, not 6-6-6



“¹² Then I turned to see the voice that spoke with me. And having turned I saw seven golden lampstands,¹³ and in the midst of the seven lampstands One like the Son of Man, clothed with a garment down to the feet and girded about the chest with a golden band.¹⁴ His head and hair were white like wool, as white as snow, and His eyes like a flame of fire;¹⁵ His feet were like fine brass, as if refined in a furnace, and His voice as the sound of many waters;¹⁶ He had in His right hand seven stars, out of His mouth went a sharp two-edged sword, and His countenance was like the sun shining in its strength.

– Revelation 1:12-16

When we examine the Revelation of Jesus Christ, it has been the overwhelming tendency of prophecy teachers to become obsessed with the Anti-Christ and the number of his name, 666. Heaven only knows how many movies have been made, playing off of that number, and how many punk rock groups have eagerly embraced that number, thinking to make themselves look tough or bad. If only they knew the condemnation that they are heaping upon themselves. There is even a current Hispanic Anti-Christ (remember, John said that there are **many** Anti-Christ) who calls himself **Jose Luis de Jesus Miranda**. He has calmly tattooed **6-6-6** on his arm, claiming that since he is Jesus come in the flesh again, the old Christ is no longer correct, so he calls himself the **Anti-Christ**. His believers, and they are many, picket outside of churches, notably Catholic ones, disrupt meetings and worship services, and generally are violent to anything and anyone that is not them and their beliefs.

But **6-6-6** is not our concern in this E-Pistle, nor should it be the focus of any responsible Bible scholar or teacher. Why do I say that? Because there is only a single reference to the number, found in Revelation Chapter 13, Verse 18. Just for the record for all of you who love to squirrel over meaningless details, let me give you a little wake-up call. If you are busy trying to determine who the Anti-Christ is, based on the **number of his name**, please try to have the good common sense not to do it in English! I have encountered a number of “experts” who triumphantly announced that they had determined who the Anti-Christ would be, based on calculating his name in English. Duh! No, make that **DUH!** How dumb do you have to be? Was English even a language back in the first century AD when John wrote down these words? No? Then how on earth would he have set it up for readers who only knew **Koine Greek**, the *lingua franca*, or language of exchange in the empire, telling them that those who were wise would be able to figure it out? There are only two possible languages which qualify: ancient Hebrew and Koine Greek. And Koine Greek has to be the runaway winner, since very few, if any, of his readers would have understood or been able to read Hebrew, a dead language even back then.

We will devote one more brief (at least for me!) paragraph to this subject, and then we will add **one** to all three digits and move on. Exactly how to you calculate the **number of a name**? It’s really pretty simple. Here’s how: every letter in every language has an **ordinal position**. What is an ordinal position? Let me illustrate: In English, the letter **A** is the **first** letter in the alphabet, and so its ordinal position is **1**. The letter **B** is the **second** letter in the alphabet, and so its ordinal position is **2**. Get the picture? I have a neat little worksheet that I use when I teach this that shows each letter in the alphabet and its ordinal position. Then, underneath, I have a series of underlines, so that you can write down all the letters in your name. Then, using the chart above, my students get to calculate the **number of their own name**. Where in earth did that come from? We can thank the **Masorettes**, or **counters**, also known in the Bible as the **Scribes**. The Hebrew word that we translate as **Scribe** really means **counter** in ancient Hebrew. When the men in charge of copying the Torah did so, they used an

ingenious system to ensure that each line was correct. Since they didn't have word processors back then, and erasure of a symbol in ink was virtually impossible, it was absolutely necessary to find a way to totally eliminate errors. This wasn't just **any** book, this was the **Holy, revealed Word of God!** If, while copying any scroll, an error was made **the entire scroll had to be scrapped!** With that in mind, they assigned each Hebrew letter an **number**, based on its ordinal position in the Hebrew alphabet. For example, if you turn to the 119th Psalm, you will find an **acrostic** poem. An acrostic poem is one where each new stanza begins with the **next letter** in a phrase. For example, the cheesy, often sung, **"M is for the many ways..."** is a song with acrostic lyrics. We won't torture you by doing the whole number. The 119th Psalm uses the Hebrew alphabet as the outlining phrase. The first sentence begins with the Hebrew equivalent of our letter **A**, in this case **Aleph**. The next paragraph begins with the Hebrew equivalent of the letter **B**, or **Beth**. Although the two languages don't parallel themselves exactly, it is fascinating to see how many Hebrew letters sound like one of our letters. Why is that? Because we derive English from a common language base used all across Europe, initially developed by the **Phoenicians**, one of the earliest marine trading nations, who needed to develop a common language for doing business. Hence, much later in the time line, the language known as English.

Given all of that, you would need to go to the Koine Greek, list each letter, assign its ordinal value to it, and then figure out, **in Koine Greek**, what name had just the right number and value of letters in just the right places. There have been a number of scholars who have attempted to do just that, trying to match current and past names to the **sum total of the name, 666**. In doing so, there have been some very interesting results and some very ridiculous results. The best match is the name of one of the Caesars, but other candidates include the Catholic Church, and, get this, Bill Clinton! See why you could easily go nuts trying to figure this out?

Our best bet, and a far better course of action, is not to focus on the 6's in Revelation, but rather to focus on the myriad **7's** scattered all through the book. So pervasive is this that entire Revelation of Jesus Christ is constructed on a series of **sevens inside of sevens inside of sevens**. Let's examine the book to see how it all works out.

When we begin our search of Revelation, the first group of seven that we will discuss are the **Seven Churches of Asia Minor**. Asia Minor, now known as Turkey, was the assigned "marketing territory" given to the Apostle John. This is why, when Paul, Timothy and Luke attempted to go there to preach the Gospel, Paul was forbidden to do so by the Holy Spirit. Paul's territory would be the Greek-speaking world, west of Asia Minor. Even the seven churches have additional sevens assigned to them. When we first meet Jesus, He has **seven stars** in His right hand. He is also surrounded by **seven gold lampstands**. We are told that the seven stars are the **angels** of the seven churches and the seven gold lampstands are the **seven churches themselves**. Immediately we run into a translation problem. It surrounds the word translated as **angels**. The Greek word for angel is **aggelos**. I went to my little buddy, the Blue Letter Bible (www.blueletterbible.org), to see how the same word was used elsewhere in the Bible. The results were at the very least, interesting. In the vast majority of cases, it meant just what it is translated in Revelation as, **angel**. However, there were two additional uses or meanings of the word that gave me pause to think. One of the other translations was **spirit** or **ghost**. When Jesus entered the Upper Room with the doors and windows barricaded shut, the disciples at first thought that they were seeing His **ghost**. They couldn't imagine how a physical body could pass through solid walls. The second meaning was the one that interested me the most. In a number of cases, the word is translated as **messenger**. In Malachi 3, the Lord says that He will send His **messenger** before the Messiah comes. This passage clearly refers to John the Baptist, the Elijah who is to come. So **aggelos** might not be **angel**, but rather **messenger** in this passage. And that makes more sense to me. That could be a reference to the **pastor** or **leader** of each of the churches. So in Chapter 2, Verse 1, where it reads, *"To the **angel** of the church of Ephesus, write..."*, might better be translated *"To the **messenger** or **pastor** of the church of Ephesus, write..."* Why do I say that? First of all, there is no record of angels being put in charge of churches. Second of all, none of the angels who stayed faithful to the Lord in the Great Rebellion are guilty of sin in any way. Yet in each of the seven churches, the angel / messenger / leader / pastor is warned of various sins and shortcomings in their lives and are warned to repent, lest Christ come and take their church away. This makes perfect sense to me, particularly in the light that **none of the seven churches exists today**. It would

appear that none of the seven pastors listened to what the Lord had to say to them. Sad to say, nothing new there! It would also make perfect sense for another very good reason. John was the Bishop of Asia Minor, yet was forbidden to visit his pastors in charge of the various churches because he was in exile on the Isle of Patmos, over 20 miles off the coast of Asia Minor. Had John been able to visit those pastors and their respective churches personally, he would have said in person what Jesus had to say for him. Even more interesting is the fact that John, sitting in exile, would have had no way of knowing what was going on in each of the churches, except for the prophetic Word of Knowledge which Christ spoke to him.

But there's another dimension to this little problem, and I would be dishonest not to discuss it. Although the messenger/pastor theory seems to hold water pretty well, there are some loose ends that refuse to be raveled up. If we take a look elsewhere in Revelation, we find the following passages:

"⁴ John, to the seven churches which are in Asia: Grace to you and peace from Him who is and who was and who is to come, and from **the seven Spirits who are before His throne**,⁵ and from Jesus Christ, the faithful witness, the firstborn from the dead, and the ruler over the kings of the earth."
-- Revelation 1:4-5

"¹ And to the angel of the church in Sardis write, 'These things says He who has the **seven Spirits of God** and the **seven stars**: 'I know your works, that you have a name that you are alive, but you are dead.'"
-- Revelation 3:1

"⁵ And from the throne proceeded lightnings, thunderings, and voices. **Seven lamps of fire** were burning before the throne, **which are the seven Spirits of God**." – Revelation 4:5

Now things get a little confusing. At first glance, it looks like the **seven Spirits of God** are the same thing as the **seven stars**. Upon closer inspection, we start to see a subtle but very important difference. First of all, when the translators give us the phrase "**seven Spirits of God**", they are careful to **capitalize** the word **Spirits**. Any time you see a word capitalized like that in the Bible, you know you are looking at a reference to God. There are a few cases where I have found that they missed one that seemed to be obvious to me, but as a whole they seem to be pretty accurate. Also notice that the **seven stars** are **not** capitalized. That strengthens the argument that the seven stars which are the seven "angels" are really seven messengers or pastors. If that is true, however, who in the world are the seven Spirits of God? I had always been taught that there was a triune God consisting of the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit. I can clearly remember an incident that first pointed out this seeming contradiction to me years ago. I was teaching a high school class in the church I attended, and one of the teen-age boys, filled with anger and rebellion but sharp as a tack, confronted me about this **seven Spirits of God** thing. Unfortunately, at that time, I really didn't know. In fact, I didn't understand this reference for a good many years until I finally hunkered down and started studying Revelation in earnest. My studies of Revelation led me to Daniel, and it was in Daniel that I found the answer I had been looking for.

"¹³ I saw in the visions of my head while on my bed, and there was **a watcher, a holy one**, coming down from heaven. ¹⁴ He cried aloud and said thus: 'Chop down the tree and cut off its branches, strip off its leaves and scatter its fruit. Let the beasts get out from under it, and the birds from its branches. ¹⁵ Nevertheless leave the stump and roots in the earth, bound with a band of iron and bronze, in the tender grass of the field. Let it be wet with the dew of heaven, and let him graze with the beasts on the grass of the earth. ¹⁶ Let his heart be changed from that of a man, let him be given the heart of a beast, and let seven times pass over him.' ¹⁷ **This decision is by the decree of the watchers, and the sentence by the word of the holy ones**, in order that the living may know that the Most High rules in the kingdom of men, gives it to whomever He will, and sets over it the lowest of men.'"
– Daniel 4:13-17

As I have frequently mentioned, in order to solve one Bible mystery, I must present and solve **another** Bible mystery in order to solve the mystery I presented in the first place. Now do we not only not know who the **seven Spirits of God** are, we also now do not know who the **Watchers** are. This mysterious reference to Watchers occurs again in Daniel 4:23, as Daniel repeats and interprets the

king's dream. So, who the heck are the Watchers? In order to solve **that** mystery, we have to return **back** to Revelation Chapter 5.

*"⁶And I looked, and behold, in the midst of the throne and of the four living creatures, and in the midst of the elders, stood a Lamb as though it had been slain, having **seven horns** and **seven eyes**, which **are the seven Spirits of God sent out into all the earth.**" -- Revelation 5:6*

Great! Just great, Pastor Ray! I thought you were going to **solve** a mystery. Now, we have just added **seven horns** to the list of things we don't understand!

All in due season, fellow campers, all in due season. Put the **seven horns** on the shelf for just a second and take a good second look at what was said just after that. John, having created a mystery for us earlier, now solves it by telling us that the **seven eyes of the Lamb are the seven Spirits of God send out into all the earth**. Friend, why are you looking at me like that? Don't you get it? No? It's all right, you're fairly new to all this interpretation stuff. Let's decode the symbols one at a time. Remember that I told you that all this stuff is **literal, logical** and **chronological**? Also remember from the last Episode that I explained to you that **if a symbol is presented, it is explained very shortly thereafter, and if it is not explained, it means that it has already been explained elsewhere earlier in the Bible**. Now, what I am about to say will make your head hurt just a little bit, so down a few aspirins with a glass of water and come right back. Back yet? Good. Here goes: In order to understand the reference to the seven Spirits of God in **Revelation**, you need to know about the Watchers in **Daniel**. And in order to understand the Watchers in **Daniel**, you need to understand the seven Spirits of God in **Revelation**. Now, now! Stop throwing things and calm down. Let me explain.

I have to admit that it took me some considerable amount of research to finally totally crack this one. Part of it became obvious as soon as I connected the three Scriptures. To explain, not all angels are created equal. Some appear to look totally human, except for the wings, of course. But there are at least two classifications of angels which are only marginally human, the **cherubim** and the **seraphim**. It would take another whole article to explain these two classes of angels to you, but suffice it to say that they are part **human**, part **animal**, and part **machine**. They are kind of like Divine **Borg** (courtesy of Star Trek fame). Ezekiel 1:5-25 and 10:1-22 have excellent descriptions of them, along with Revelation 4:6-9. The difference between the cherubim and the seraphim is that the cherubim have **four** wings, while the seraphim have **six**. Kinda like military stripes, I guess. The more wings you have, the higher up in the angelic hierarchy you are. One thing that both categories of angels have in common is that **their wings are full of eyes**. Why so? Because they are **sentry beings**, hence the term **Watcher**. Both the permanent throne of God in Revelation and the mobile throne of God in Ezekiel have either a cherub or a seraph positioned at each corner of the platform on which the throne rests. Now, If I were God and I had created a class of angels with as many eyes as a spider or a fly, it would make perfect sense to send them out as **observers** or **Watchers** to keep an eye on the affairs of men and report back. Apparently, very important individuals have their own personal monitors. King Nebuchadnezzar had one. In Ezekiel 28:12-16, the Lord chews out Lucifer and tells him why he got the old heave-ho from heaven. He also reminds him that he was the **anointed cherub who covers (or protects)**. He reminds him that he was stationed on **the holy mountain of God**, and is also quick to remind him that he once was in **Eden, the garden of God**. I hinted at this in the previous article, but the real tragedy about Lucifer and the real untold story of the betrayal in the Garden in Eden was not that Adam disobeyed God, or that Eve was deceived by the serpent. The real story was that the spirit indwelling the serpent at that moment, something that Eve prior to the fall could still see with her spiritual eyes, was the very spirit or angel **who had been assigned to protect them from harm and report back to God about their doings there**. Eve trusted the serpent because she thought that Lucifer was still her friend. Little did she know that she had been betrayed and deceived. Lucifer, after all, was a **cherub**, or **Watcher** before he turned on the Lord and attempted to overthrow Him. By interpreting Scripture using other Scripture, we discover that there is a team of **seven Spirits (angels/cherubs/Watchers) who are assigned to keep an eye on what is going on in this planet and report back to heaven**. We also make the fascinating discovery by examining the Daniel passage that they not only have **responsibilities**, they also have **authority** that matches their responsibilities. When Nebuchadnezzar, the mightiest king in the whole world, starts to

get cocky about his wealth and power, it is the Watchers, not the Lord, who make the decision to bring him down a peg or two. Surprised? So was I. But if you have a management structure, you need to always make sure that the **authority you grant** and the **responsibility you demand** are equally balanced. Too much authority and not enough responsibility always leads to an abuse of power. Hmm... I wonder if that's what happened in the case of Lucifer? Never thought of that before! Too much responsibility and not enough authority and you burn your management team out. This is why Jesus said that to he whom much is given, much is required. Fair. Balanced. Even in heaven. Now we finally understand who the seven Spirits of God and the Watchers are. They are one in the same.

Having dealt with all of that, we now come to the most important seven in the whole Bible, **the Seven Seals of the Scroll**. Up until now, each symbol has represented something real and tangible, but not necessarily chronological. Once we reach the Scroll, **everything** is chronological. It represents the **Master Timeline** for all the End-Time Events. In both Episode One and Episode Four, I have discussed these matter extensively, and will not go into them again at this point in time. In the previous E-Pistle, I outlined for you, in condensed form, what each of the Seven Seals represents. It is when we enter the Seventh Seal that the most detailed, accurate, logical and chronological sequence of events ever outlined occurs, and it is all driven by the number **seven**.

As we enter the Seventh Seal, we encounter a **half hour of Silence in Heaven**. An upcoming E-Pistle, **Silence in Heaven**, will deal with this strange period of time. Moving forward quickly, we encounter the next **set of sevens**, the **Seven Trumpets**. From this point on, this E-Pistle will take the form of an outline, because that's exactly what the Seven Trumpets of Revelation are: **an outline**.

I. First Trumpet

- A. Hail, fire and blood are thrown to the earth.** What on earth is this? We will deal with this, as well as all the other aspects of the 7th Seal, in later articles in great detail. Suffice it to say that we are probably looking at a huge meteorite shower consisting of meteorites so large that they do not burn up completely in the earth's atmosphere. What about the blood part? More on that later. As we move through Revelation, we will find multiple meteorite showers of varying severity, along with a probable comet hit and a hit from a huge asteroid. Clearly, all kinds of bad things are going on in the Solar System during this period of time. Is it possible that as Satan and his fallen angels wage war against Michael and the Heavenly Host that they cause massive damage and disruption within the Solar System during the battle? It seems very clear from studying the Solar System that everything was once build to run with clockwise precision, It also appears that at some previous point in time in the past, severe damage was done to that clockwork mechanism. The gas giant **Uranus** has been knocked on its side, so that its magnetic north pole is sideways, not up and down. Between Jupiter and Mars, there lies an **asteroid belt** which appear to be the shattered remains of a former planet. **Mars** shows all the evidences of once having contained an atmosphere, oceans and the possible capability of sustaining life. The **Earth** has been damaged slightly, tipped enough on one side to produce the seasons. For all the world, it looks like a terrible fight occurred at some time in the distant past, damaging the entire area. Might this not only have happened once, but will happen again? Hmm...
- B. 1/3rd of all the trees are burned up.** I hate to say it, but this is **already happening!** As I write this article in 2007, we are in the 9th or 10th year of a major drought in the Western part of our country. As a result of this extended drought, our West is being ravaged **this year** by **mega forest fires**. I was watching a special on these fires, and one forestry expert estimated that at the current rate, it would take **100 years** to re-grow all the trees that are being burned up, and that by the year 2050 **50% of all the trees in the US will burn up**. What happens when 1/3rd of all the trees in the world burn up? **Massive oxygen depletion in the atmosphere**. What happens when a major portion of the oxygen in our atmosphere is depleted? **People will suffocate to death**, particularly at the higher altitudes. The only safe place? Caves, at low attitude levels. Hmm... all over again. Notice how everything falls logically into place? And they told you that Revelation was just a bunch of crazy religious symbols, didn't they? What do you think of their opinions now?

C. **1/3rd of all green grass is burned up.** Here we go again! What happens when all the grass is burned up? **The herbivores** (plant eaters, cows, sheep, goats, etc.) **all start to die.** What happens when the herbivores start to die off? **The carnivores start to search out new sources of meat.** What is the largest source of non-clawed, non-fanged, non-armored, weak, fragile meat in the world? **Humans.** Revelation 6:8 mentions that one of the things that will kill many people will be **the beasts of the earth.** I never did understand that. Then one day it all fell into place. Cause and effect. Do **this** and **that** will occur. Just as the Bible predicted.

II. Second Trumpet

- A. **Something like a great mountain burning with fire is thrown into the sea.** There are two possibilities which we must entertain here, both of which are Biblical and possible.
1. **A huge asteroid strikes the earth.** Geology and paleontology all clearly document the fact that the earth has endured two such asteroid strikes in its distant past, the most recent of which almost wiped all life off the surface of the planet. Given the already documented solar chaos which is hurling all sort of stellar objects at our planet, something a little bigger is not a shock.
 2. **A mountain, possible Mount Tabor, the Mount of Transfiguration, is ripped from it's roots and hurled into the outer atmosphere, only to crash land back into the ocean, probably the Atlantic Ocean.** As we move further into this Episode, I will provide ample documentation of both possibilities, along with why I suspect that the Atlantic Ocean is the probably point of impact.
- B. **1/3rd of the sea becomes blood.** Actual blood? Hard to imagine. But infected with some extraterrestrial microorganism which turns the sea or Atlantic Ocean into a red goo? Yeah. I can readily imagine that. We have absolutely no clue what is out there waiting for us. Needless to say, if that happens, all life in that portion of the oceans dies quickly.
- C. **1/3rd of all the living creatures in the sea die.** Toldjaso! Again, the clear connection between cause and effect is unmistakable.
- D. **1/3rd of all the ships are destroyed.** Later on, we will analyze what would happen if a solid mass the size of a mountain hit any of the oceans. If it hit the Atlantic Ocean, it would create a massive **tidal wave** or **tsunami** that would race toward North America, South America, Europe and Africa at about **700 miles per hour**, and would be about **700 feet high**. No ship, no matter how sturdy, would be able to stand in the face of such a massive dislocation of water at such speeds. Everything in its path would be destroyed instantly upon impact.

III. Third Trumpet

- A. **A great star, burning like a torch, fell from heaven.** There are some significant differences between an asteroid and a comet. An asteroid is **solid rock**, and as such, would be "on fire" on the part of it that was facing the atmosphere of our planet as it came in. A comet, on the other hand, is basically a giant **frozen slush ball**, consisting of small chunks of rock and ice all intermingled. When a comet passes by the sun, it starts to melt a little, and gives off gas from the evaporating ice. This gas produces what we call the comet's **tail**. That tail always trails the comet on the opposite site of the sun. But if a comet were to enter the atmosphere of our planet, it would produce a **trail of gas** that would produce a tail that would look like a **torch burning**, with the flames trailing it. Symbolic, my foot!
- B. **It falls on 1/3rd of all the rivers and springs.** There's another major difference about the impact effect of a comet versus the impact of an asteroid. As a comet enters the atmosphere, it starts to disintegrate, generally coming to a point where it explodes, scattering its material over a huge area, and leaving a fair amount of material still in the atmosphere for a brief period of time. The asteroid hits the water. The comet explodes over a large land mass, probably Europe-Asia, the single largest continuous land mass on the planet.

- C. **The name of the star is Wormwood.** Bad news. Wormwood is poisonous. Comets often contain significant amounts of what we call the **trace elements**. These trace elements are necessary in the human body in minute amounts. Anything more than that becomes deadly. Arsenic is a good example, but any element that is metallic, even something like mercury, is deadly poison when it comes into contact with a human body.
- D. **1/3rd of all humanity dies from these "bitter" waters.** Another telling piece of evidence to tell us that we are dealing with the kinds of elements that produce an alkaline or salt spring. These kind of springs can be found all across the world, including our own Southwest. This time, it's global.

IV. Fourth Trumpet

- A. **1/3rd of the sun is "struck".** What does that mean? Simply this: so much junk is now in our atmosphere as a result of all these catastrophic events that it begins to occlude the atmosphere and block out the normal sunlight. Check out our article on Krakatoa later on in this Episode. One island/volcano in the Indonesian island chain exploded and caused **The Year Without a Summer**, a time in the US and Europe where the sun was so effectively blocked that the snow and ice in most of America and Europe never melted. Starvation struck the land as farmers all across both continents ran out of food and had no way to replenish their cupboards. Crops could not be planted. Imagine this on a global scale.
- B. **1/3rd of the moon is "struck".** Same thing as the sun.
- C. **1/3rd of the stars are "struck".** What do you think???
- D. **1/3rd of the day did not shine, likewise the night.** Obvious.

V. An angel announces the "Three Woes".

- A. **The first four Trumpets were bad, but not nearly as bad as the next three.**
- B. **The final three Trumpets will be so bad that they are considered as "Woes".**
- C. **A Woe is an event of EXTREME trauma and difficulty.**

VI. Fifth Trumpet / First Woe

- A. **A "star" falls from heaven to earth.** Probably an angel, although another asteroid or comet is not out of the question.
- B. **This "star" is given the "key" to the Abyss or Bottomless Pit.**
 1. **What is the Abyss or Bottomless Pit?** Theologians long considered this to be some sort of symbolic passage, as they do with the entire book of Revelation. However, in the last 200 years, astronomers have discovered a remarkable object called a **black hole**. What is a black hole? According to **Wikipedia**, the wonderful online encyclopedia, a black hole is a region of space in which **the gravitational field is so powerful that nothing can escape after having fallen past the event horizon**. The name comes from the fact **that even electromagnetic radiation (e.g. light) is unable to escape, rendering the interior invisible**. However, black holes can be detected if they interact with matter *outside* the event horizon, for example by drawing in gas from an orbiting star. Now, suppose that the Lord has placed a tiny black hole at the center of this planet, surrounded by a supernaturally strong force field. Consider it to be a **temporary holding cell for a criminal or criminals**. Genesis tells us that the angels that fell in the rebellion came down to earth and married human women (Genesis 6:1-4). Jude tells us that these angels were imprisoned in **everlasting chains in darkness** as punishment for their crimes (Jude

6). Now it's time to apply a little science and a little logic to the situation. Angels are essentially **energy beings**. That's my understanding of what is meant by **Spirit**. The only thing in this physical universe strong enough to trap and keep an energy being like that would be something that neither **matter** nor **energy** can escape from. Hence, the black hole! A black hole without some hyper-powerful energy field around it located in the center of our planet would calmly suck the whole planet in without even a burp. Even a tiny black hole would be enough, because the more matter and energy it consumed, the bigger and stronger it would get. Something must be keeping it from absorbing the planet.

2. Now think about an energy being with a mechanism that could "unlock" the black hole and release the other energy beings incarcerated in it. Don't think too long. This could get really scary.

C. This opens a "hole" in the earth, out of which comes huge amounts of smoke. I'm still chewing on that "smoke" thing. I don't have a good explanation for it, **yet...**

D. "Locusts", demonic beings that are part locust, part horse, part scorpion and part human are released into the planet.

1. Commanded not to harm any of the plant life.

2. Only target are those humans who do not have the seal of God on their forehead (the 144,000 Hebrews from 12 of the 13 tribes).

3. Poison in their stingers is near-deadly neurotoxin.

a. Does not kill.

b. Causes terrible torment and pain for five months before it dissipates.

4. Men will try to kill themselves and will be unable to do so.

E. Commander of these demonic "locusts" is Abbadon/Apollyon. (Major, super-powerful demon)

I want to pause for just a second in this timeline to make a very important point. As we move further and further into the Seals, each successive Seal becomes more and more terrible and more and more complex. Please notice the extremely logical and sequential nature of all of these events. Also notice that each of these events has a reasonable basis on **known science**. Daniel was told in Chapter 12 that **knowledge would increase** in the last days. We have finally come to a point where we understand enough to realize that what John was told almost 2,000 years ago is **scientifically possible**, not symbolic or allegorical. Up until **this generation**, it was **not possible** for men to conceive of the events of the Scroll as **literal**. Their minds had not developed enough at their points in history to be able to absorb all of this. Even today, what I am telling you is not readily absorbable by many people. It's simply **over their heads**. I remember clearly, 30 years ago, telling my father something about computers. I rattled on and on until finally my dad put his hand on my shoulder, causing me to pause for a moment. "*Son*", he said, "*You have got to remember something. When I grew up, we either rode on a horse or walked whenever we wanted to go somewhere. Now we ride in cars and travel to the moon. Please understand that what you are saying is something I can't comprehend. There's just too great a gap*". Today, even though I have spent my entire working life associated with the computer industry, I have trouble with some of the new languages. It took me forever to realize that I could take pictures with my cell phone and send them over the internet. There are technologies out there that our children take for granted that I myself struggle with. See? You're not alone.

Also please notice that these final three Seals are also called Woes. Now can you see why? I expand on all of this in much greater detail later on in this Episode. Now, back to the regularly scheduled program...

VII. Sixth Trumpet

A. Four demons bound at the Euphrates River are released.

1. They and their army will kill 1/3rd of remaining humanity.
2. Army consists of 200 million men.
3. Ride on demonic horses.
4. Represents an alliance between mankind and fallen angels. It's fascinating how art imitates life and life imitates art. In the *Lord of the Rings Trilogy*, an alliance is formed between the demonic *Orc* army of Sauron (the devil) and various portions of mankind. *The Lord of the Rings Trilogy* was written by J.R.R. Tolkien, who was a Christian. Wanna bet that he borrowed this concept straight from the pages of Revelation? Hmm...

B. Remainder of mankind will not repent of their sins

1. Worshipping demons and idols
2. Murders
3. Sorcery
4. Sexual Immorality
5. Thefts

C. NO FURTHER SALVATION IS POSSIBLE IN THE GENTILE WORLD FROM THIS POINT ON!

D. An angel comes from heaven.

1. Clothed with a cloud
2. Rainbow on his head
3. Face like the sun
4. Feet like pillars of fire
5. Has a little book open in his hand
6. Sets his right foot on the sea
7. Sets his left foot on the land
8. Cries out with a loud voice like the roar of a lion
9. SEVEN THUNDERS utter their voices
 - a. John forbidden to write down what the Seven Thunders say
 - b. Details are sealed up
 - c. Will probably not be revealed until sometime just before or during the 7th Seal
10. Angel swears that there will be no further delay regarding the 7th Seal
11. When the 7th Seal is done, the "mystery" of God (His Wrath) will be done
12. John is instructed to take the little book from angel's hand
13. John is told to eat the little book
14. Book is sweet as honey to his mouth but bitter in his stomach
15. John told that he must prophesy about many peoples, nations, tongues and kings

E. John is given measuring rod (yardstick)

1. Told to measure the temple of God, altar and people there
2. Told to leave out the court outside the temple because it is given to the Gentiles
 - a. Gentiles will trample the Holy City (Jerusalem) for 42 months (3½ years)

F. Two witnesses will prophesy 1,260 days (3½ years) dressed in sackcloth

1. They are the two olive trees and lampstands mentioned in Zechariah
2. Fire comes out of their mouths to destroy their enemies
3. Power to shut heaven so that no rain falls while they are prophesying
4. Power over waters to turn them into blood
5. Power to strike the earth with all plagues as often as they want to
6. When they are done with their prophetic ministry, they will be killed by Abaddon
7. Their dead bodies will lie in the streets of Jerusalem for 3½ days

8. **Whole world will be able to see them and no one will be able to bury them**
9. **Whole world will send one another presents just like Christmas, celebrating their deaths**
10. **After 3½ days, the breath of God will enter into them, resurrecting them**
11. **They will stand up on their feet**
12. **Everyone who sees them will be terribly afraid**
13. **A voice from Heaven (the Lord) will say, "Come up here"**
14. **They ascend into heaven with everyone watching**

G. A massive earthquake strikes Jerusalem

1. **7,000 people die**
2. **Everyone else is afraid and gives glory to God**

Whew! We have traveled a very long way in a very short period of time. Do you see now why we have had to approach this subject using an outline format? Can you now begin to see the startlingly logical and detailed approach God is taking to the Seven Seals? Granted, John didn't write it down in outline form. I don't know if they had that kind of structure in his days. I do know that when I wanted to truly understand this remarkable book, I took a pad of 8 ½ x 11 lined paper, and began to make a structured outline, just as I am doing for you right now. I realize that most people will never take the time or effort to deconstruct this most complex of all books in the Bible, so I am doing it for you. Isn't it amazing how logical, and chronological (sequential) all of this is? God is a scientist besides being a father. After all, all dads have some sort of job that they work at. They are a dad at home, and an employer or an employee during the day. Well, our Heavenly Father is **self-employed**. In fact, you could say that He **started His own business**. You could also call Him a **self-made Man**. (Oh brother! I know that's a doubly bad pun, but it is so perfect! Forgive me!)

What a marvelous God we serve. What a wonderful Lord and Savior is Jesus Christ, the Only Begotten Son of the Living God! We are not done with the 7's in this book. In fact, we have the entire **7th Trumpet** to walk through, containing **7 Bowl Judgments** inside of it! But that final chapter will have to wait till tomorrow. We have run out of time and out of room today. The **3rd and Final Woe** is waiting for us. But our God is faithful, and He will take us safely through it. Until tomorrow, remember that **the kingdoms of this world have become the kingdoms of our God and of His Christ!**
Amen and Amen!

Day 3 – Woe, Woe and...Whoa!



“ ‘Then I saw another sign in heaven, great and marvelous: seven angels having the seven last plagues, for in them the wrath of God is complete.² And I saw *something* like a sea of glass mingled with fire, and those who have the victory over the beast, over his image and over his mark *and* over the number of his name, standing on the sea of glass, having harps of God.³ They sing the song of Moses, the servant of God, and the song of the Lamb, saying: ‘Great and marvelous *are* Your works, Lord God Almighty! ...For *You alone are* holy. For all nations shall come and worship before You, For Your judgments have been manifested.’ ” – Revelation 15:1-4

In our previous E-Pistle, we began to analyze the structure of the Revelation of Jesus Christ, with special emphasis on the many occurrences of the number **seven**. Even using a summary outline format, we only managed to get to the 6th Trumpet of the 7th Seal. It would have been fruitless to try and wedge the 7th Trumpet in, because there is as much detail and action in the 7th Trumpet of the 7th Seal as there is in all the previous events put together. This is why an outline form is so critical in understanding **what** is happening, **why** it is happening, **who** it is happening to and **where** in the timeline it is happening. Small wonder, then, that most folks get completely lost and terribly confused when they try to read the book. See why we break it out in tiny, 8-page, 15-minute digestible portions? I just got a call from a friend today who has been in many of our Bible studies on Revelation. Her brother recently came to one of them and dedicated his life to Christ. Halleluia for that! But now, keenly aware of the fact that these indeed are the end times and he, as a new believer, has absolutely no clue as to what is going on regarding prophecy, he is now pouring through Revelation, trying to make sense out of it all. I told his sister over the phone that if anyone needed our books, it was him. I remember mailing a complementary copy of Episode One to a fellow teacher. When he began to read the book, he was flabbergasted. He had expected a cold, dull, scholarly work with tons of footnotes and scads of big, furry words. When he brought the subject up, I told him, *"Nah! I'm not writing these books to impress other scholars. I'm not interested in scholarly debate, either. My job is to present difficult to understand truths in such a way that the average man (or woman!) on the street can understand them, and provide them in small, bite-sized pieces so that they can digest them easily"*. I'm not sure if that was the answer he wanted to hear, but that's the answer he got! My goal, dear friends in Christ, is not to impress **anyone** with my so-called scholarly acumen. My job, as a prophet of God, is to come down from the watchtower and **warn the people of impending disaster**. I care not in the least about whether these are scholarly works or not. We deliberately self-publish so that I can include a nice and hopefully appropriate picture with each article. Conventional publishers would charge us an arm and a leg for such a privilege. No, dear friends, **we are here for you and for the Lord. Nothing** else matters!

With that in mind, we found ourselves poised at the edge of a precipice in our last E-Pistle. We had quickly skated through the first six Seals, and then found the sledding to be a little rougher when we hit the 7th Seal. Soon, we were completely bogged down and just barely made it to the end of the 6th Trumpet of the 7th Seal at the end of the article. There is a fascinating truth about Revelation that most people don't realize. Remember how I said that the Revelation of Jesus Christ is extremely **mathematical**? It's more than that: **it's geometric**.

What do I mean by that? Consider the following structure.

A Scroll with Seven Seals

1. Seal One – War
2. Seal Two – Ethnic Genocide
3. Seal Three – Crop Failure
4. Seal Four – Plague and Famine
5. Seal Five -- Tribulation (Global Persecution)
6. Seal Six -- Great Tribulation (Planetary chaos and Rapture)
7. Seal Seven
 - a. Trumpet One – Massive meteorite shower
 - b. Trumpet Two – Asteroid strikes the Atlantic Ocean
 - c. Trumpet Three -- Comet explodes above Eurasia
 - d. Trumpet Four – 33% of light from sun blocked out
 - e. Trumpet Five – Black Hole opened, massive demonic activity
 - f. Trumpet Six – Four demons lead 200 million man army on demonic steeds

Notice how it's getting uglier and uglier and more and more complex the further we go? In programming, this is referred to as **nesting**. Nesting is when you place one subroutine of logic inside of another subroutine of logic inside of another subroutine of logic and so on and so on...

I've written code eight levels deep during my time. Fortunately for us, God generally only goes **three levels deep**. Also remember how I told you a while back that most of us can't hack anything more than three levels deep? The Lord even manages to lay it out **no deeper than we can understand it**. When I first started studying Revelation, it was a tangled mess in my mind. But the more I study it, the clearer it gets. Now, I can see clear demarcations in the text where one train of thought ends and another begins. It's clearer now to me than it's ever been. I think I could hold my own with the best. In fact, in a fair fight, I think I could win. But it's not about winning or losing. It's not even about being right. It's about **you** being right **with God**. And that's never gonna happen unless I tell you the truth, the whole truth and nothing **but** the truth, so help me God!

Now we come to the 7th Trumpet. I'm going to quickly show you the summary of the trumpet, and then come back and talk a little bit and expand it some to help you to understand. Here goes:

g. Trumpet Seven

- (1) Seventh Angel sounds the trumpet
- (2) Temple of God is opened in heaven
- (3) Woman clothed with the sun, moon under her feet, stars in her hair appears
- (4) Dragon with seven heads and ten horns appears
- (5) Dragon's tail sweeps 1/3rd of stars out of heaven
- (6) Woman has child who will rule the nations
- (7) Woman flees into wilderness
- (8) War breaks out in heaven
- (9) Satan cast out of heaven and down to earth
- (10) Dragon persecutes woman
- (11) Woman given wings of a great eagle to flee to wilderness
- (12) Dragon tries to kill woman
- (13) Earth protects woman
- (14) Beast with seven heads and ten horns arises out of the sea
 - (a) Like a Leopard
 - (b) Feet of a Bear
 - (c) Mouth of a Lion
 - (d) Dragon gives Beast power
 - (e) One of Beast's heads is mortally wounded, but recovers
 - (f) Whole world marvels and worships the Beast
 - (g) Authority given for 42 months
 - (h) Makes war with the saints and overcomes them
- (15) Another Beast comes out of the earth
 - (a) Two horns like a lamb

- (b) **Speaks like a dragon**
- (c) **Exercises all the authority of the first Beast**
- (d) **Performs great signs, makes fire come down from heaven**
- (e) **Deceives those who dwell on the earth**
- (f) **Causes image of 1st Beast to be able to speak**
- (g) **Makes everyone receive the mark or the name or the number of the name of the beast (666)**
- (16) **144,000 male, virgin Jews raptured into heaven**
- (17) **Angel takes everlasting Gospel to preach to all nations**
- (18) **Angel announces that Babylon (Rome) has fallen**
- (19) **Angel with sickle comes out of heavenly temple and is told to reap**
 - (a) **Another angel with sickle comes out of the heavenly temple**
 - (b) **Tells the first angel to reap**
 - (c) **1st angel reaps and throws the grapevine of the earth into the winepress of God**
 - (d) **Blood flows out of the winepress up to the horse's bridle for 1,600 furlongs**
- (20) **Seven Angels appear with the seven last plagues**
 - (a) **These plagues will mark the end of the Wrath of God**
 - (b) **The Temple of the Tabernacle of the Testimony in heaven is opened**
 - (c) **Seven angels come out of the temple**
 - (d) **One of the Four Living Creatures (Seraphim) gives the seven angels seven bowls full of the Wrath of God**
 - (e) **Temple filled with smoke from the glory of God**
 - (f) **No one is able to enter the Temple until the seven last plagues are done**
- (21) **Seven Bowl Judgments**
 - (a) **1st Bowl – Foul and loathsome sores on men who had the mark of the Beast**
 - (b) **2nd Bowl – Sea becomes like the blood of a dead man – every living creature dies**
 - (c) **3rd Bowl – Rivers and springs become like blood**
 - (d) **4th Bowl -- Sun scorches men with fire**
 - [1] **Men blasphemed the name of God**
 - [2] **Refuse to repent and give God glory**
 - (e) **5th Bowl – Throne and kingdom of Beast totally blacked out**
 - [1] **Inhabitants gnaw their tongues because of the pain and their sores**
 - [2] **Still do not repent of their deeds**
 - (f) **6th Bowl – Euphrates River dries up**
 - [1] **Prepares the way for the kings of the east & 200 million man army**
 - [2] **Three unclean spirits like frogs come out of the mouth of the dragon, the Beast and the False Prophet**
 - [3] **Spirits of demons performing signs**
 - [4] **Go out to the kings of the earth**
 - [5] **Gather them for the battle of Armageddon**
- (7) **7th Bowl – Angel pours bowl out into air**
 - [1] **Voice out of the temple in heaven says, "It is done!"**
 - [2] **Noises, thunderings and lightnings**
 - [3] **Great earthquake unlike any that has ever happened before**
 - [a] **Great City (Babylon/Rome) splits into three parts**
 - [b] **Cities of the nations fall (collapse)**
 - [c] **Every island disappears under the waves**
 - [d] **Every mountain collapses into the mantle/crust of the earth**
 - [4] **Huge hailstones weighing about 100 pounds each fall on men**
 - [a] **Men blaspheme God because of the plague of the hail**
 - [5] **One of the 7 angels takes John to witness the judgment of the Great Harlot**
 - [a] **Sits upon many waters (peoples)**

- [b] Committed fornication with the kings of the earth
- [c] Inhabitants of the earth made drunk with the wine of her fornications
- [d] Sitting on Scarlet Beast full of names of blasphemy with 7 heads and 10 horns
- [e] Arrayed in scarlet and purple
- [f] Adorned with gold and precious stones and pearls
- [g] Has in her hand a golden cup full of abominations
- [h] On her forehead is written, "*Mystery, Babylon the Great, the Mother of Harlots and of the Abominations of the Earth*"
- [i] She is drunk with the blood of the saints and of the martyrs of Jesus
- [j] Angel offers explanations for all the symbols
 - {1} Beast that John saw was, is not, and will ascend out of the Abyss and go to Perdition
 - {2} The seven heads are seven mountains on which the woman sits
 - {3} They are also seven kings
 - {a} Five have fallen
 - {b} One is
 - {c} The other has not come yet
 - {d} When he comes, he must continue a short time
 - {4} The Beast that was and is not is also the 8th king
 - {a} Is also one of the seven
 - {b} Is going to Perdition
 - {5} The ten horns are ten kings
 - {a} They have received no kingdom yet
 - {b} Will receive authority for one hour as kings with the Beast
 - {c} They are of one mind (in agreement) and give their power and authority to the beast
 - {d} They will make war with the Lamb
 - {e} The Lamb will overcome them
 - {6} The waters where the Harlot sits are peoples, multitudes, nations and tongues
 - {7} The ten horns on the beast will:
 - {a} Hate the Harlot
 - {b} Make her desolate and naked
 - {c} Eat her flesh
 - {d} Burn her with fire
 - {e} They do this because God has put it into their hearts to give their kingdom to the beast until the words of God are fulfilled
- [6] Another angel comes down from heaven
 - [a] Has great authority
 - [b] Earth is illuminated with his glory
 - [c] Cries "*Babylon has fallen*"
 - [d] Another voice says "*Come out of her my people, lest you share in her sins, and lest you receive of her plagues*"
 - [e] Render to her as she has rendered to others
 - [f] She had said that she would sit as a queen, not be a widow, and not see sorrow
 - [g] Kings of the earth will weep and lament for her
 - [h] Merchants of the earth will weep and mourn for her
 - [i] Her judgment and destruction have come in one hour
 - [j] Mighty angel takes a stone like a great millstone and throws it into the sea

{1} Says "Thus with violence the great city Babylon shall be thrown down and found no more"

[k] No more music will be heard in her

[l] No more weddings will be held in her

[m] All the blood of the prophets and saints was found in her

Whoa! My gosh! Do we get any deeper than this, Pastor Ray? My head is spinning at this point. Please! No more! No more! All right, dear friends. I've got good news for you. Believe it or not, we have actually come to the **end of the Wrath of God**. Now, I haven't included any Chapter or Verse references, so you may not be sure where we are in Revelation right now. No problem. We have come to the end of the 18th Chapter. The very next thing that will happen will be some pretty awesome pronouncements from heaven, followed by the long-awaited **Invasion from Heaven**, led by an awesome person known as the **Word of God**. I'll bet you can guess who He is! There will be a two-pronged battle against the armies of **Gog Magog** from the North in the Valley of Megiddo, known popularly as **Armageddon**, and an equally swift strike against the 200 million man army of the kings of the East, led by the four demonic frog-beings, south of Jerusalem in the Valley of Jehoshaphat. In both cases, every single person in the armies will be instantly killed, with no casualties or wounded on the side of the victors. In fact, the invading army doesn't even have to fight, since Jesus Himself takes over with a sharp sword coming out of His mouth which destroys them all where they stand. A brief trial ensues, after which the Anti-Christ and the False Prophet are pitched into the Lake of Fire to be tormented forever and ever. Inexplicably, the devil is not thrown into the Lake of Fire at this point in time, but is rather thrown into the Abyss and the opening is sealed shut again. There is a reason why the Father does this, but we will save that explanation for later on in another Episode. The Millennial Reign of Jesus Christ follows, with our Lord and Savior sitting on the throne of His father David. At the end of those 1,000 years, the heavens and the earth are destroyed. The Bema Seat / Great White Throne Judgment follows, during which the rest of the dead not resurrected during the Resurrection / Rapture of the church are resurrected and either hurled into the Lake of Fire or given access to the New Jerusalem. We have talked about what will happen then in a previous article in Episode Four. From that point on it is eternity, world without end, Amen!

I want you to go back and review the incredibly detailed outline that we have had to construct. Remember that I told you that the Seals were not only **logical** but **geometric**? Notice how we have to go down **layer** after **layer** after **layer**? Also notice that the **further** we go into Revelation, the **deeper** we have to go into the layers. Ironically, it turns out that if you count the top layer as being the Scroll itself, this outline goes **eight layers deep!** Remember what I said at the beginning of this article about my own programming going eight layers deep when I was at my best? I guess God knew just how much I could handle. Frankly, I had run out of symbols to encase the letter or number of the point with. I worked my way through **()**, into **[]**, all the way to **{}**. After that, I guess I would have been forced to resort to **<>**. I'm sure you get my point. This is why so many people start to study Revelation and simply give up. It's not that it's not understandable. It's just that it's just so darned deep! Let me share a little secret with you. It may help you and encourage you in your study of this most important book in the Bible. When I first began to study Revelation 15 years ago, I was doing fine until I got to the 7th Seal. The first six Seals decoded pretty quickly and with relative ease, and confirmed and established my suspicions about the actual positioning of the Rapture at the end of the 6th Seal. At first I was stumped about the half hour of silence in heaven at the beginning of the 7th Seal, but then the light bulb went on in my teeny, tiny little brain and I saw how that was constructed. I then moved past that into all the wild stuff that starts to happen, one thing after another. When you first read all this stuff, it's kind of like getting hit in the face by a professional boxer against whom you have no reasonable defense. He starts hitting you, first a blow here and a blow there. Then, when he sees that you are defenseless, his blows come more quickly, one after another, eventually so quickly that you can't tell where one blow ends and another begins. Truthfully, by the time I reached the 13th Chapter of Revelation and ran into the Beast out of the Sea and the Beast out of the Earth and all of that stuff I melted down myself! Try as hard as I could, I simply **could not make an outline past chapter 13!** If I ran ahead to Chapter 19, I could easily pick up the timeline there and continue on from there, but from Chapter 13 through the end of Chapter 18, I was a blind man in dark room with a flashlight with no batteries! I stayed stuck at that point in my efforts for another **ten years!** So if you have had trouble in the past or are having trouble right now trying to make sense of Revelation, don't

feel bad! **We** are in good company! That's why the Lord sent me here first, and told me to untangle all this for you so it makes sense and you can understand it and act on it.

To help you even more, I promise you that I have placed a little something called the **Revelation Master Timeline** at the end of this Episode as the final Day or E-Pistle. It provides a complete, logical outline for the **entire book**, done in the same fashion as we have done here. I don't go into quite the detail in the 7th Seal that I do here, but, hey, I'm outlining the entire book, for crying out loud! Even so, the Master Outline is **6 pages long!** And that's the **short** version. Will all of this take time? Of course. Is it too much effort? Perhaps. If you were trying to do it by yourself. But with a little help from your friend, Pastor Ray, it is not too difficult a task, and you can do it! When you are done, it will **all** make sense, and you will, as I have explained before, understand The Revelation of Jesus Christ better than your pastor and most of the so-called Bible Prophecy Experts. Most importantly, you will understand what God requires of you to save your immortal soul, make heaven your home, go in the Rapture, and **escape the Wrath to Come!** Tomorrow, we will begin our journey through the 7th Seal, beginning with the mysterious **Silence in Heaven.** Until then, may God richly bless you and keep you safe from all harm as you walk in faith and obedience to Him!

Day 4 – Silence in Heaven



“¹ When He opened the seventh seal, there was silence in heaven for about half an hour.” – Revelation 8:1

“³ knowing this first: that scoffers will come in the last days, walking according to their own lusts, ⁴ and saying, ‘Where is the promise of His coming? For since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as *they were* from the beginning of creation.’ ... ⁷ But the heavens and the earth *which* are now preserved by the same word, are reserved for fire until the day of judgment and perdition of ungodly men. ⁸ But, beloved, do not forget this one thing, that with the Lord one day is as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day.” – II Peter 3:3-4,7-8

There are many things we don't understand about God. The Lord told Isaiah that **His** ways are not **our** ways, and **His** thoughts are not **our** thoughts (Isaiah 55:8). I couldn't agree more. He also adds, in the very next verse, that His ways and thoughts are **higher**. Although I know that to be empirically and theoretically true, I often have a tough time accepting that fact on a practical level. I find myself arguing with God on a fairly regular basis. There are things that I am absolutely sure that I need and can't live without. After careful consideration and prayer, I am totally convinced that they have to happen in a certain way. And so I pray feverishly away, asking God for thus and such a thing in thus and such a way. And it **never** happens the way I imagined it, and it often never happens at all. At that point, I get mad with God, and start to argue with Him. Doesn't He know, I contend, that this thing, whatever it happens to be, is critical to me and to my life and family and ministry? I passionately list all the reasons why I need it so badly. And often I receive a stony silence from Heaven. Sometimes I receive a one or two word answer, often not what I wanted to hear. It is at those times that I really get mad and stomp around and pout and carry on and throw myself on the floor and hold my breath until I turn blue and choke. Yeah, I know. It sounds like the temper tantrum of a two-year old, badly disciplined, spoiled little brat. Maybe I am. Maybe, in more ways than we would care to admit, we **all** are. I don't know of anyone who never argues with God. I have met people who **claimed** that would never dream of arguing with God. Yet they will pray and pray and pray against His revealed will on a subject, despite what He has already made clear. No, dear friends, the rebellion against God is still going on in our hearts, even those of us who really, truly love the Lord. Then, when He finally, suddenly **does** something that we have been praying about for a long time, He **always** does it in a way that flabbergasts us and leaves us flat-footed. I tell people that He does things that way for two very good reasons: (1) It keeps us honest and makes us walk by faith, and (2) It drives the devil nuts.

Not only does God not do things in the way that we expect Him to, He never does them in the **timing** we expect. I would be willing to bet that when the Lord promised Abram a child, it never occurred to the Father of Faith that he would have to wait **25 years** until he was **100 years old** and Sarai had completely lost her ability to conceive children. God specializes in answering prayers that have to be answered by midnight at 11:59:59.9999. There are times when I am walking deeply in faith when that is OK with me. But there are other times when it drives not only the devil but also **me** crazy. I'm human, too. I have my good days and I have my bad days. There are times when my faith is high as a kite, and other times when I battle severe depression. I've been going through one of those periods in my life recently. Things have not gone in the direction I thought they should go, and they have not happened in the timetable that I wanted. I was asking the Lord about the E4India project a few days ago, and questioning Him as to when it would finally start working the way He showed me it would. His

response? **Five years from now.** Boy, I sure didn't wanna hear that! Often, when He delays things like that, I either get really mad or really depressed. Now, if your 25 years old, and He tells you to wait five years, it only makes you 30 when it comes to pass. But when you're 59 and a cancer and heart attack survivor, things get a little more uncertain. No one is guaranteed our next breath, much less tomorrow, but as you get older and closer to eternity, you become more and more aware of your mortality.

Getting older actually causes several things to happen in a person's life. Most of the time, you become less and less concerned about what people think of you, your comments and your lifestyle. There was a time when I might have been ashamed of being in my car stopped in traffic and putting my hands up to pray or praise Him. Now, what the heck do I care what the person in the car next to me thinks? Let them stare. I'll just praise Him all the louder. It actually helps your prophetic ministry a little, since when you're younger, you tend to worry more about what people think of you and say about you. Getting older also increases your desire to see a response right now, but also gives you a more long-distance perspective on how things work. Have you noticed, as you have gotten older, that time seems to speed up? Each successive year seems to go by more quickly than the previous one. There's a reason for that, a very good and scientific one, and there is a universal principle built into it that even affects God Himself. Here's how it works: Subconsciously, we tend to measure the passage of time **relative to the total amount of time we have experienced.** If you are a 5 year old, and I tell you that it's going to take 5 minutes before I can get you that cookie, it seems to you as if an eternity has passed. If you are 25, it seems like hardly any time at all has passed, and if you're 50 or older, by the time someone gets around to bringing you what you asked for, you may find yourself asking, "*What cookie?*" Five minutes is a much larger portion of the total life experience of a five year old than it is of a 25 year old and certain much more than we 50+ folks. As a result the passage of time in general seems to go much more swiftly the more total time we have experienced. Each new minute of life that we live shortens the **relative value** of that minute in the grand scheme of things. This is also true for the animal world. Scientists have measured the number of heartbeats per minute and the total heartbeats per lifetime of a wide variety of animals, and have made a fascinating and somewhat sobering discovery. All animal hearts are designed to run for approximately **80 million beats.** After that the warranty expires and so do we. Animals that are smaller and move more quickly than we do tend to have hearts that beat much more quickly. They do everything more quickly than we do. I don't intend to expound on that statement, either. You draw your own conclusions. Larger animals, such as the elephant, have huge hearts which beat much more slowly. As a result, the animal also tends to move more slowly, but also tends to have a lifespan very similar to ours. It is a universal principle. Imagine, if you will, what a rabbit's actions must look like to a tortoise. Nothing but frenzied activity, most of it seemingly meaningless. Then try to imagine the sheer frustration that a rabbit must feel about a tortoise. What is **wrong** with this slowpoke? Doesn't he understand that there are things to do, people to see, places to go? Obviously, some of us must be turtles at heart, while others of us are bunny rabbits. When it comes to driving, I have always been a bunny rabbit. My theme song is **Alabama's "I'm in a hurry to get things done"**. When the children were younger, I would label slower drivers on the road as "turtles". Once day, on the way to church, we came up behind a very slowly moving older driver who was also probably on their way to church, but not in quite the rush that we were. "*C'mon, you darned old turtle!*" I raged behind the wheel. Then Emily, who might have been 5 or 6 at the time, piped up from the back seat. "*But Daddy, she exclaimed, "God loves turtles, too!"*" That statement calmed me down and slowed me down for a little while. I still drive fast everywhere I go, but not quite as fast as I used to.

Having established the principle as universal, we must also project it toward the creator of the heavens and the earth. God isn't **old.** That would imply that He, like us, exists **inside of time.** Instead, He exists outside of time beyond all three of the heavens that Paul lists. The Bible tells us that He is from **everlasting to everlasting.** That means that He is **eternal.** Now we have a hard time dealing with the concept of eternity, because we have no way of experiencing it in this life, although the Bible does state that He has put **eternity inside of our hearts or spirits** (Ecclesiastes 3:11). So, intuitively, we understand that there is a **forever**, and that we go on forever, in some fashion or another. There's hardly a religion in the world that doesn't postulate the immortality of the human spirit or soul, even if it is simply absorbed back into some giant cosmic consciousness and loses it's identity in the process. Even then, the substance of the soul is still eternal. Given what we know about the immortality of the

human soul, we can discount that theory. We know that in one fashion or another, we will endure forever, even when this physical body has turned to dust and ashes.

In order to help you get a grasp on what this living forever thing does to a person, let's go back to the book of Genesis and look at the Antediluvian (before the Flood) saints. Imagine, if you will, what it must be like to live 930 years. That's how old Adam was when he died. His body lived about 12 times longer than ours do today, given an average current life span of 75 or so. Adam wasn't an exception to the rule, either. Even counting Lamech, who only lived to be 777 and either perished in the flood or in the year of the flood, the average age of these original humans was **910 years!** Imagine how their lives were sequenced out. We are born and grow until about the age of 18-25. At that point, our body slows down and goes into a gradually decaying maintenance. We stay relatively strong until our 40's or 50's, when the slide, unless directly addressed by exercise, diet and supplements, becomes much steeper. Many of us start dying off in our 60's, with the majority going in our 70's or 80's. Rare is the man who manages to survive until he is 90. We had the privilege just the other day of meeting a gentleman who is 101 years old. Although his body is feeble and he needs a walker to help him get around, his mind is still strong and clear. But what if you lived to be 950? Your childhood would continue on until you were about 90, at which point you would look as if you were about 18. The average age when these Antediluvian men had their first child was about 110. You would then stay in the absolute prime of health until you were about 700, when your health and strength would gradually begin to deteriorate. For the next 200 years, you would gradually experience declining health, but even in your 900's, you would still be healthier and stronger than most 50 year old men today. In the meanwhile, you and your wife would be having a multitude of children. Women probably continued on in their childbearing years from about 100 till about 600. Even if you only had one child every 20 years or so, it would come out to 25 children. According to Hebrew tradition, Adam and Eve actually had 53. Remember that for genealogy sake, they only list the first-born male. And it always says that they had **other** sons and daughters. We just don't realize how many are included in that "other" category. Living that long would radically change how you view things. You wouldn't be in quite as much a hurry to accomplish things as we are today. You could make plans to have four, five, six or even more careers. You could devote 20 years to learning to play the violin. You would make plans for projects that might take 300 or 400 years to come to fruition. All because you had more time to work with.

Now, take that simple projection for humanity and transfer it over to eternal divinity. If you have always been in existence and will continue to exist forever with no degradation in your health or well-being, planning a project that lasted say, 14,000 years, would simply be a drop in the bucket. And since even God measures the passage of time relative to the amount of time that He has experienced, **1,000 years** would be no more than **a single day** to Him. In telling us this about God, Peter has done us a great service and also given us the key to unlocking a number of "mysteries" contained in the Bible, going all the way back to the Garden in Eden. Let's return to the Garden for just a moment and look at the first of these "mysteries":

*"¹⁵ Then the LORD God took the man and put him in the Garden of Eden to tend and keep it. ¹⁶ And the LORD God commanded the man, saying, 'Of every tree of the garden you may freely eat; ¹⁷ but of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil you shall not eat, **for in the day that you eat of it you shall surely die.**' "* -- Genesis 2:15-17

Enter Mystery #1. God told Adam that if he ever ate of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil, in **that very day he would die!** Not the day after. Not next week. Not next year. **That day.** At first glance, it appears that the warning was never enforced. Adam kept right on living and living and living. Or so it seems. To try and reconcile this apparent contradiction, Bible "experts" came up with the concept of **Spiritual Death**. "Ya'll see, brothers and sisters" they say, "It really did happen like God said it would, 'cause Adam died **spiritually** that day." To which I reply, "Hogwash!" God never threatened Adam with **spiritual** death; He threatened Him with **physical** death. If, on the other hand, we take the principle found in II Peter 3:8 and apply it to this passage, suddenly everything makes perfect sense. As far as God was concerned, Adam **did** die that very same day. How long is **one day** of God-time? **1,000 years** of human-time. How long did Adam live? **930 years** of human-time, or **less than one God-day!** It happened **exactly** as God said it would, based on His time-table and His way of measuring time!

In fact, if you get right down to it, if you use and apply the concept of God-time to the whole Genesis project, things start to make sense there as well. The seven days of creation were not seven symbolic, indefinable periods of time. The seven days of creation were **seven literal God-days of 1,000 human years each!** The first 1,000 years were the hardest. During that time, the Lord Jesus, known then as the **Word of God**, had to work on the basic equation which today we know as $E=MC^2$, the fundamental conversion between matter, light and energy. Having created light, which has properties of both energy (expressed as a wave) and matter (affected by gravity), He could then separate out from the light both matter and energy. From that point on, each God day of 1,000 man-years was fairly simple and a logical extension of the previous day. Taking Hydrogen and Oxygen, two of the simpler elements to make, He formed water, **H²O**. **Lots** of water. **Tons** of water. Then He took all that water and wrapped it around a dead ball of rock, third position out from a G-type star. Having saturated the rock ball with water, inside and out, which created sediment and soil, He then **separated** the water from the rock and soil that He had created during that 1,000 man-year period and engineered **plant life**, capable of growing in the soil which He had created during the previous 1,000 man-year period. Each developmental step until the 6th Day followed logically, one after the other. It also helps to explain the dinosaurs and all of the radical, almost extravagant variety of creatures found in the fossil record. You can create and discard a great many experiments in animal life during a 1,000 year test run. Finally, it answers one of the most frustrating questions in the entire Bible when we come to the 6th Day. Women all down through time have asked the question that no one could answer, "Why us?" Why was it that Lucifer came to Eve and not Adam to tempt her? Now the answer becomes painfully clear, given a 1,000 man-year God-day. Adam was created fairly early on the 6th Day. After a period of time, during which he named and categorized all the untold thousands or millions of animal types that God had created during the previous two Days, he realized that he was lonely. So did God. No suitable helpmeet could be found for Adam. So, **later on during the 6th Day, Eve was created, taken out of Adam's side.** A quick trip to the calculator reveals the unobvious fact that **Eve was considerable younger than Adam, perhaps 300 or 400 years so, and as such, was more innocent and naïve.** It wasn't that Eve was having a "blonde moment". She was nobody's fool. But Adam had the benefit of having sat at the feet of Jesus in the cool of the Garden innumerable times. That's why the Lord put him in charge. It wasn't that he was smarter. He just had more experience in this being alive thing, and he had the benefit of having spent more time with the Lord than Eve by benefit of his earlier creation date. When Lucifer, who was, according to Ezekiel 28:11-16, the anointed covering cherub appointed to watch over the Garden in Eden from his vantage point atop Mt. Ararat (even wonder where the Garden was located? Genesis tells us exactly where!), turned on God and rebelled against Him, it was on the 7th Day of Shabbat or rest. Jesus, whom John 1, Colossians 1 and Hebrews 1 all say created the universe, was taking a break from all of this create something out of nothing stuff. Since it had been declared a day of rest, nobody was really on guard against any form of attack, particularly from within. During that 7th Day of rest, Lucifer, having failed in his rebellion in the 3rd Heaven, now turned his attack to the two beings who had been taught that this being, second only to Jesus Himself, could be trusted. When the serpent appeared to Eve, she recognized that it was Lucifer. He had always been trustworthy up till now. Why should he have changed his mind? But to question the verbal integrity of the Creator was a stretch of her imagination. Still, his argument was persuasive. Why not just take a bite and see? Had Adam been there, he would have slapped the fruit (**not** an apple! We don't know what it actually was.) right out of Eve's hand, stomped on the serpent's head, and hollered as loud as he could for the Lord. But that didn't happen. Satan, as he always does, went for the weakest link, and succeeded, just as he frequently does.

A little further thought, and yet another mystery unfolds and solves itself right before our eyes. When you put two and two together, we find that, from God's perspective, all of this grand creation which we have yet to fully measure is nothing more than a **two week science project in the eyes of God!** Where do I get the two weeks from? Simple. Let's look at the first week, already clearly documented in Genesis. We have six days of creation followed by a 7th Day of Rest, the Shabbat. One week down, one to go. During that first week, God was in control, so the clock used was His, not ours. After that comes another almost 6,000 man-years where we are in control, not Him. Some years ago, I was in a Jewish recreation center in Louisville. It was magnificent, and along one wall was something that transfixed me. It was a timeline history of the world, shown in Gentile and Jewish chronology. Everything on the top was in AD and BC. Everything on the bottom was dated from the time when the

children of Abraham started dating their history. According to their own calendar, we are in the year 5767. In short, we are in the **6th God-day of 6,000 man-years of time according to our clocks.** What always follows the 6th Day? **A 7th Day Sabbath of Rest**, which we know as the **1,000 year Millennial Reign of the Lord Jesus Christ as He sits on the throne of His father David.** That completes the second week. At the end of the two week, God-day period, the science project is done. The Lord now has what he needs from the project, **a Bride for His Son.** The current universe, now no longer useful, is discarded, we have a general settlement up at the Great White Throne Judgment, and then the creation of a New Heavens and a New Earth, one which never will deteriorate or come to an end.

Now that we have used II Peter 3:8 to solve so many mysteries elsewhere in the Bible, we can finally turn to the book of Revelation itself and use that key again to solve the **silence in Heaven** which is the title of this article. One of the things that we always have to remember about God is that His ways, means, procedures and timings are not like ours. It is for this reason that we miss Him constantly. When He says "*Soon!*" we think in terms of 15 minutes. He may well be thinking in terms of 15 years. That is exactly what is happening here at the beginning of Chapter 8, at the beginning of the 7th Seal. At the end of the 6th Seal, we had come to a point in the timeline where, had it been a musical score, we would be in the midst of a *crescendo*. For those of you who were never musically inclined, let me explain. All of music involves moving out from a starting point to a point of maximum tension and then returning to rest again. Call it a musical biorhythm, if you will. That moving out to a point of tension may involve chord changes. It may involve volume changes. It may, and often does, involve both. 75% of all Western music involves a **1-4-5-4-1** progression. The ultimate example of this is the classic dumb rock song (which I happen to like!), *Louie, Louie*. If you still don't know what I mean, go to a keyboard and have someone play the following chord progression: **C-C-C, F-F, G-G-G, F-F** and then repeat it about three times. You will instantly recognize the chord pattern. It also happens to be the chord pattern for what must be one of the all-time God-awfullest country songs in the history of the genre, *Achy, Breaky Heart*. It is **also** the chord pattern for the all-time classic hymn, *Amazing Grace*. It starts with a base cord, perhaps **C** or **F**, and then moves out from there, then returns. When you step back away from The Revelation of Jesus Christ and analyze it as if were a musical score, you immediately see a base chord struck at the beginning of the book with the awesome introduction of Jesus as the Christ in His glorified body. Then we have a *decrescendo*, or decrease in volume, when we come to the Seven Letters to the Seven Churches. The volume begins to build again with the introduction of the Scroll, and builds all the way through the Great Tribulation up to the Rapture of the church, when, if we were musicians, we would be playing this part of the score in *mezzo forte*, *FF*, or super-loud. It is the first major climax of the book. But you can't keep playing super loud all the time. There must come a sudden hush in the music for dramatic effect. For that very reason, there comes a **silence in Heaven**, as God prepares to launch the most massive military campaign in the history of the universe. In order to make such a military move it takes time. Troops must be mustered, artillery put in place, strategies mapped. When the Allies launched the D-Day invasion of Normandy in World War II, untold months were involved in the planning. So it is with the 7th Seal. Huge clouds of meteorites must be gathered together and send moving toward the earth in order to strike at just the right time. A massive asteroid must also be altered in its trajectory so that it will strike at the center of the Atlantic Ocean. A comet must be moved out of its elliptical orbit around the sun and sent hurtling toward the earth. Massive solar flares and coronal mass ejections (CME's) have to be prepared. All of that takes times. Plus, there's another factor to be considered. We'll get to that other factor in a second.

Since we already know the time conversion ratio between heaven and earth, it isn't too hard for us to take that "*about a half an hour*" reference in Revelation 8:1 and convert it from God-time to man-time. Here's the formula:

1 day in Heaven = 1,000 years on Earth, sooo...

$$\frac{\text{1 day in Heaven}}{\text{1,000 years on Earth}} = \frac{\text{half an hour in Heaven}}{\text{X}}$$

Now, all we have to do is solve the equation for the value of **X**. I used to hate math in high school, but I was still pretty good at it. I do remember that we have to solve for common terms, so we have to calculate what part of a day a half an hour is. Since there are 24 hours in a day, one half hour should be equal to 1/48th of a day. By that reasoning, **X** must then also be 1/48th of 1,000 years. If we whip out our handy, dandy calculator, we find that 1/48th of 1,000 years is **20.83333...** years in Earth time. Now, remember that the Bible says that it is **about** half an hour. Given God's propensity for using multiples and fractions of 3,4,7,12 and 40, it only stands to reason that the **actual** time that passes on earth is **20 years on the nose!** Why so long between the removal of the Bride portion of the church and the beginning of the fireworks? What I am about to present to you is speculation, and I present it to you as such. But I think I'm pretty close to the truth, given human nature, which is **not** an unknown in this equation.

At the end of the 6th Seal, we had saints and sinners running for cover, clearly aware that the traumatic events that were occurring were clearly punishment from God. It is unbelievers, not saints of God, who announce the beginning of the Wrath of God in Revelation 6:15-16. How sad! Sinners get it, and the church doesn't. Oh, well! Nothing new there! Sinners, prostitutes and tax collectors came into the Kingdom willingly under the ministry of Jesus, but the Scribes and Pharisees and Sadducees never even came close to getting it. So it will be at the end of time. Much of the church will completely miss it. The chaos and physical destruction of the planet will come to a *crescendo* of violence. Suddenly, half the church will be gone and suddenly, mysteriously, all of the violence will stop. People have notoriously short memories. Witness 9-11. President Bush unwisely told everyone to go back to business as usual. If there had been enough spiritual conviction and courage in his heart, he would have called for this nation to repent and return to God. Had we done that, and truly repented, perhaps the additional traumatic events that I have prophesied about would never have come to pass. For those of you who are reading this book after the fact, sometime after 2014 when it all starts to unravel, I hate to say it, but **I told you so!** This kind of thing gives me no satisfaction. I feel very much like a Jeremiah. In all probability, what I have written will be blithely ignored until it is too late. Then, suddenly, if I am still alive, I will be hailed as a great seer and prophet of God. Thanks a lot. In the meantime, untold millions of Christians and unsaved friends and relatives will have died as a result of all these catastrophic events and been cast into Hell because they were never told the truth or never believed. Why? Because the church just didn't want to deal with the truth. Prophecy to us **smooth things**, Pastor Ray! Make us feel good about ourselves even through we are living in open sin and rebellion. I was talking to a Spirit-filled retired doctor today after church, and he gave me a chilling statistic. When surveyed about their personal sexual habits, **50%** of the pastors in America surveyed said that they had viewed pornography over the internet within the **previous week!** Can you imagine? And these are the **shepherds**. If they are in such a condition, what kind of shape must the **sheep** be in? It staggers the imagination. Now, keep in mind that those who were left behind were left behind for a very good reason: **they had personal sin in their lives and were not filled with the Holy Spirit.** Sin is **not permitted in Heaven.** Neither is the flesh. I have a dear friend in the Lord, a Black Oneness Pentecostal lady, who said it better than all the theologians out there put together: **"If you got mo' Holy Ghost than flesh, you goin' up! If you got mo' flesh than Holy Ghost, you stayin' down!"** 'Nuff said! I can't add **anything** to that!

You were left behind because you either did not believe or were unwilling to let go of sin and the flesh and embrace the Spirit of God and holiness and sanctification. Do you think that this disturbing little truth will play well for all those who attend church the very next Sunday, wondering where everybody else went? What about the 50% or more of the pastors who are also left behind? How do you think it will play out for them and their enlarged egos? No, although I have no plans to be here for the Sunday after the Rapture, I can tell you **exactly** what will be preached from most of the pulpits of the apostate churches all across America and the rest of the world. The pastor will direct the service just as always. There will be the standard lighting of the candles. Then a substitute organist will play an introit. Seems that Sister Sally has mysteriously disappeared. The somewhat depleted choir will get up, and the choir director, who has been sleeping with the lead soprano for several months now, will lead the choir in a rousing anthem praising the goodness of mankind. Right. Sure. Self-deception is a wonderful thing. You don't know you're deceived, because you have bought into your own lie. Thank you, all-grace crowd. You are about to enter into the greatest deception of all time. Now, after several hymns, some shakily read announcements will be read by one of the elders, who can't imagine what happened

to his wife earlier this week. Then, the pastor will masterfully stride to the pulpit. We have taken the liberty of traveling forward in time in our Time Machine, to 20??, just after the Rapture. We strategically placed a tape recorder inside the pulpit so we could record the pastor's sermon. Here is part of the transcript:

*"Er, a, ahem. I am so very glad that all of you are here today. These last few months have been very troubling for everyone on the surface of this planet. We thank God today that our prayers have been heard. With Buddhists, Muslims, Hindus and Christians all praying together, God has mercifully granted up a reprieve from the catastrophic earthquakes, atmospheric losses and terrible clouds of soot and ash surrounding the planet. We all understand that God works in mysterious ways. At the same time that all these terrible events have ceased, we have also experienced a loss of the more radical members of our church. Brethren, I have prayed long and hard about this matter all week. I have talked with the other pastors in our community, at least those who also have not vanished. Thank God that the Methodist, Presbyterian, Lutheran, Episcopal and Seventh Day Adventist pastors are still here, along with most of our Catholic priests and nuns. (Hey! Don't like the truth? **Then repent and be filled with the Spirit of God, not whatever you've been faking it with!** Believe me, I've had to operate inside the mainline church. I know what's going on in the leadership. Don't ask!) "As all of us have gathered together, we have come to a common conclusion. We all know that these more radical Christians, most of whom call themselves Pentecostal or Charismatic, have been a thorn in our sides for a very long time. They have stood in the way of the uniting of all of our faiths, all over the world, into one great world religion, embracing common truths and goals, uniting mankind in its pursuit of entering into the very godhood which evolution indicates that we are destined for. Indeed, brothers and sisters, it may well be that God, in His infinite wisdom, has **removed these troublesome individuals from within our midst so that we may better serve Him and accomplish His divine will for one world government and one world religion.** I personally thank God that they are gone, even though my wife is numbered among them. I can now confess that I haven't loved her for the last 10 years, and have been secretly involved with the wife of Brother Johnson. Since Brother Johnson is now missing, I can only feel in my heart that God has removed both of them so that we can truly express our love for one another. We won't be getting married, but we will be moving in together in just a few weeks, as soon as Sister Johnson can sell the family home. Now is not a time to despair, dear children of God. Our way has been cleared for us. President Hillary Clinton spoke just yesterday on the TV, encouraging us to follow the lead of her and her husband in proclaiming a new age and a new era of peace, prosperity and unity. Our troubles are over. Those who troubled the earth have now been removed. Mother Earth, the spirit of Gaia, is now satisfied. We can begin over. I would like everyone to stand as we sing our closing hymn, 'Standing on the Promises'. Please feel free to kiss anyone you want to at the end of the service. We all need as much love as we can get to restore our hurting hearts. Amen and Amen!"*

Pretty chilling, huh? I didn't really get down to all of the nitty-gritty, but I'm sure that you get the picture. This is what will happen to the remainder of the church after the Rapture. Twenty years of peace, calm, security and prosperity in the face of blatant personal sin will only serve to confirm to all of them that **we**, the Spirit-filled Christians, were really the ones to blame, and that God removed us so that the world could join together in one big, happy, adulterous, pornographic, child-molesting family. Free love for everybody! No penalty to anybody! Absolutely clueless to what is coming, since they are no longer reading their Bibles. But, in the midst of all that apostasy, there will be small enclaves of Christians, many of whom were backslidden at the time that the Rapture occurred, who have come to their senses, begun to read their Bibles again, and have discovered what has happened. Some of them, who are now operating as underground cell pastors, have read further into Revelation and have discovered that there will be a small but vocal minority of Christians who missed the Rapture but who, although they were unwilling to live for Christ prior to that, now are willing to die for Christ, and unwilling to compromise their new-found convictions. Within that small group, a passionate, holy, sanctified Christianity will arise, confronting the remainder of the apostate Church, and willing to die as martyrs, as the Anti-Christ, no longer shackled by the presence of the Holy Spirit in the Gentile world, now begins to build his global political and spiritual empire. Beheaded by the untold thousands, they will be resurrected after the return of Christ in Revelation Chapter 19, to rule and reign with those who were resurrected or raptured prior to them at the end of the 6th Seal. The half hour of silence in heaven, translating into 20 years here, will convince everyone that they were right all along, we were

wrong all along, and that it is safe to go back in the water. Duh, dun. Duh, dun. Duh, dun. Doesn't anybody see that fin out a little deeper in the water? No? Why are the children swimming out toward it? Can't they see the danger? Children! Children! No, no, no! Nooooooooo!

And then, suddenly, it will be too late. The Seven Angels who stand before the Throne will be given their Trumpets. An eighth angel will be give a censer to interact with the prayers of the remaining saints and now Jews who are slowly being converted by the 144,000 and are coming to believe in Jesus as Jeshua Messiah, the very one that has been the Hope of Israel for so many thousands of years. Suddenly, unexpectedly, there will violent thunder and lightning from Heaven, as the eighth angel hurls the fire from the altar, and suddenly, a violent earthquake will jolt the entire earth, just as it was twenty long years ago. Everything that had been forgotten during that period of time will suddenly be forcefully and traumatically recalled by everyone who dwells on the earth. The **7th Seal**, the **Wrath of God**, will have finally begun, and there will no longer be any stopping it.

There will also no longer be any deception, as rebellious mankind will openly defy God, having successfully lived in their rebellion and sin for another twenty years, unwilling and incapable of repentance, since the Holy Spirit was taken from them twenty years ago. Jesus clearly said that no man cometh unto Him unless the Father draws him. How does the Father draw people to His Son? Through the precious Holy Spirit. And that Spirit is now gone, replaced 20 years ago by **another** spirit, one that comes from Satan, one that worships and serves not the **Christ**, but the **Anti-Christ**.

Tomorrow we will begin to look at the **Seven Trumpets**, and the kinds of judgments that they entail. Dear friends in Christ, do you want to be part of the deception that remains, or part of the truth that leaves? The decision is yours. And there is still time for you to change your mind, repent, stop living in sin, and embrace the **Holy** Spirit, so that you can finally live **holy** lives, and be counted as worthy to go to Him when He calls for us. I am ready. I hope and pray to see you there. And no greater joy will fill my heart than to hear that it was one of these E-Pistles that convicted you of your need to change. Then **my** joy will be complete.

Day 5 – The Prayers of the Saints



“² And I saw the seven angels who stand before God, and to them were given seven trumpets. ³ Then another angel, having a golden censer, came and stood at the altar. He was given much incense, that he should offer it with the prayers of all the saints upon the golden altar which was before the throne. ⁴ And the smoke of the incense, with the prayers of the saints, ascended before God from the angel's hand. ⁵ Then the angel took the censer, filled it with fire from the altar, and threw it to the earth. And there were noises, thunderings, lightnings, and an earthquake.” — Revelation 8:2-5

How important is prayer? We say that we believe in the power of prayer, yet we don't pray. And please notice that I used the personal pronoun **we**, not **you**. I am just as guilty as the rest of you. What do we spend our time on? **TV**. Tons and tons of TV. We desire to be **constantly entertained**. Christians are no better than non-believers. There is no difference between the shows we watch and the shows that they watch. Even those Christians who claim to be committed to Christ spend most of their time being entertained by Christian entertainment. TBN is the greatest single tool for world evangelism in the history of the world. They have led more people to Christ in their history than any other minister or ministry in all history. Yet they too, are entertainment. I will watch them occasionally, and there are good shows that actually teach and edify, such as MannaFest with Perry Stone, Jr., but these kinds of shows are clearly in the minority. Most of the time, even Christian programming is devoted to **entertaining** the Christian rather than **equipping** or **educating** the Christian. The simple truth is that we do everything except the **one thing** that we are **supposed to do**, without fail. What is that single thing without which everything else will fail? **Prayer. Fervent, effectual prayer.**

James gives us one of the best examples of prayer, and he should know. The Book of James is not written by James the Apostle, but rather by James the **younger brother of Jesus**. During Jesus' earthly ministry, His brothers, James included, fought against Him and didn't believe in Him. In fact, they were so opposed to Him that they convinced His own mother that He had gone off the deep end. What? Didn't know that? Where are the Scriptures to support that, you say? All righty, then. Here they are:

First of all, we look at a fairly unpleasant confrontation between Jesus and his family in Matthew Chapter 12:

"⁴⁶ While He was still talking to the multitudes, behold, His mother and brothers stood outside, seeking to speak with Him. ⁴⁷ Then one said to Him, 'Look, Your mother and Your brothers are standing outside, seeking to speak with You.' ⁴⁸ But He answered and said to the one who told Him, '**Who is My mother and who are My brothers?**' ⁴⁹ And He stretched out His hand toward His disciples and said, 'Here are My mother and My brothers!' ⁵⁰ For **whoever does the will of My Father in heaven is My brother and sister and mother.**' " — Matthew 12:46-50

Wow. That seems pretty hostile on the part of Jesus, doesn't it? There seems to be no rational explanation for His rejection of His brothers, much less that of His own mother. As with most of these passages, I have heard multitudes of different interpretations over the years, but none, unfortunately, that bothered to look up the **rest** of the Scriptures dealing with incident to see what the **motive** of the brothers was in this incident. Since the motive is not given in this passage, it must, according to Biblical rules of interpretation as outlined by us earlier in this series, **be somewhere else**. In fact, we

don't have to travel far. If we go to the parallel passage in the Gospel of Mark, we discover the **why** behind the scene. This will require some careful reading on our part, and an understanding that what Jesus says in the Bible should **never** be divorced from the **context in which He said it**. Nobody likes having their statements taken out of context. I'm sure Jesus isn't very happy about it, either. We begin the story in Mark 3:13-19, shortly after Jesus had picked out the 12 key disciples who would eventually become known as apostles. Jesus had been consistently working signs and miracles, casting out demons, and the multitudes were pressing in on Him so hard that He and His disciples couldn't even send out for a Happy Meal, much less keep His own family happy:

"²⁰ *Then the multitude came together again, so that they could not so much as eat bread.* ²¹ **But when His own people heard about this, they went out to lay hold of Him, for they said, 'He is out of His mind.'**" -- Mark 3:20-21

Surprise! Didn't know that little passage was there, did you? Who are **His own people**? It has to be His family! How can I be so sure? All we have to do is to continue the chain of events, staying **in context**.

We now know that His family is **on the way to seize Him and bring Him home by force**. The brothers have so effectively argued against Him that they have temporarily even convinced Mary, His mother, of His mental instability. (Hint: If you really go all out for God, they will do the same thing with you.) Now, **while His family is en route from Nazareth, Jesus has yet another one of His unpleasant run-ins with the Pharisees:**

"²² *And the scribes who came down from Jerusalem said, 'He has Beelzebul,' and, 'By the ruler of the demons He casts out demons.'* ²³ *So He called them to Himself and said to them in parables: 'How can Satan cast out Satan?'* ²⁴ *If a kingdom is divided against itself, that kingdom cannot stand.* ²⁵ **And if a house is divided against itself, that house cannot stand.** ²⁶ *And if Satan has risen up against himself, and is divided, he cannot stand, but has an end.* ²⁷ *No one can enter a strong man's house and plunder his goods, unless he first binds the strong man. And then he will plunder his house.'*"
- Mark 3:22-27

Can you see where this chain of events is headed? The Pharisees have already accused Him of casting **out Satan by Satan**. Jesus' response is full of contempt, as well it should be. Why? Because **a house divided against itself cannot stand**. And, true to form, no sooner has He completed this teaching, which extends to Verse 30, than His own kinfolk, bent on no good thing, show up at His doorstep:

"³¹ **Then His brothers and His mother came, and standing outside they sent to Him, calling Him.** ³² *And a multitude was sitting around Him; and they said to Him, 'Look, Your mother and Your brothers are outside seeking You.'* ³³ *But He answered them, saying, 'Who is My mother, or My brothers?'* ³⁴ *And He looked around in a circle at those who sat about Him, and said, 'Here are My mother and My brothers!'* ³⁵ **For whoever does the will of God is My brother and My sister and mother.'**" -- Mark 3:31-35

Now, suddenly, things begin to make sense. Notice how his brothers and mother **did not come into the inner circle of the disciples**. Given that they were His very own family, I am sure that the people around Jesus, sitting at His feet to hear His teaching, would have been more than glad to make room for his own brothers and mother. Surely they would be favorable to what He was saying. That's how it would appear in the **natural**, but Jesus didn't operate in the **natural**, He operated in the **supernatural**. He had already been warned about **division within a household** during the attack by the Pharisees, so He was on His guard. Then, mysteriously, his very own family appeared, standing **outside** and asking Him to come **out to them!** That simply didn't make sense, and Jesus knew through the Holy Spirit what nobody else in the room knew: that earlier, in Verse 21, **His own family has decided that He was nuts and had made the decision to come and take Him away, by force if necessary**. Now does Jesus' somewhat rude answer make sense? If you dice and slice the Scripture into teeny, tiny little pieces, ignoring the context of the event, it will never make sense to you. Only when you view the passage as **literal, logical** and **chronological** does it make sense. I

know that I probably drive you crazy yourselves when I repeat this fundamental principle over and over again, but until you get **it** right, you will never get **the rest of the Bible right**.

So great was the hatred of Jesus by His brothers (just like Joseph!) that they tried to **set Him up to be killed!** What? Didn't know that either? Come with me to the Gospel of John:

"¹ After these things Jesus walked in Galilee; for He did not want to walk in **Judea**, because **the Jews sought to kill Him**. ² Now the Jews' Feast of Tabernacles was at hand. ³ His **brothers** therefore said to Him, '**Depart from here and go into Judea, that Your disciples also may see the works that You are doing**. ⁴ For no one does anything in secret while he himself seeks to be known openly. **If You do these things, show Yourself to the world.**' ⁵ **For even His brothers did not believe in Him.**"

- John 7:1-5

Thanks a lot, bro! They **deliberately** tried to goad Him into going to Judea, the very place where a death warrant had been issued for him by the Jews. For those of you who follow Dwayne "Dog" Chapman, the Bounty Hunter, it would be like him returning to Mexico in plain sight after plucking that mass rapist and multi-million dollar heir out of his little hidey hole in Mexico and bringing him to justice in the US. The Mexicans were being paid off to the hilt on that deal by the millionaire, and no doubt a warrant for Dog's death was issued secretly by him once he was in jail. Had Chapman ever returned to Mexico, even if it was done forcibly by some whacked out US immigration officials who probably were also on the take, or via some ultra-liberal judge who, like the Scarecrow in the Wizard of Oz, was born without a brain, it would have meant quick death for the Dog. The same was true for Jesus, and He played it **very wisely**. Stung by their criticism, He **did** go, but **covertly**, under cover until the Great Day of the Feast. Then, with **all eyes upon him, making it impossible for the Jews to perform an undercover assassination attempt**, He revealed Himself **publicly**. There's another incredible story about what he said during that first public speech that had to do with the holiday they were celebrating, but we don't have time to go into that today. We have already veered too far off course.

Imagine, then, how James, one of His four brothers (James, Joses, Simon, and Judas) felt when, after three days, that perfect Momma's Boy, never-did-anything-wrong, goody-two-shoes brother of theirs **rose from the grave in glory and power!** There was some serious crow to be eaten that day, and a goodly number of hats to be chewed upon. By the way, Jesus' brother Judas is also known as **Jude** and wrote the short little one-page Epistle with the same name. Now, with all of that in mind, one story leading to another story which in turn leads to another...), we look at what James, the half-brother of Jesus (same mom, different dad!) had to say about prayer:

"¹³ Is anyone among you suffering? **Let him pray**. Is anyone cheerful? **Let him sing psalms**. ¹⁴ Is anyone among you sick? **Let him call for the elders of the church, and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the name of the Lord**. ¹⁵ **And the prayer of faith will save the sick, and the Lord will raise him up. And if he has committed sins, he will be forgiven**. ¹⁶ **Confess your trespasses to one another, and pray for one another, that you may be healed. The effective, fervent prayer of a righteous man avails much**. ¹⁷ **Elijah was a man with a nature like ours, and he prayed earnestly that it would not rain; and it did not rain on the land for three years and six months**. ¹⁸ **And he prayed again, and the heaven gave rain, and the earth produced its fruit.**"

-- James 5:13-18

If you know anything at all about your Bible, you are already familiar with this passage. Many of you probably already attend churches that pray for the sick, and perhaps also anoint with oil. There are, however, some things about this passage which are not immediately evident to the casual reader, and I want to address those issues, and then tie that conversation back to the original Scripture that we headed up this E-Pistle with.

Few and far between are those who do not pray when they are suffering. Almost everyone, even most hardened atheist, will pray "Fox-Hole Prayers" when they get their rear end in the ditch. Many is the soldier who was not a religious man who prayed fervently for the first time in his life when he was cowering in a fox hole somewhere with bullets flying and mortars exploding all around him. I have a friend in Ferdinand, Indiana, who told me a wonderful story about this type of conversion many years

ago, and it is worth the telling here to show you how marvelous and flexible our God truly is. He will do almost anything to get someone saved and into the Kingdom! Our friend's story began in Vietnam. He was pinned down by enemy fire. He had been born and raised a Catholic, but had no real interest in religion or God up until that point in time. He had never officially committed his life to Christ, either, so we would have to regard him as "unsaved" at that point in time. As he sat in that foxhole in the dead of night with bullets whizzing over his head and mortar shells exploding all around him, he cried out to God for the first time in his life. He didn't come to God because he knew that He loved him so. He didn't come to God because he knew that he could be blessed in serving God. **He came to God because his life was in imminent danger of being snuffed out, and he didn't want to die!** This is how it is for most people, including me. We don't come to God for all the positive reasons that we should want to come for. No dear friends, we need to be much more cynical and pragmatic than that. We come to God because we have successfully managed to work ourselves into an impossible situation, from which there seems to be **no way of escape**. Then, **when all hope of any self-solution or earthly solution is gone, we cry out to God**. I have discussed this matter with many, many Christians over the years. My unscientific survey has revealed a startling statistic: **not one person I have ever met has come to Christ because times were good**. Instead, **they came to Christ because things were bad, in most cases, very bad**. It is precisely because of this incredible stubbornness on our part that God is forced to permit crisis and trouble to come into our lives. Without it, we would never turn to God and repent of our sins and receive Him as our Lord and Savior. Hint: If we want to see true **revival**, the pulpits of America are going to have to start preaching **repentance**. But before they can start preaching repentance, they are going to have to start preaching and teaching an awareness of **sin**. And for an awareness of sin to be preached, we are going to have to return to preaching that there are **absolute right and absolute wrong things in this world, and that there is a righteous judge to whom everyone is ultimately accountable**. Since repentance from sin is not being preached from the pulpits of America, there can never be any true revival. When our pulpits become fountains of not only mercy and grace but also righteousness and holiness, then and only then will we start seeing results, and not until.

Meanwhile, back in the foxhole...

My friend had cried out to God for the first time in his life because he was afraid of dying. What happened next was truly amazing. As death raged just inches above his head, suddenly a deep seated peace began to rise up inside of him. He had never heard the phrase, "*the peace that passeth understanding*", but for no apparent reason, that was exactly what was happening. And then, suddenly, from inside of him, there came a rumbling and a surge of some kind of energy he had never experienced before. He found himself wanting to open his mouth and pray, but when he did, a strange language he had never heard before in his life came pouring out. With it came more incredible peace and power and a calm assurance that he was somehow going to survive all of this that he was going through. He had no idea what he had just done. Like most Catholic churches, the church he attended was pastored by an older, conservative Catholic priest who never, ever discussed any of the gifts of the Spirit, particularly what most of us know as **speaking in unknown tongues**. Even though it would take several years for him to eventually gravitate to a Full Gospel church where he would go to an altar and officially dedicate his life to Christ, nonetheless, God had somehow mysteriously done a saving work in his life as a result of that most desperate of all prayers, "*Lord, save!*"

Having covered that ground, we now come to the second major issue in James' statements: **the prayer of faith will save the sick man**. Please notice it says the prayer of **faith**, not the prayer of **doubt** and **unbelief**. As a pastor, I have heard many prayers for the sick over the years. Some of those prayers were powerful, and brought results. Some of those prayers weren't worth spit, and should have never wasted the good oxygen required to breathe them out. If that seems harsh, let me explain why I say this. Many times in my ministry, I have seen individuals battling for their lives. In three memorable cases, they were surrounded by two very different groups. One group was Spirit-filled and constantly prayed the **prayer of faith**, speaking **life** and **faith** and **health** and **peace** and **prosperity**. The other group was also Christian, but had been trained in their churches to pray **doubt** and **unbelief**. They would always hedge each prayer for healing with the dreaded aphorism, "*If it be Thy Will*". Now, while that phrase sounds good and religious and holy, it is **an abomination to God**. Now I **know** I've got a bunch of you mad! Before you rip these pages out and burn them, take just a

moment and listen to **why I say what I say**. The first thing I will do is issue you a challenge. Go into the New Testament and read the Gospels. I mean **really** read them. Pay close attention to all the **red letters**. That's the stuff that Jesus said. Find me **one place** where He prayed that prayer **regarding the needs of others**. Go ahead. Get your Bible out. I can wait. I'm patient. (Hah! Fat chance of that every happening! Oops! Did I just say that out loud? Sorry!) Anyway, I just bought you a few extra seconds of time. Find any? No? I didn't think you would. Know why? **Because there aren't any!** In every case when someone came to Jesus with a physical illness or a need, Jesus would say things like, "*Let it be done according to your faith*", or "*Do you believe that I am able to do this?*" Sometimes, He wouldn't even ask any questions at all. When someone came to Him, He simply did for that person what they needed, **simply because they had enough faith to come to Him, believing that He could do it**. The only time He **ever** prayed anything remotely like that was when it came to **His own willingness to lay down His own life for the sins of the world**. And even then, what He said was, "*Nonetheless, not My will but Thine be done!*" If you make a systematic search of the Scriptures for Jesus' response regarding healing, you will find **faith statement after faith statement**, coupled with some pretty scathing comments about **doubt and unbelief**. "*That is all theory*", you might say. "*What proof can you offer me that I am praying incorrectly when I pray that way?*" Let me go back to the three individuals. The first was a precious little girl named Rachel. She was battling cancer. Her father believed in the prayer of faith. Her mother, influenced by all their family members who attended a fundamentalist church that prayed "*If it be Thy will*" over everything, did not pray the prayer of faith. For about two years the battle raged. We would come in and pray faith over the child. Immediately she would start to improve. And then the relatives would come in the door right behind us and pray with doubt and unbelief. In fact, they did even worse than that. They began to pray actively and aggressively that God would take little Rachel home because "*Jesus needed another little angel in heaven!*" The next time I hear somebody say that in my presence, I will choke them myself and give Jesus that extra "*little angel*". Why do I say that? Because people aren't converted into angels when they die and go to heaven! Despite the views of the once-popular TV series, *Touched by an Angel*, angels are **created beings** who were made before the creation of the physical universe. Job says that the "sons of God" watched it being done and shouted for joy. We are **procreated** beings, and become **adopted** sons of God when we are born again. Right now we are a little lower than the angels, but in the resurrection, we will **judge angels**. For a believer, being turned into an angel would end up being a **short-term promotion**, but a **long-term demotion**.

Every time Rachel's relatives prayed for her, she immediately got worse! When we came, she would immediately improve! Then they would come and she would get worse. We would come, and... It was just like a tug-of-war, with the will of the two groups in contention over Rachel's precious life. Unfortunately, because they had greater access to her than we did, we eventually lost the battle, and Rachel died. I never forgot that incident, and it changed the way I pray forever. The second incident involved a lady in Kentucky who lived around the Central City area. She was also battling cancer. She also had two groups of friends. Most of her friends were Spirit-filled, and so understood what praying the prayer of faith meant. But her closest friend, who spent more time with her than any of us, was a Doctor of Theology. As such, she, of course, knew better than any of us. Why, she even knew more than the Bible! **Her** doctrine said that it was an affront to God to pray such arrogant prayers as we were praying. Even though the woman in question even had an **open vision from God**, showing her **totally healed** and praising Him, somehow her theologically, doctrinally, er, ahem, "correct" friend managed to talk her **out of her faith and into doubt and unbelief**. Needless to say, she died. To this day, I hold her friend personally responsible for her death, just as certainly as if she had put a gun to her forehead and pulled the trigger! I know I'm not the least bit gentle in these matters. Do you know why? **Because people are sick and dying all the time because they are surrounded with others who do not pray the prayer of faith**. The third individual breaks my heart more than the first two put together. Her name was Jodi and she was a dear, precious personal friend of ours, who attended our church. She had also fought a battle with cancer for over seven years. She stubbornly refused conventional medical treatment until the very end. She bathed herself in prayer and faith, but she also clung very strongly to homeopathic medicinal cures. Now, there's nothing wrong with homeopathic or naturopathic cures, as some refer to them. I am a firm believer in whatever it takes to beat the devil. If that is totally by faith, Amen and Amen! If a conventional doctor is involved, so be it. If homeopathic or chiropractic methodologies or some other approach is successful in defeating sickness, disease and death, then Amen! Although Jodi had many Spirit-filled friends, I saw many of

them drop off and give up as time went on. More and more of them stopped interceding for her. At the very end, she too was surrounded by doubt and unbelief. Although we say we believe in such things as miracles and resurrection from the dead **in theory, in practice** the ugly truth is that we **do not believe**. It is almost impossible to get so-called Spirit-filled Christians to pray for miraculous violations of so-called natural law, so pervasive is our own doubt and unbelief.

With that in mind, I want to point out to you what James said about Elijah, one of the three greatest Men of God of all times. Why do I say that? Go to Matthew Chapter 17, to Mount Tabor, the Mount of Transfiguration. Who were the three individuals on the mountain? Jesus? Good. Who else? Moses? Very good! One more now... Yes, that's right! **Elijah!** James says that Elijah was a "*man of like nature unto ourselves*". In plain English, that means that Elijah **was no different that you or I**. James goes on to say that this man just like you or I prayed a **fervent, effectual prayer that it would not rain**. Guess what? It didn't rain for **three and a half years!** Then he prayed again, and it started to rain again. To prove my point about the **prayer of faith** I want to share a testimony of something that happened to me in late June of 2007. Before I do, however, I want to talk about what the words **fervent** and **effectual** mean. This won't take long, so just bear with me. Another word to use for **fervent** is **fiery**, or **on fire**. You've heard of someone being **on fire for Christ**. What does that imply? That they are enthusiastic, passionate, intense and totally sold out to Christ. It means that **absolutely nothing** means **anything** to them except serving Him, believing Him and standing on His Word. In short, a **fanatic**. A bug-eyed, crazy wild man. I want that to be how people describe me. There is nothing more pleasing to God than someone who can think of nothing else but Him. Think about it. When a young man and woman are in love, all they can think of is each other. One is totally enraptured just thinking about the other. They can't bear to be apart. They think of nothing else. This is the kind of love that God has for us. It is, unfortunately, generally **not** the kind of love we have for God. His love is **unconditional, unchanging, eternal**. Our love is **conditional, fickle, weak and intermittent**. We do not love Him as He loves us. The Bible defines love as this: that while **we were yet sinners, Christ died for us**. When we were enemies of Christ and His Cross, He went to that cross to redeem those very ones who were spitting on Him and reviling Him and cursing Him. All He could say was, "*Father, forgive them, because they have no clue what they are doing!*"

The second word I would like to look at is the word **effectual**. Another word that means the same thing is **effective, something that counts, that makes a difference**. What kind of prayer is an **effective** prayer? A prayer that is **filled with faith, doubting not**. A prayer that is **based on God's Word, not our opinion**. And a prayer that is **unmoved by the individuals or circumstances surrounding it**. Jesus cleared the house before he raised the little girl from the dead. Peter saw what He did, and later on when he raised Dorcas from the dead, he found that he had to do the same thing. Even the saints, who were holding up the garments that she had made, **were weeping for her already established death** and had **no faith that she could live again** short of the resurrection.

Now that we have had that little mini-lecture in what it means to pray an **on-fire, effective prayer**, let me take you to Narsapur, India. Back in 2005, we had begun what quickly developed into a wonderful friendship with a young native Evangelist couple in Southeastern India, near the Bay of Bengal. Their names are **Ruth and Raj**, and they head up **Good Samaritan Ministries**, an orphanage of some 50 children. At that point in time, they were trying to survive by living in an abandoned building, yet paying their slumlord prime rental fees for the "privilege" of doing so. Raj was trying to make ends meet working as a pharmaceutical representative, attempting to feed him, his family and 50 children on the not-so-great salary of one man. That wasn't working. Although we are not a large, financially established organization, the Lord assembled a small core of highly dedicated backers around us, and things began to move forward. In June of 2007, I and the primary donor for the entire project had the privilege of going to Narsapur to dedicate a brand new, 100-bed orphanage. It was then that the two most notable miracles I have ever seen in my life occurred, and they did not occur by praying a spineless, fireless, ineffective "*Thy will be done*" prayer. Here's how it happened:

India's seasons are quite different than ours here in the United States. They are literally on the other side of the world from us, and the angle of the earth produces different weather there than it does here. Most people don't know that when it is summer in the Northern Hemisphere, it is winter in the Southern Hemisphere, and vice versa. India is on the cusp of that line between the Northern and

Southern hemispheres. Their summers are blistering hot, up to 120 degrees, so hot that water blisters form on the children's skin because of the heat. Ruth told me the other day that during the coldest winter they ever had the temperature dropped to a "bone-chilling" 70 degrees! True! When it's raining here, it's not raining there. When it's hot here, it's "cold" there. Our original game plan was to complete the orphanage no later than January, because in January the monsoon season comes and it rains continually. Please understand that during monsoon season it is not a matter of whether it will rain or not. It is a matter of **how many times** it will rain and **how hard** it will rain and **how long** it will rain. Due to a variety of factors, we missed our weather window. The year stretched on through the "winter" into monsoon season, and construction slowed to a crawl. Plaster wouldn't stick. Whitewash wouldn't dry. Things were not going very well. We were on our way to India, and there appeared to be a slim-next-to-none chance that they would be able to complete the work in time. When we got to India, everyone greeted us with the greatest respect and affection, thanking us for coming and for helping the children of India and Narsapur. But everyone, even the Christians, also said the same thing: "*Pastor Ray, we are so very glad that you are here and we so very much appreciate what you are doing, but it is a terrible shame that the rains will ruin the dedication service!*"

Everywhere I went, I heard the same thing. The more I heard it, the madder I got. Finally, I called my wife in Ohio and told her to get everyone praying, because **we were going to shut the sky!** Now, I have seen many healings and miracles in my life. Don't every try to tell me that God doesn't heal today. Try telling that to the near-blind 12-year-old-boy who went into a baptismal pool to receive Christ and came out with perfect 20/20 vision! Try telling that to the 70 year-old-woman who sat upright on a hospital gurney, shouted, "*Thank you, Jesus!*" and walked out healed. Try telling that to the woman who came to church one night on a walker, so deeply impacted by pain that it took her 10 minutes to walk 10 feet, but who was dancing up and down the aisles totally healed only two hours later. No, dear friends, I have seen my Lord and Savior Jesus Christ do many marvelous things, but we had never attempted anything like this. Yet I knew what the Book of James said. Elijah was a man of "like nature" with you and I. He was just like you and me. Yet he made a simple faith statement that changed history. "*As the Lord God of Israel lives, **before whom I stand**, there shall not be dew nor rain these years, **except at my word***". (I Kings 17:1) Please notice **what** he said, and **how** he said it. First of all, **He knew who he was "in Christ" and had developed a powerful relationship with the Lord.** That's where it all starts. And that kinda leads us right back to fervent, effectual prayer, doesn't it? Hmmm... Second of all, **he knew the power of the spoken word of faith over a situation.** Proverbs says that the power of **life** and **death** is in the tongue. It is not a matter of blindly accepting what is as some kind of Divine destiny, fate, kismet or whatever else you want to call it. That isn't what Christianity is all about. Christianity is about **changing what is** into what you **need it to be** by exercising faith, and believing so strongly in those things **that are not** that you are willing to **speak them into existence** through the **words that come out of your mouth.** If it weren't, Jesus would still be in the grave, having accepted Satan's "destiny" for Him. If it weren't, then Jairus' daughter and the widow of Nain's son and Lazarus would never have had a second chance at living. And if it weren't, **then you and I would still be dead in our trespasses and sins, having never received the life-changing grace and power to be born again through the shed blood of Jesus Christ!** The same power that **saves** you also **heals** you, **delivers** you and **provides for your every need.**

With that in mind, we had everyone start praying the **prayer of faith** over the situation. The next morning, I got up and opened my window. It was still raining. Then the Lord spoke to me, very clearly and very plainly. "*Here's how I want you to pray*", He said. "*Pray like this: **Come, Breath of God, come! Come, Ruach Elohim (Breath of God in Hebrew), come! Blow away the clouds. Blow away the rain. Dry up the ground just as You did in the days of Noah. Send the rain to Cincinnati!***" At that point in time, we were having a severe drought in the Cincinnati area, just as Narsapur was having just the opposite, a pouring deluge of rain. The first day I prayed as the Lord had directed me. And **absolutely nothing happened!** I was a little disturbed, but thought to myself that it might take a little time for something like that to manifest. The second day I got up, opened the window, looked out over the rain-soaked countryside, and prayed the prayer again. **And absolutely nothing happened again!** By the end of the second day, I was pretty miffed at God. After all, it was He who had told me to pray this way! So I went to Him in prayer and "confronted" Him. "*Are you going to do anything or not?*" I asked Him. "**I will**", He replied, "**In my own timing!**" Duly chastised, I, like Job before me, shut my big mouth and kept quiet. The third day, I awakened, went to

the window, opened it up and looked out on the soggy scene, and prayed the **prayer of faith** for the **third** time. **And that very day it stopped raining!** Completely. Dead in its tracks. As we went around town, I noticed that people were glancing skyward, somewhat puzzled. Where was the rain? At the same time, a strong wind had begun to blow constantly. Suddenly plaster was drying and sticking on the walls. Suddenly mortar was drying and hardening. Suddenly whitewash was drying so that a second finishing coat could be put on. All the while the workers were working they kept casting their eyes skyward, wondering what was going on. The second day dawned bright and clear. The swamp that had been the compound grounds was now drying up so that workers and tractors could move about freely. I will admit that during this transitional time, I learned a new meaning for the phrase, "tractor pull". I know what it means here in America, but in India it means **one tractor pulling another tractor out of a ditch!** By the third day, people were wondering and talking about it constantly. The rain never stopped for one day much less three during monsoon season. It simply didn't happen. **Until then.** In fact, the sealing of the skies in a one-hour circle around Narsapur was so completely effective that **no rain fell at all for three full weeks!** It got so bad that some of the leaders came to me later on to respectfully remind me to please "*turn the rain back on when you leave*". I thought it was kind of funny until I found that no matter how hard I tried, **I couldn't turn it back on!** It took a frenzied outburst of tongues-filled intercession by my precious wife to turn the spigot back on over the region. I told no one except Ruth and Raj what was going on, but when it was time for the dedication ceremony, I decided it was time for **the redeemed of the Lord to say so!** When it came my turn to speak, here's what I said: "*I want to thank you for the opportunity of being here today. When we first came to India, everyone was kind and greeted us with such openness and warmth. But everyone also said, 'Pastor Ray, we are so very glad you are here. But it is such a terrible shame that the rain will ruin the dedication ceremony'*". I then paused and held my hand up, palm cupped and outstretched, as if looking up for rain. "*I don't see any rain, do you?*" I asked the almost 1,000 people in attendance. "*Let me tell you why it isn't raining*", I continued. I then proceeded to tell them what the Lord had instructed me to do, the prayer that He had instructed me to pray, and the amazing result of that simple **prayer of faith.** I knew that there were many non-Christians in the audience. The whole city of Narsapur had been invited. Thank God all 70,000 of them didn't show up! We would have had no place to put them and nothing to feed them with. But then, I have to consider the fact that facing the same set of circumstances, Jesus performed yet another miracle, the miracle of the fish and the loaves. If **then** and **there**, why not **here** and **now**? As I finished telling the crowd about what God had done, I also added one comment that brought a smile to all their faces. "*My wife just called me this morning from Cincinnati*", I concluded, "*And she said to me, 'Honey, please send the rain somewhere else! I have to drive to Louisville today and I hate driving in the rain!'*" The crowd chuckled at the ironic results of our prayers being answered. I then came to the logical conclusion of the miracle. "*Our God is so strong that He is able to shut the skies over Narsapur and send the clouds and the rain halfway around the world to Cincinnati, Ohio. And if He is that strong, then He is also powerful enough to **save your souls, heal your bodies, and deliver and provide for your families.** Everyone up until now has been thanking one person or another for their role in this marvelous work. Yet in all of this, there is one Person that we have neglected to thank properly. I would like all of you to stand and give a mighty round of applause to our Lord and Savior, the only true God, Jesus Christ!*" Everyone in crowd applauded. Having concluded my speech and given testimony to the glory of God, I calmly sat down again, thinking nothing more about it. Several other speakers followed me and finally the festivities for the day were done. In India, you can't have a party without feeding everyone. As a result, there was a huge banquet following the formal dedication service. During the meal, I learned that the Indian equivalent of paper plates are 6 or seven lotus leaves, sewn together, that all Indians eat using their hands, mixing rice with a curry sauce placed next to it, and that the curry sauce is hot enough to set your mouth on fire for hours afterwards! After the meal, I was walking around, talking with people, blessing children, and praying for the needs of individuals who came up to me. In India, if you have any anointing at all, be prepared to pray for people non-stop from the time you get off the plane till the time that you get back on it again to go home. Never have I seen a people so eager to receive prayer, and with so much faith that somehow **your** prayer is going to be **the** prayer that opens heaven's gates for them. While I was talking, a woman came up to me. She didn't understand English and I didn't understand Telugu, their native tongue. Through Raj, who acted as an interpreter, I was able to discover what she wanted. It turned out that her daughter, now about 20 years old, had been born mute, and had never been able to speak a word in her life. She wanted me to pray for her. In India, when you say that your God is a miracle working God, they believe you

and take you at face value. It's not like America where people often roll their eyes in skepticism, cynicism, doubt and unbelief. I had said that my God was a miracle working God strong enough to perform signs, wonders, miracles and healings. If that were true, and the evidence of dry ground and clear blue skies was all around her, then she wanted that same God to do a miracle for her child. I hesitated for just a second, because I had never witnessed a miracle of such magnitude before. But, then again, God had never shut the skies for me when I had prayed before! In addition, for the two previous days, the Lord had been giving me Scripture after Scripture about miracles: the deaf hearing, the lame walking, the blind seeing and the **mute speaking!** Now came the most important question of all: **did I believe my own God enough to trust Him to perform this miracle?** If not, then everything I had said was a travesty and a mockery. So, whispering under my breath, "*Alllllrighty, then!*", I turned and said out loud, "*Let's lay hands on her*". It never occurred to me that the girl didn't know a word of English. All she knew was that this American and his friends had their hands placed on her head and shoulders. I don't even know if her mom said anything to her. It all happened so fast. We prayed, first in English and then later in tongues. Finally, I felt the power of the Holy Spirit come, but not as strongly as I would have liked. After a bit, I said, "*Amen and Amen!*" and stepped back. I looked at the girl. She looked back at me. Since she was only about five feet tall, I bent down, put my hands on my thighs and said, "**Say 'Momma'!**". She just stared blankly back at me. I said, under my breath and to no one in particular, "*Oh, brother! This isn't going well!*" Then I steeled myself, bent back down, stared the girl square in the face and said again, "**Say 'Momma'!**". For a brief moment in time, nothing happened. Then slowly the little girl opened her mouth and said, **for the first time in her life, "Momma"**. Frankly, I was stunned. I don't know what I expected to happen or not to happen. I was in my own private little Twilight Zone. Everything else except the girl and I had disappeared into some alternate universe. Everyone around us started to go crazy. They all knew the mother and daughter, and knew for a fact that this young lady had never spoken in her life before. Not to let the moment drop, I turned to her again and said, "**Say 'Poppa'!**". This time, more quickly, she opened her mouth and dutifully said, "**Poppa**". So far, so good. Then, the Holy Spirit whispered to me, "**Have her say 'Halleluia'!**". I didn't think anything of it at the time except that it was another word. But later on it finally dawned on me why the Lord told me to use that particular word. She could say "Momma" without a tongue. She could say "Poppa" without a tongue. But if she really hadn't been healed and still didn't have a tongue, "Halleluia" would have come out sounding like she was Scooby Doo, "**Harreruya!**". Instead, crystal clear, came the word, "**Halleluia!**" One final time I tested the waters. I said "**Say 'Jesus'!**". Back came the response, clear as a bell, "**Jesus**".

People sometimes ask me what it is like at times like this. What does it feel like? What are you thinking? That's very hard to describe. In a very real sense, **I'm not thinking at all**. I learned a very long time ago not to trust my own feelings, thoughts or emotions. The only thing that matters at that moment in time is **hearing the still small voice of the Holy Spirit and obeying it without question or hesitation**. I have learned that there is a very tiny window to go through at moments like these, and any disobedience, doubt or unbelief can kill the miracle just as quickly as the moment developed. I become very "bossy", if you will. I don't **ask** anybody to do anything. I **tell** them what to do. I'm not mean or nasty when I do it, and there is absolutely no trace of arrogance or rudeness when I do it. I guess it must be much like a surgeon performing a delicate operation. There is no time for debate or discussion. Things must be done in a certain way, and they must be done at a certain time. With the Holy Spirit, obedience and timing are **everything**. Also, in a very real sense, I become a detached observer to my own actions. **Someone Else** takes over my mind and body and, with my full cooperation and consent, performs the actions necessary for the healing, sign or miracle to occur. I am still monitoring the entire process, learning and making mental notes about what He is doing through me, but, trust me; I am not operating from some previously scripted plan of attack. I have **no clue** what I am doing, or what I am going to do next. **He does**, but not me!

Swiftly, now, I turned my attention from the daughter back to the mother. "*Is this woman a Christian?*" I asked Raj. "*No, Pastor*", said Raj, "*She is a Hindu*". At that moment in time, the prophetic anointing switched off inside of me, and the evangelistic anointing switched on. "*Ma'am*", I said, "*I don't mean to sound disrespectful, but **your Hindu gods have done nothing to heal your daughter all these years, and Jesus Christ has just healed her! Don't you think it's time you gave your life to Christ and promised to serve Him and obey Him only?***" There was a brief pause as Raj translated what I had said to her. Then she responded, and Raj turned back to me.

"Pastor", he said, "She would like to, but she has to go home first and ask her husband". For those of us in America, we would see this as a thinly veiled attempt to dodge the question, but only if you have never been to India. India is almost as male-dominant a culture as the Arab world is. Often, when a man dies, the people of the village will still force his widow to be cremated with him. Women have very few freedoms in India in contrast to our culture. And in particular, in a culture where to be Indian is also to be Hindu, and where a national movement exists which states, categorically, "**India is for Hindus only!**", it can be very tough if the woman is a Christian and the husband is either a Hindu or a Muslim. I had a friend who came to India about two years before I did, and he noticed that in his evangelistic crusades a particular woman would be there every day worshipping passionately with fresh bruises all over her face and body. When he inquired about the woman, he was informed by the local pastor that every time she attending one of his meetings, the husband would beat her afterwards until she was nearly unconscious. My friend insisted that they both go and talk to her to discourage her from coming to the meetings lest she receive permanent harm. When they told her that, this tiny, frail woman gave the dressing down of his life to my 6' 5", 350 pound friend. "**Don't you tell me what I can and cannot endure for the sake of the Gospel!**" she sternly said. "**I love Jesus so much that I count it a privilege to be beaten every day for the sake of Christ!**" After that my friend kept his opinions to himself.

With this woman, however, I knew that if I was ever going to draw the net and bring her soul to Christ, this was the hour and the moment. "Ma'am", I quickly responded, "**When you are standing before the Great White Throne Judgment of God, He isn't going to ask you what your **husband** thought! He is going to ask you what **you** did in your life in response to Him! We are dealing with your immortal soul here, and, frankly, I would not want to be in a position to have to tell Him that pleasing my husband was more important than pleasing God!**" Thank God, I got through to her, and we had the privilege of leading her to Christ. She wasn't the only person to give their life to Christ, though. We led our driver, one of the cooks at the parsonage, this Hindu woman and hundreds and hundreds of others to Christ during the two weeks we were there. In our final evangelistic healing crusade, when I gave the altar call, at least 25% of the audience of about 3,000 stood to receive Christ. It was a glorious moment in time that I will never forget.

None of that would have happened, however, if I had adopted a passive, "Will of God" approach. Jesus said it best when He said that "**the Kingdom of God suffers violence, and the violent take it by force!**" (Matthew 11:10).

One final note of encouragement for those who feel that they should be praying more forcefully than they are. Please remember that in the keynote passage in Revelation that we used for this article, the prayers of the saints do not reach the Throne of the Father without some modification. The intercessory administrative assistant angel takes those prayers and **mixes them with incense to make them sweet smelling in the nostrils of the Father**. What does that mean? I rather suspect that it means that God supplies the incense to take the carnality, worldliness, foolishness and sin out of our prayers and **cleans them up**. Frankly, some of our prayers must be pretty stinky when they leave this planet. They are laced with personal self-interest and often utterly absent of concern for the needs of others around us. Instead, God looks upon our hearts and not only cleans up our attempts to communicate with Him, but also sweetens them and enhances their effectiveness. Those same prayers are then returned to the earth as thunder, lightning and earthquakes. It has always been my experience that fervent, effectual prayer offered **up** to heaven is always returned **down** to earth in a much more powerful form than when it traveled skyward.

One additional note of doctrine is appropriate about this passage. Remember that the Rapture occurred earlier, at the end of the 6th Seal, before the Wrath of God began. Yet here, at the beginning of the 7th Seal, we find the saints of God praying. What is going on? I suspect that the answer is twofold: First, remember that half of the church was left behind when the Rapture occurred. Although many of those individuals will become apostate, there will nonetheless be those faithful, truly repentant individuals who will get their lives straight and keep them straight, even unto death. Second, remember that the 144,000 male, virgin Jewish evangelists have been busily at work proclaiming the coming of Messiah Jeshua to all Israel, so that all of Israel will be saved. Some of those saints at that point in time will surely be from the naturally born children of Abraham.

We have covered a great deal of ground in this E-Pistle. Sorry it took so long, but there were so many things that had to be said. I hope that the testimonies you have read today have inspired you to go and do likewise. It's time for you to take the Kingdom of Heaven by force! Amen and Amen!

Day 6 – Hail, Fire and ... Blood???



“⁷ The first angel sounded: And hail and fire followed, mingled with blood, and they were thrown to the earth. And a third of the trees were burned up, and all green grass was burned up.” – Revelation 8:7

In some of our previous E-Pistles, we discussed **Extinction-Level Events** in anticipation of the **7th Seal**, which comes as close to totally destroying the planet and all life on it as anything in the history of the world. However, in the midst of all this destruction, God and His people will still be working signs, wonders and miracles. At this point in the chain of events, the 50% of the Church that was ready has already been removed through the *Rapere*, or Rapture, but, in the midst of iniquity and evil run rampant, there will still be those who stand for God. Let’s pick up John’s narrative in Revelation 8:6-7:

*“So the **seven angels** that had the **seven trumpets** prepared themselves to sound. The **first angel** sounded: And **hail and fire followed, mingled with blood**, and they were thrown to the earth. And a **third of the trees were burned up, and all green grass was burned up**.”*

Please understand that as we attempt to understand these amazing events **some speculation is always involved**. The real issue is whether we will remain **faithful to the original text** or not. For the moment, let’s remain **literal, not symbolic**, as we walk through what John says. Notice that he says **hail, fire and blood**. What a bizarre combination! Most narratives on Revelation take this to be symbolic, but, as you have already seen on multiple occasions, God **means exactly what He says!** So the question is this: **what naturally occurring phenomenon could produce such a combination?** The answer is **a comet!** Just a few short years ago, astronomers witnessed one of the most remarkable events in mankind’s history. The comet **Shoemaker-Levy** entered the Solar System and strayed too close to its largest planet, Jupiter. Torn by the enormous gravitational pull of the gas giant, the comet was ripped into nine separate pieces, which observers labeled the **strand of nine pearls**. The reason for the analogy was that as the comet was ripped apart, the nine separate portions trailed one another, much as a strand of pearls on a necklace. As the Solar Wind began to play on the nine, each glowed as the **frozen gas** in the comet began to heat up and dissipate. Each piece in turn struck the Jovan atmosphere and was swallowed up without a trace. It provided our scientific community with a remarkable opportunity to observe **what happens when a rogue solar body like a comet or asteroid hits a larger planetary body**. Had the comet struck the earth, the damage would have been enormous, perhaps triggering another **E.L.E.** like those we discussed previously. Since the Jovan atmosphere is so thick, we have no way of knowing what happened to the “pearls” after they made initial contact, but we are capable, through computer simulation, of predicting accurately what would have happened had it been the planet Earth.

Before we examine the theoretical impact on Earth, we need to take a look at what a comet is made of, versus a **meteoroid** or an **asteroid**. **Comets** have often been referred to as **“dirty snowballs”**. What scientists mean by that is that a comet is composed of three primary ingredients: **frozen gas or “snow”**, water in the form of ice and **many small-to-medium size rocks**, all clumped together in a giant, dirty, frozen ball. Since comets have **elliptical orbits** (that is, they tend to be **egg-shaped**, rather than **round**), the vast majority of a comet’s life is spent in the absolute darkness and bitter, absolute zero cold of interstellar space. Only when the comet’s uneven orbit brings it back into the Solar System does it develop its beautiful “tail”, as the frozen gas, exposed to the rays of the Sun, begins to “melt”, evaporate and dissipate in a trail similar to that left by a jet airplane as it crosses the

daytime sky. By the way, the tail of a comet always points away from the sun, pushed that way by the Solar Wind. **Asteroids and meteorites**, on the other hand, are made up of **solid rock**. They are almost impossible to detect, even when they are massive in size, because they are dark and do not have the reflective qualities of the "snow" in the comet. Think of a patch of snowy ground on a moonlight night – the moonlight will reflect off the snow on the ground, but not very well off the ground itself. A direct hit by a comet would cause less damage than a strike by a meteorite or asteroid, and would tend to be **scattered over a large area of the planet**, since the comet would shatter into a million pieces as it hit the Earth's atmosphere. A meteorite hit would be much more focused and much more violent. That kind of event may well be described in the **2nd Trumpet**. We'll talk about that more in an upcoming E-Pistle.

As the comet struck the earth's atmosphere and shattered, it would fling water, vapor and **hail** (some of the remnants of the frozen gas), along with millions of pieces of rock, across the surface of our planet. Many of the small rock pieces would ignite as they passed through the atmosphere and would strike the ground as **fire**. Depending on the trace elements found in the comet, it might very well have a **red color**, giving it the **appearance of blood**. I'm not excluding the possibility of it being **actual blood**, however. If you were to board a space ship and travel from the Earth out toward the edge of the Solar System, you would encounter **Mars**, the mysterious **Asteroid Belt**, and then the largest planet in our Solar System, **Jupiter**. It is the **Asteroid Belt** to which we will turn our attention. Many scientists believe that the Asteroid Belt was once originally a **planet similar to Mercury, Venus, Earth and Mars**. If you examine our Solar System carefully, you will see a distinct pattern among the planets. The innermost four planets are **solid planets with limited or no atmosphere**. The Asteroid Belt bears the unmistakable evidence of once being that kind of planet. Once past the Asteroid Belt, however, all the planets are **Gas Giants**, such as **Jupiter, Saturn, Uranus and Neptune**. Pluto may or may not even be a planet, since its orbit more closely resembles that of a large asteroid, elliptical in shape. There has been a great deal of controversy recently over Pluto's status. It is far smaller than all the other rock-based planets in the interior of the Solar System, and does not have a uniform orbit pattern, like all the other planets.

So, **rocky planets** comprise the **interior** of the Solar System, and **gaseous planets** make up the **exterior**. Now, let's take a look at the most Earth-like planet, **Mars**. Computer models tell us that Mars once had **oceans and an atmosphere just like Earth**. What happened? What terrible cataclysm occurred that **devastated Mars and destroyed its unnamed neighbor just beyond it?** There is some speculation that prior to the Genesis narrative there once existed Pre-Adamic races. Genesis describes an Earth that is, in the Hebrew, "*tohu*" and "*bohu*", that is, a scene of great waste and desolation, as *after a great destruction or battle*. Some of those beings, according to **theory and speculation**, populated the Earth. Other species inhabited Mars, and yet others the now-devastated Asteroid Belt planet. Some researchers believe that they were Angelic beings, and that Lucifer's original dominion might have been on a planet other than our own. Again, **this is all speculation, and I present it as just that.**

Another theory, and the one which I personally favor, is that at one point in time the entire Solar System was in much better shape than it is now. At some point in distant history, the Lord framed the heavens and the earth, including our very own Solar System. All the planets were in clean, parallel orbits, all along the same flat plane. All of the polar north poles of the planets were straight up and down. Then something terrible happened, which all but wrecked the Solar System. An incredibly powerful energy being named Lucifer came into disfavor in the 3rd Heaven, where God not only dwells but has His seat of being. After Lucifer's attempt to take over Heaven failed, he was cast down from the 3rd Heaven all the way to the 1st Heaven, the atmosphere of this planet. Paul, in Ephesians 2:2, refers to him as the **Prince of the power of the air**. Substitute the word **atmosphere** for the word **air** and you start to get the picture. He is currently confined to the atmosphere surrounding our planet. Jesus would also say in Luke 10:18 that He saw Satan **fall from heaven like lightning**. Substitute the word **atmosphere** for **heaven** and the picture starts to clear up a bit more. Now we have an image of these energy beings being wounded and damaged by the exercise of faith and the spoken word, just like an airplane being knocked out of the sky by anti-aircraft fire. To strengthen the case for this concept, I have to share a remarkable personal experience.

When I was about 14, I decided that I was big and bad and all grown up and started sneaking cigarettes from time to time. In my youthful "wisdom", I was sure that no one knew what I was doing. It turns out that my dad was a whole lot smarter than I thought he was, and I was a whole lot dumber than I thought I was. Mark Twain once wrote that when he was 17, he thought his father was a fool. But when he turned 21, he was amazing how much the old man had learned in just four short years! After a few months of sneaking smokes behind the garage, I got ready to go out for high school football. A few weeks before the start of summer practices my dad took me aside. "Son", he said, "I know that you are smoking." My jaw dropped to my knees and my heart leaped to my throat. Surely my father was going to now complete the sacrifice which Abraham was told to halt when he drew a knife to slay Isaac! My dad was going to kill me! Instead, he looked at me sadly, shook his head and said, "If you really want to smoke, I can't stop you from doing it. But there is one thing I **can** do. If you insist on smoking, I will not permit you to go out for football." Boy, dad sure did know how to hit you where it hurt! He knew that I wanted to play football more than anything else in the world (except date girls, of course!). He also knew that I would never be effective without good lung capacity, and smoking would prevent that from happening. His wisdom paid off. I stopped smoking, and went on to play three years of high school football and one year of college football as a lineman.

After I quit football in college, it was a different story. I tell this story to help you to understand how the enemy works. Please learn from my mistakes. In my sophomore year, I dated a young lady named Jenny that I thought was very pretty. There was only one thing wrong with her. She smoked constantly. The smell was tolerable until we finally began to kiss. The taste in my mouth was awful. It was like kissing an open furnace. Yuck! As good looking as she was, I vowed not to date her again, **but the damage had already been done. I was "infected" by a demon of nicotine addiction.** That unclean spirit had passed from her mouth into my mouth through our kisses. Shortly thereafter, after having not smoked or desired to smoke for five years, I suddenly decided that I wanted to start smoking again. At that point in my life, I was too dumb to realize what had happened to me. Only years later, after being baptized in the Holy Spirit, did I come to understand how the problem had started. From that point on, I was a smokin' machine! I went through 2½ packs a day, Marlboro crush-proof box, with the little red and white insignia on it. I smoked when I ate. I smoked when I shaved. I smoked in the car while I was driving and had more than one exciting moment when a hot ember would serenely drop between my legs and roll underneath. Back then, cigarettes only cost 30 cents a pack. I can't imagine how people afford it now. Finally, at the age of 25, I began my journey back to Christ. I started attending church again, then stepped up to teaching the high school class in Sunday School, then finally started attending Spirit-filled Bible studies. At that point in my life, I had no idea what "Spirit-filled" meant. I just knew that these people who spoke in unknown tongues seemed have a fire in their lives that I wanted but didn't have. And so I began to seek after the Baptism in the Holy Spirit. I locked myself up in my bathroom every morning for a half hour and began to cry out to the Lord. After 30 straight days of passionate intercession, I finally started asking the right question. One day, on my knees, I cried out to God, "**What's wrong with me?**" When you start asking that kind of question, you will start getting answers. Then, the most amazing thing happened. The Lord spoke to me **in an audible voice that my natural ear could hear.** That is the only time in my life when He has spoken to me audibly. I have heard His voice in my heart and in my mind on many, many occasions, but only once audibly. What did He say? Surely it was some great metaphysical secret, or perhaps one of the now-standard, Charismatic "Oh, how I love you, My children! Blah, blah, blah..." kinds of prophecies. Nope! None of that happened. He didn't even tell me that San Francisco was going to fall into the Pacific Ocean. No, dear friends, I had asked Him a **specific question**, and He gave me a **specific answer.** What did He say to me? Just four words: "**Clean up the temple!**" I knew immediately what He meant. The smoking had to go. My body was the Temple of the Holy Ghost, and smoking made it dirty and defiled it. If I wanted the Holy Spirit to come in, the unholy spirit that controlled my mouth had to come out.

What happened next was like Satan falling from the atmosphere like lightning. I went to work, still pondering over those four words. My office was all by itself, back by the computer room, away from everyone else. It's probably a good thing, too, given what happened shortly thereafter. After the standard round of morning greetings and the obligatory cup of coffee, I walked back to my office and starting working on a program I was writing. Before I did, however, I took the Marlboros out of my shirt pocket and held them up in the air to God. "Lord," I said, "I can **put** them down, but I can't **keep**

them down. *Only You can keep them down.*" After at least ten unsuccessful attempts to stop smoking over the previous ten years, I meant every word that I said. I then crumpled up the box, tossed it into the trash can next to my desk, and went back to the program I was writing. For the first half hour, everything was fine. Then, as I was in the middle of some fairly complicated coding, I felt someone come into the room. The door to my office was on the opposite side of the room on my left. I looked at the door. No, no one there. I was puzzled. Then I happened to look **up**, to where the far wall met the ceiling. **And some thing was there!** I had never seen anything like it in all my life. For those of you who have seen any of the *Alien* movies with Signore Weaver, it was something like that hideous creature. I have never seen anything so ugly and so inherently evil in all my days. It was black, scaly, staring straight at me and radiating **pure, lethal hatred toward me**. You've heard the old saying, "*If looks could kill*"? **These looks could kill!** I knew, somehow, that if this creature had been granted the power to kill me, there would have been little pieces of Ray splattered all over the room. Think that "splatter" movies aren't demonic? Think again. At the same time that I felt that intense hatred radiating outward towards me, I also felt an almost overwhelming desire to **smoke a cigarette!** Don't try to tell me it's just a habit, bud! I **know better!** Suddenly, the connection clicked in my mind. All these years, I hadn't been battling a "habit" or a "personal lifestyle" or an "individual choice". **I had been battling and losing the battle to a demon, transferred into me when I first kissed that girl!** Ye gad! I should have been terrified, yet I felt strangely calm and detached. I had been reading an excellent book by a gentleman name Merlin Carruthers called "*Prison to Praise*". In it, he argued that just as cursing is offensive to godly individuals, so praise and worship are offensive to the unclean spirits. Worse than that, praise and worship was actually **painful** to them and could cause them **injury!** Armed with that thought, I simply closed my eyes, lifted up my hands, and began to worship the Lord, right then and there. "*Thank you, Jesus!*" I said. "*Praise You! I Worship You! I give You glory!*" After only a few moments of this, I suddenly heard a horrible scream. Opening my eyes, I saw this demonic creature with its head pulled back in pain, its hands up to its ears, its eyes closed in agony, screaming at the top of its lungs. Suddenly, it catapulted backwards out of the room, straight through the wall. And when it left, guess what else left? That's right! **The desire to smoke also left at exactly the same time!** I started doing a little Holy Ghost hop right there at my desk. I had discovered the key to victory over the thing that had ridden me like a pony for the last ten years! After a few minutes of rejoicing, I settled back down and continued on with my programming. About a half hour later, it came back, only this time you could actually see wounds and bruises all over it, and it was clearly not as strong as it had been the first time. The minute it came in, I immediately smiled, lifted my hands into the air, and started praising and worshipping God all over again. Again, it screamed, rolled out of the room, and again, I began to thank God all the more for the victory. It came back, one final time, about 45 minutes later. It looked like the cat that had been through the sawmill and somehow lived to tell about it. I simply looked it straight in the eye and said, "*I have all authority over you in the power of Jesus' Name. Leave me and never return!*" Without another word, it turned and was gone. That was 30 years ago. Since that time, I have never wanted or needed another cigarette. There were no physiological or psychological withdrawal symptoms. He whom the Son sets free is free indeed!

Now does it make sense when Jesus said that He saw Satan "***fall from heaven (the atmosphere) like lightning***"? As the disciples operated in the power of the Holy Spirit, and healed individuals began to praise and worship God, they sent waves of divine energy cascading through this 1st Heaven, our atmosphere. Where those emanations were the strongest, it actually damaged the demons in the vicinity so much that they fell out of the sky onto the ground, the most humiliating thing that can happen to a demon not trapped in the underworld.

Right now, Satan and his unholy legions are trapped in the 1st Heaven, having been forcibly evicted from the 3rd and 2nd Heavens in times past. But was that eviction without violence and resistance? Did the devil simply say, "*Ah, shucks! Do I gotta?*", stick his hands in his pockets and leave the building? No, I rather think not. I rather suspect that all hell broke loose when Lucifer was asked to leave heaven. Revelation 12:4 seems to imply that he successfully enlisted 1/3rd of the heavenly host in his rebellion. It's hard for us to imagine the kind of warfare that goes on at that level. Most of it is mercifully invisible to us. If we could see what is going on in the spirit realm, it would both thrill and frighten us to death. Based on Scripture passages found in Daniel and Revelation, the number of angels still on Heaven's side may well number in the **billions**. Imagine, if you will, what a full-scale war

would look like with, say, **two billion** energy beings on side and **one billion** energy beings on the other side. Try to visualize what would happen if these two warring armies did battle all across the cosmos. In fact, just suppose that the **Big Bang** theory has something to do with that greatest of all conflicts. As the war waged throughout the galaxies, it destroyed some of them, sent other spinning off in all directions, just like a bag of marbles spilled and scattered across the floor, created black holes and shredded the very fabric of the cosmos itself. Finally, that brutal war began to localize in one galaxy, one that we now call the Milky Way. Then, as Lucifer's troops began to give up more and more ground, the territory that they held began to shrink, just like the Nazis in World War II as the Allies drove them out of Europe and back toward Germany. Finally, Lucifer and the Unholy Alliance found themselves pinned down in a single solar system, one with ten planets. The four outermost planets were gas giants and the innermost five were small, rocky planets, four with breathable atmospheres and life. Gradually, they were driven back, closer and closer to the small yellow sun at the center of the cluster, one planetary orbit at a time. One major battle took place near a gas giant which would later come to be known as Uranus. So violent were the forces that swirled around that planet that it knocked it over, causing it to rotating sideways after the cataclysm. When the battle came to Saturn, several of the moons were blown to smithereens, eventually forming rings around the planet. But the greatest battle of all occurred at the first of the water-bearing worlds, the one which we will call Narvona. Just inside the orbit of Jupiter, it was the largest of the inner planets, and possessed, at its peak, roughly 30 billion souls. Lucifer and his fallen angels attempted to make their last stand there. When it became apparent that they could not hold the line against Michael and his troops, Lucifer personally order the destruction of Narvona out of spite. The force of the blow toward the outer parts of the Solar System was absorbed by Narvona's giant neighbor. Her immense gravitational pull simply sucked everything headed outwards into an ever-tightening rotational spiral until they were finally absorbed in her cloud shrouded interior without even a burp. However, the explosion of this largest of all the inner planets wreaked havoc on the rest of the planets closer to the sun. Mars, next in line, had its atmosphere and surface water stripped away almost instantly by the force of the explosion. All life, animal and vegetable, perished in a matter of moments. Earth was somewhat cushioned from the force of the blow, but was tilted out of her straight up and down axis and into an angled axis which would eventually produce the seasons. Her perfect solar year/lunar month synchronization was disrupted, forcing her out of a 360 day year into something slightly longer than that. The moon, which had been in a perfect 30 day rotation around her, now began to slowly drift away from the planet, ever so minutely as time passed. All life on the planet was also completely destroyed, but her atmosphere and water survived. The moon, once a smooth, relatively featureless orb, now was pock-marked with craters created by the innumerable fragments of Narvona headed inward toward the sun. Chunks of rock that Earth's atmosphere had intercepted and burned up found no such resistance from the thin atmosphere around the moon and crashed without interference into its surface. Soon the moon, too, had lost its atmosphere. While Venus' thick soupy atmosphere stopped the fragments that reached there, it did not escape harm. Certain portions of Narvona triggered a chemical reaction in the atmosphere of Venus which turned a once-normal mixture of gases into a chemical version of hell itself. Finally, Mercury, also without an atmosphere, was battered almost beyond recognition, as huge chunks of the once-beautiful planet accelerated to unbelievable speeds as they hurtled toward extinction inside the sun itself. All that was left of Narvona was a scattered ring of asteroids and small planetoids, along with rogue asteroids and chunks of her polar icecap which eventually turned into the comets of today.

With two planets now completely dead and a third severely damaged as a result of Lucifer's relentless evil, God ordered Michael and his forces to press the attack. Additional forces were brought to the fray in a surprise attack originating from outside of the Solar System, coming from "above" the planetary orbits and from the other side of the sun. Trapped on all sides, Lucifer and his troops were finally trapped on the planet Earth, and forbidden to ever leave the boundaries of the atmosphere. A special provisional measure was implemented in which Lucifer would be allowed to report periodically to the 3rd Heaven, but only by himself and under constant military guard. From that point on, with Narvona gone, Mars dead and the Earth in chaos and disarray, or a condition of "**tohu**" and "**bohu**", the Lord decided to make a point to Lucifer about his rebellion. God decided to recreate the planet, re-engineering life on it, and then capping a 6,000 year process with the creation of sentient beings, called "humans", an odd amalgam of spirit and flesh. They would be created in a pristine, innocent condition, with enormous intellect but not maturity. They would be given the ability to be self-aware, and also to have the one additional divine gift that had caused all the problems with the first set of the "sons" of

God, a frightening concept called free will. When those creatures came to maturity and willingly chose God's will over their own, it would be a slap in the face of Lucifer and all the other fallen angels, who had chosen their own will over that of the Father.

Is that how it actually happened? We may not know one way or another for a very long time. But it is fun to speculate just a bit on the "**what if**" of the matter. It would probably make one heck of an exciting Science Fiction movie, given the graphic arts capabilities of modern day "Raptor" computer systems, which take basic art work and convert it into 3-D images so real that they seem to be alive. If a movie producer out there likes the idea, please have the integrity of making me a technical advisor on the movie. I've had some great ideas running through my head for a long time now, just waiting for technology to catch up with my imagination. In fact, keep your eye out for a Science Fiction novel called "Narvona", written by yours truly. It may be in the offing in the not-so-distant future. But first, I gotta finish **this** book...

Now, back to the **blood** in the **7th Seal**. **What if** the comet which strikes the Earth is a remnant of that shattered planet beyond Mars? And **what if** other living beings once occupied it? And **what if**, during the destruction of their world, **their own blood was mingled with their atmosphere as their planet was torn to shreds by forces we can't even begin to imagine?** As the comet began to break up, everything that was frozen would begin to melt and revert to liquid and gas, **and blood would fall from the sky, mixed with hail and fire.**

You see, friends, I've learned not to doubt what God says in His Word. Every time we try to prove the Bible wrong, we only end up confirming its accuracy. Archaeologists have done more to establish the actual, literal accuracy of the Scriptures in the last 200 years than any other group of individuals. Ironically, many of them were "Hell-bent" on **disproving** the Word of God. As they dug deeper and deeper, cities which they said never existed came to light for the first time in thousands of years. Tribes and peoples that critics said were only a myth suddenly were found mentioned in ancient cuneiform tablets. If the **past events** of the Bible are **literally true**, and the **present promises** like healing, deliverance, and salvation are also **literally true**, then there is no reason to doubt that the **future predictions** of the Bible will be any less **literally true, just as God and His Servants have spoken them!**

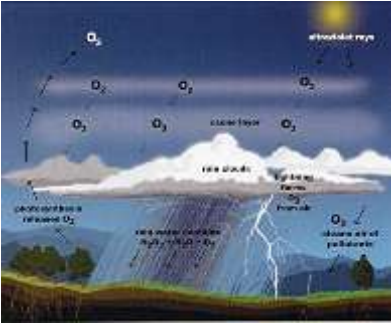
Friends, Jesus Christ is the same **yesterday, today and forever**. **His Word, just like Him, is faithful and true!** Please take these marvelous testimonies and share them with others. There are friends, relatives and co-workers out there who desperately **want and need a reason to believe**. That's what signs and wonders are all about. **God gives you a sign. It makes you wonder. You begin to ask questions, and run right into Jesus!**

As John writes in his own Gospel, "***And truly Jesus did many other signs in the presence of His disciples, which are not written in this book; but these are written that you might believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God, and that believing you may have life in His name.***"

-- John 20:30-31

So much for the first part of the first Trumpet. Tomorrow, we will look at the equally disastrous results of what a global **Oxygen Shortage** would do to the planet. Until then, may God richly bless you as you walk in faith and obedience to Him!

Day 7 – Oxygen Shortage!



“7 The first angel sounded: And hail and fire followed, mingled with blood, and they were thrown to the earth. And a third of the trees were burned up, and all green grass was burned up.” – Revelation 8:7

Trumpet # 1 of the **7th Seal** has been sounded, and the planet has been hammered with what appear to be the shattered remnants of a comet. A third of all the trees on our planet have been destroyed, thus **drastically reducing the amount of oxygen available for all animal life**. For those of you who have forgotten your biology lessons from high school, here’s how the plant / animal relationship on Earth works: **plants**, using chlorophyll (which is what makes them green), absorb carbon dioxide from the atmosphere, mix it with sunlight through photosynthesis, add in a dash of trace elements and minerals, and produce **oxygen**, which is vital for all **animal life on earth**. **Animals**, on the other hand, breathe in the oxygen, using it to convert the plants and other animals they have eaten into energy, which allows them to function. As a byproduct of their metabolism, they produce **carbon dioxide**, which is in turn absorbed by the plants, which start the process all over again. It’s a remarkable system, and clearly points out the delicate co-dependence which all living things on this planet have with each other. It is also just one more stirring testimony to the absolute impossibility of randomly developed evolution. According to supercomputers located at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology (MIT), using an “evolutionary” model, starting with a single-celled creature (and, by the way, where the heck did **it** come from, anyway?), and generating **one evolutionary change every single second**, there still wouldn’t have been enough time for that single-celled creature to “evolve” into man in **ten billion years!** Just for the record, according to science’s finest “experts”, the earth has only been in existence for a **maximum of five billion years** (so they say!), and life is supposed to have suddenly, mysteriously appeared out of the “primordial soup” about **two and a half billion years ago!** Frankly, it takes more “faith” to believe in that nonsense, which is **mathematically impossible**, than it does to believe in an **intelligent creator-designer** who established the phenomenally complex life forms on this globe in a relatively short period of time. For the record, that time span was probably about **6,000 man-years**. Where do we get that number? Simple! II Peter 3:8 says that “*with the Lord one day is as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day*”. If you study the Genesis account carefully, you will find that up until the flood, God was keeping track of time based on Heaven’s time clock, not man’s. Not until God decides to reset man’s life span to 120 years (Genesis 6:3) does He decide to switch over to man-time.

Because we do not understand the enormous destructive power of such events, let me refer you to an event that occurred early in the 1900’s in a remote portion of Siberia called **Tunguska**. Drawing again from the wonderful online encyclopedia *Wikipedia*, let’s learn a little about the region and the event itself. The Tunguska event was a massive explosion that occurred near the Podkamennaya (Under Rock) Tunguska River in what is now Krasnoyarsk Krai of Russia, at 7:40 AM on June 30, 1908. The explosion was most likely caused by the air burst of a large meteoroid or comet fragment at an altitude of 3–6 miles above Earth’s surface. Different studies yielded varying estimates for the meteor’s size, varying from 60 meters all the way up to 1200 meters in diameter. The energy of the blast was estimated to be between 10 and 20 megatons — **1,000 times** more powerful than the bomb dropped on Hiroshima. The explosion felled an estimated **80 million** trees over 830 square miles. Please notice that this was probably only a **fragment** of a comet. Imagine the destructive power of a direct hit by a full comet! To give this event some flesh beyond the statistics, let’s take a look at the experiences of some of the individuals who actually witnessed the event itself.

At around 7:15 a.m., Tungus natives and Russian settlers in the hills northwest of Lake Baikal observed a column of bluish light, nearly as bright as the sun, moving across the sky. About 10 minutes later, there was a flash and a loud "knocking" sound similar to artillery fire that went in short bursts spaced increasingly wider apart. Eyewitnesses closer to the explosion reported the sound source moving during each barrage, east to north. The sounds were accompanied by a shock wave that knocked people off their feet and broke windows hundreds of miles away. The majority of eyewitnesses reported only the sounds and the tremors, and not the sighting of the explosion. Listen now to some of the eyewitness accounts:

Testimony of S. Semenov, as recorded by Leonid Kulik's expedition in 1930:

"At breakfast time I was sitting by the house at Vanavara trading post (40 miles south of the explosion), facing north. [...] I suddenly saw that directly to the North, over Onkoul's Tunguska road, the sky split in two and fire appeared high and wide over the forest. The split in the sky grew larger, and the entire Northern side was covered with fire. At that moment I became so hot that I couldn't bear it, as if my shirt was on fire; from the northern side, where the fire was, came strong heat. I wanted to tear off my shirt and throw it down, but then the sky shut closed, and a strong thump sounded, and I was thrown a few yards. I lost my senses for a moment, but then my wife ran out and led me to the house. After that such noise came, as if rocks were falling or cannons were firing, the earth shook, and when I was on the ground, I pressed my head down, fearing rocks would smash it. When the sky opened up, hot wind raced between the houses, like from cannons, which left traces in the ground like pathways, and it damaged some crops. Later we saw that many windows were shattered, and in the barn a part of the iron lock snapped."

Testimony of Chuchan of Shanyagir tribe, as recorded by I.M.Suslov in 1926:

"We had a hut by the river with my brother Chekaren. We were sleeping. Suddenly we both woke up at the same time. Somebody shoved us. We heard whistling and felt strong wind. Chekaren said, 'Can you hear all those birds flying overhead?' We were both in the hut, couldn't see what was going on outside. Suddenly, I got shoved again, this time so hard I fell into the fire. I got scared. Chekaren got scared too. We started crying out for father, mother, brother, but no one answered. There was noise beyond the hut; we could hear trees falling down. Me and Chekaren got out of our sleeping bags and wanted to run out, but then the thunder struck. This was the first thunder. The Earth began to move and rock; wind hit our hut and knocked it over. My body was pushed down by sticks, but my head was in the clear. Then I saw a wonder: trees were falling, the branches were on fire, it became mighty bright, how can I say this, as if there was a second sun, my eyes were hurting, I even closed them. It was like what the Russians call lightning. And immediately there was a loud thunderclap. This was the second thunder. The morning was sunny, there were no clouds, our Sun was shining brightly as usual, and suddenly there came a second one! Me and Chekaren had some difficulty getting out from under the remains of our hut. Then we saw that above, but in a different place, there was another flash, and loud thunder came. This was the third thunder strike. Wind came again, knocked us off our feet, struck against the fallen trees. We looked at the fallen trees, watched the tree tops get snapped off, watched the fires. Suddenly Chekaren yelled 'Look up' and pointed with his hand. I looked there and saw another flash, and it made another thunder. But the noise was less than before. This was the fourth strike, like normal thunder. Now I remember well there was also one more thunder strike, but it was small, and somewhere far away, where the Sun goes to sleep."

Pretty frightening, huh? Based on the second account, it appears that it almost had to have been a comet, fractured into at least **five pieces** by the enormous heat of the entry into our atmosphere. It's a small miracle that this native and his brother even survived the strike. It's also **very** clear that the detonation of the five pieces occurred **in the atmosphere**, high above the steppes of Siberia. What if it had been a meteorite, hard and strong enough to penetrate through the atmosphere and strike the actual surface of the planet? Now let's take those actual eye-witness accounts, and extrapolate what it means for the future of planet Earth in this 1st Trumpet.

Because of the comet strike(s), scattered across the face of the planet because of the explosion of the "dirty snowball" as it entered the Earth's atmosphere, 1/3 of all the trees have been burned up, as well

as **100% of all the green grass!** The first of these two consequences will have a **long-term** disastrous effect on all land-based animal life on the planet, but the second of the two consequences will have **immediate, disastrous secondary effects globally!** Earlier in this E-Pistle, we talked about the global interdependence between **plants and animals.** Now we need to discuss the relationship between **herbivores, carnivores and omnivores.**

Herbivores, or plant-eaters, depend on the grass, bushes and trees of this world and the seeds which they produce for sustenance. Cattle, sheep, oxen, goats, chickens, turkeys, horses and almost 100% of all domesticated animals **used to produce food, either directly or indirectly,** are **herbivores.** **Carnivores,** on the other hand, are typically referred to as **meat-eaters.** Animals in this category include lions, tigers, snakes, reptiles in general, wolves, polar bears, some birds, some insects and a variety of other creatures. **Omnivores** are creatures which like the ecological buffet line, a little of this and a little of that. Many animals are omnivores for obvious reasons. The more things you can eat to survive, the more likely your survival is. The higher up in the food chain a creature is, the more precarious their perch there seems to be. The law of supply and demand is clearly laid down. **There can be no carnivores without herbivores.** Globally, very few carnivores or omnivores eat other carnivores or omnivores, except in those cases where we are dealing with carrion or dead meat. Let me illustrate using the ultimate omnivore on this planet, man himself. If you sit down to a wonderful steak, salad and baked potato at your local restaurant, what exactly is it that you are consuming? First of all, you are eating a dead herbivore known as a cow. There aren't too many grizzly bear, wolf or lion steak restaurants around. Carnivores are by nature far more aggressive and difficult to trap and kill. Eating the baked potato makes you an herbivore because you are eating an underground root of a plant. The salad also tends to categorize you as an herbivore, unless you have doctored it up with cheese, the product of an herbivore, eggs, which classify you as a carnivore since you are eating cooked embryonic chickens, and a few ham strips thrown in for good measure. One of the classic examples of this was on Saturday Night Live many years ago when Dan Aykroyd and Jane Curtin invented the roles of Beldar and Prymaat Conehead. Their descriptions of the foods we eat were both hilarious and disgusting at the same time.

All things considered, the standard food chain is that **omnivores and carnivores eat herbivores** which in turn eat **plants.** Without a shadow of a doubt, the primary plant that herbivores eat is, of course, **green grass.** With 100% of all green grass gone, and 1/3 of all trees gone, **the food supply across the world for all grazing animals is instantly taken away!** This will automatically produce starvation and death for a staggering percentage of the herbivores of the world. With the herbivores dying off at an alarming rate, the **carnivores, or meat-eaters,** will also start to starve to death because their food supply is dead or dying. With that thought in mind, quickly flip back in your Bible to Revelation 6:8, where John relates that "...*power was given to them over a fourth of the earth, to kill with sword, with hunger, with death, and by the beasts of the earth*". For years, I never understood the **beasts of the earth** portion of that Scripture. Sure, **sword, hunger and death** all made sense, but what was the deal with the **beasts?** Now, in the light of the **1st Trumpet of the 7th Seal,** it all makes perfect sense. Consider what happens during times of plague or famine with only a limited scope and duration. **Herbivores,** unable to find and digest enough plant food, begin to die off. **Carnivores,** threatened by a rapidly dwindling food supply, are forced to expand their territories, seeking food. Eventually that territorial expansion will cross paths with humanity, and isolated individuals become **prey and food** to ravenous packs of predators. Now, extrapolate that pattern **on a global scale, with every herbivore dieing off and every predator (wolves, bears, lions, tigers, etc) in constant search of new prey.** Ask yourself this horrifying question: **which creature on this planet is greatest in number, found on every continent, and has no naturally-occurring means of defending itself (claws, scales, fangs, speed, etc.)?** The answer to this question is obvious, and not something which you nor I would care to consider for very long. No matter how we try to frame the question, the answer always comes up the same – **mankind becomes the meal of choice for every carnivore and omnivore predator on the face of the earth!** Lest we think that this is some event due to transpire far in our future, let me share with you parts of an article that originally appeared in the Boston *Globe* and was reprinted in the Louisville *Courier-Journal* on February 18, 2002. Some of you may have scoffed at me when I told you that the destruction of all green grass would create a cascade effect that would turn the predatory animals of the planet against mankind. Listen carefully to what the article says:

"It was no accidental encounter. The **cougar** that killed Frances **Frost stalked her with cunning and stealth**. The big cat concealed itself behind a juniper bush by a popular Canadian cross-country ski trail in Banff, Alberta, then – after Frost whooshed by – bounded in silent pursuit of the 30-year-old outdoorswoman, zigzagging for 144 feet before making the final pounce. Frost was probably **unaware of the cougar's presence** until the instant the 132-pound feline sprang onto her back and **snapped her spine, much as it would that of an unlucky elk calf**. The deadly contact occurred last January, and the most shocking aspect was **that none of the conventional wisdom about wild animal attacks applied** – the cougar was not sick, not cornered, not defending cubs. **Just hunting.**"

"...clashes between humans and the continent's most fearsome predators – cougars, bears, wolves and alligators – **are rising sharply**. The last decade saw more wild animal attacks on humans than ever recorded. The figures tracked by wildlife biologists show that of 142 documented deaths by bear or cougar attack during the last 100 years, for example, nearly half took place in the last decade alone...Wildlife specialists say the overriding reason for the rise in clashes between people and predators is the fast-escalating human intrusion into wild country...Frost was the first human killed by a cougar in Alberta's history. But the attack was also a sign of the times – **a warning for the entire continent.**"

"In Canada's Labrador region, schools in Nain had to be closed for three days last fall as **wild wolves roved through the town, attacking dogs and menacing humans**. Unlike cougars and bears, wolves almost never harm people. But packs have become an unnerving presence in parts of the Canadian west, roaming over the Banff Springs golf course and trotting into town for the occasional snack. 'They will look for simple things like dog food, bird suet, or garbage', says wildlife biologist Paquet. 'But dogs and cats can also become wolf food. They will snap up Fido or Fluffy'."

It doesn't require much vision to see what would happen to these increasingly bold predator attacks if their food supply were to vanish, literally overnight. With all green grass burned up, only thirty days would have to pass before starvation of plant-eating animals would be massive. Wild animals no longer have the fear of mankind that they once did. Driven by hunger, all distinction between a baby elk and a human skier would completely vanish for all predators, not just one overly aggressive cougar. But lest you think that I am overreacting to this, let's let the "experts" speak on the matter.

"'People who think they love wildlife have somehow got it in their heads that wild creatures reciprocate the emotion', said British Columbia warden-naturalist Janet Lundren. 'One very simple reason we're seeing more grizzly attacks on humans is that humans in unprecedented numbers are wandering into dangerous bear country in search of wilderness adventure. A very few will get a deadly lesson in the definition of 'large carnivore'. **Griz don't care how much you gave to Greenpeace**', she said."

Some final closing thoughts on **omnivores**, that is, **creatures that eat any and every thing, plant or animal**: Clearly, mankind is an **omnivore**, as are most of the higher forms of life on this planet. It ensures a higher rate of survival. But, according to the Bible, mankind was not originally omnivorous. Instead, we began our sojourn on this sphere as **herbivores**. In Genesis 1:29, God told Adam, "See, I have given you **every herb that yields seed which is on the face of all the earth, and every tree whose fruit yields seed; to you it shall be for food**". Interesting enough, prior to the Flood and the devastation of the firmament above, **all creatures on the Earth were herbivores**. Listen to Genesis 1:30 – "Also, **to every beast of the earth, to every bird of the air, and to everything that creeps on the earth, in which there is life, I have given every green herb for food...**" According to Genesis, **carnivorous and omnivorous conduct did not begin until after the Flood!**

Listen carefully to what God tells Noah **after** the Flood waters have receded and they are once again on dry ground. – "**Every moving thing that lives shall be food for you. I have given you all things, even as the green herbs**" (Genesis 9:3). In so doing, God pronounced mankind **omnivorous, not by design but by necessity!** What had happened to cause this change in God's order? In Genesis 7:11, it says that "...the windows of heaven were opened". Where did all this water from above come from? The destruction and melting of a massive, frozen water barrier, which had surrounded the Earth and shielded it from lethal radiation from the Sun! This is why when Noah said that water was going to

fall from the sky, his peers laughed him to scorn. Why, everyone knew that the Earth was watered from **underneath!** (Genesis 2:5-6). And when God set His bow (rain-bow) in the clouds, it must have been an awe-inspiring sight, since, without **rain and rain clouds, there are no rainbows!** It was the **very first time** that a rainbow had ever been seen on planet Earth!!!

With that protective barrier gone, ultraviolet radiation began pouring in onto the surface of the planet for the first time. It began to destroy the cellular structure, integrity and longevity of all the creatures there, and shortened mankind's lifespan in just a few short generations from 900+ years to 120 years, just as God had said! Creature sizes and life spans began immediate to decrease. No longer would animals grow constantly throughout their entire lives, nor would creatures like the dinosaurs ever grow to their super-massive pre-Flood sizes. And, with cellular damage common to both plant and animal life, **plants alone** would no longer be sufficient to nourish the more active species on the planet, **including mankind!**

Now, in this 1st Trumpet of the 7th Seal, we once again find plant life to be inadequate to feed the animals of this planet, but this time they turn on mankind as food, just as mankind had turned on them for food after the Flood!

Having dealt with the logical consequences of the destruction of all the green grass, we will now direct our attention to the other, long-term devastating action, **the burning of 1/3 of all the trees globally.** Remember earlier that we established the primary difference between a meteorite strike and a comet strike as the fact that the comet would explode in the atmosphere and spread out over a large area, whereas a meteorite would produce a much more massive but much more localized point of impact. Depending on the size of the comet, the angle with which it approaches the earth's atmosphere and the direction from which it approaches the continents, it would not be difficult at all to imagine that a series of horrific explosions such as the two Siberian brothers experienced could be cascaded across a huge percentage of the land mass of our planet. I frequently watch the Science Channel, gathering information that lends itself to these discussions. Although I have to frequently disagree with their theories of origin, I find that I have learned much that actually supports the doctrines of the Bible. We share the same facts as the evolutionists but we have different interpretation of those facts, interpretations for which I make absolutely no apologies. After having spent many years researching these matters, I know for a fact that although their facts are correct, their interpretations are simply a best-guess effort. That's why they are called **theories**, not **laws**. And I have been around long enough to know that about every 20 years or so, our scientists have to completely scrap their theories and come up with brand new ones. Why? Because new facts come to light that completely invalidate the old theories. Just remember, we **knew** that the earth was flat, didn't we? We also **knew** that the earth was the center of the universe and we also **knew** that the sun revolved around the earth. Our scientific community would be quick to disparage these ancient scientists as ignorant and unlearned, but they were as smart as we are, and had less technology to rely on. The embarrassing truth for scientists and archeologists alike is that each new discovery tends to support and reinforce the non-technical but correct explanations of the Bible, while forcing them to reinvent their own "doctrines", time and time again.

While I was watching a Science Channel program on comets (see, I don't just make up stuff, guys!), a leading expert on the subject was illustrating the significance of the angle of entry when a comet hits the earth. First, he took a rock and dropped it straight into the water. There was, of course, a big "plop" as the stone hit the water and a large but localized displacement of that water occurred. Then he took another stone about the same size and skipped it across the pond. Where the first stone only hit the "atmosphere" at one place because it was a direct hit, this second stone hit the "atmosphere" many times before it finally sank. The same would hold true for a comet as it approached the earth's atmosphere. Some comets actually come in at such a shallow angle that they literally "skip" across the earth's atmosphere and continue on back into space without disintegrating. But if the angle of incidence is just a little sharper, as it was at Tunguska, the comet would "skip" across the atmosphere multiple times before it finally completely disintegrated. Each time the comet skipped, part of it would be broken off, there would be a massive, multi-kiloton explosion, and a huge portion of the surface below it would be almost instantly incinerated. The reason that we know the angle of the Tunguska comet is because scientists went in after the fact and studied the pattern of tree destruction very

carefully. Then they went back to the lab and began experimenting with sizes and angles of incidence to see what combination would produce the result they actually had at hand. A Russian scientist was the first to actually figure out what had happened, and he was able to recreate in miniature in his lab what had actually happened in Siberia. If the angle of incidence is just right and the skipping effect occurs over a large contiguous land mass, the devastation would be enormous. There is absolutely no reason to doubt that 1/3 of all the trees in the world would be burned up. In fact, the damage could cross several continents. A comet could hit at such an angle that America and Canada would be the first to feel the impact, then Europe, Russia and the Far East. In fact, if you examine how a stone skips across water, you will notice that the first skip distance is always the longest. Each successive skip is slightly shorter until the stone makes several rapid-fire, short skips and eventually disappears in the water. The first impact would be in Canada, with a long skip to a point somewhere over the Atlantic. The next skip point would be in Europe, and then a series of rapidly decreasing skips across Europe, ending somewhere in Siberia again.

With 1/3rd of all the trees burned up, it would massively disrupt the cycle of oxygen transference across the globe. Both water and oxygen are continuously recycled between the oceans and the atmosphere. In fact, Isaiah Chapter 55 even uses this process to describe how God's Word works:

*"⁸ For My thoughts are not your thoughts, nor are your ways My ways," says the LORD. ⁹ For as the heavens are higher than the earth, so are My ways higher than your ways, and My thoughts than your thoughts. ¹⁰ For **as the rain comes down**, and the snow from heaven, and do not return there, but **water the earth**, and make it bring forth and bud, that it may give seed to the sower and bread to the eater, ¹¹ So shall My word be that goes forth from My mouth; it shall not return to Me void, but it shall accomplish what I please, and it shall prosper in the thing for which I sent it."* – Isaiah 55:8-11

God sends the rain for the specific purpose of watering the earth. Isaiah doesn't mention the rest of the cycle, but Solomon does:

*"⁶ The wind goes toward the south, and turns around to the north; the wind whirls about continually, and comes again on its circuit. ⁷ **All the rivers run into the sea, yet the sea is not full; to the place from which the rivers come, there they return again.**"* – Ecclesiastes 1:6-7

When we combine the two Scriptures, we find the complete cycle. Moisture comes down from the heavens in the form of rain. That rain is absorbed partially into the plants and partially runs off. That runoff then gathers into streams and rivers, which eventually run into the oceans. From there, the moisture is gathered back into the atmosphere through evaporation and the process begins all over again.

So it is with the parallel cycle of oxygen and carbon dioxide. Plants, especially trees, need CO₂ for the photosynthesis process by which they generate their own "food". At the same time, they give off the lion's share of the oxygen in our atmosphere. Animals, in turn, breathe the oxygen and exhale the carbon dioxide that the plants need. It, like the water cycle, is a very delicate, carefully balanced equation. Any significant disruption would cause chaos. Imagine what would happen to our atmosphere if 1/3rd of all the trees burned up in a matter of just a few hours! Particularly at higher altitudes like Denver, individuals with breathing problems will be in grave danger. Many people will die or be hospitalized if there was a sudden decrease of 33% in the oxygen in our atmosphere. While the burning of all the green grass would be devastating to the herbivores, the depletion of our atmosphere by 33% of its oxygen would cause animals of all kinds, including many, many humans to die in rapid succession.

All of this would be devastating in and of itself, but it is only the 1st Trumpet in the 7th Seal. Six more trumpets remain to be blown, each one more devastating than the one before it. Tomorrow, we will examine the 2nd Trumpet in **Mountain from the Sky**. Until then, breathe deeply of the love of God, dear saints, and bask in His Spirit!

Day 8- Mountain from the Sky



“⁸ Then the second angel sounded: And something like a great mountain burning with fire was thrown into the sea, and a third of the sea became blood. ⁹ And a third of the living creatures in the sea died, and a third of the ships were destroyed.” — Revelation 8:8-9

The shattered remnants of a comet have struck the earth, destroying 1/3 of all the trees and 100% of all the green grass. With 33% of the oxygen-generating power of the planet removed in one violent stroke, oxygen depletion is already beginning to set in at the upper levels of our atmosphere. Plant-eating animals, suddenly deprived of their source of food, are dying at an alarming rate, and carnivores, also deprived of their source of nourishment, have turned on the already battered human survivors. But the end is not yet, and matters will only get worse, not better, until the **Wrath Of God** is fully satisfied. When will that happen? When we reach the **7th Bowl of the 7th Trumpet of the 7th Seal**. Are we there yet? Hardly, for we have only completed the **1st Trumpet**, and **six more Trumpets remain**.

Now comes the **2nd Trumpet**, and another Earth-shattering blow:

*"Then the **second angel** sounded: And **something like a great mountain burning with fire** was thrown into the sea, and **a third of the sea became blood**. And **a third of the living creatures in the sea died, and a third of the ships were destroyed.**"* -- Revelation 8:8-9

Now, let's talk about what this great mountain burning with fire is. For years, I have taught that this **2nd Trumpet judgment** is an **asteroid** or **meteorite**. Remember how in Day 7 we discussed the differences between an **asteroid/meteorite** and a **comet**? That may well still be true, since a large iron/nickel asteroid would clearly look like a great mountain burning with fire falling from the sky. Atmospheric resistance would superheat the base of the asteroid, just like a space capsule reentering the atmosphere after a space flight. Flames would surround the mountain/asteroid as the metallic core began to melt and ionize in the intense heat. A direct hit in any of our major oceans would produce a concussion wave that could easily destroy 100% of the life in that particular ocean or sea, and would produce a tsunami or tidal wave hundreds of feet high (anywhere from 200 to 800, to be exact, depending on the size of the asteroid and the angle of impact) moving at hundreds of miles an hour. No ocean vessel would stand a chance under those conditions! As an example, when Mt. St. Helens erupted several years ago, the eruption sent a **pyroclastic flow**, made up of gas, superheated air, ashes, and a hodgepodge of other items, hurtling down the slopes of the mountain. Trees, buildings, cars and unfortunate individuals who happened to be in the path of the flow were swept away in an instant, without warning or recourse. Even Noah's Ark could only withstand a direct strike from a 200-foot tidal wave! No boat ever made by man could withstand the impact of a 700-mile-per-hour wave over 700 feet high!!! If the impact occurred in an area where oceans are generally linked, the ripple effect of destruction could easily destroy 1/3 of the marine life on our planet and sink 1/3 of the ships of the world. How long would the entire event take? Here's the math: the Earth's circumference (the distance around the earth) is slightly more than 24,000 miles. Traveling at 700 miles per hour, the massive tidal wave would take slightly more than **17 hours** to sweep completely around the globe. The reason for **17 hours** vs. **34 hours**? ($24,000 / 700 = 34+$ hours). Simple. The tidal wave would be traveling at 700 miles per hour **in every direction**, originating from the **epicenter of the impact**, so that wave would run into itself on the far side of the planet. In the ocean into which the asteroid fell, destruction would be sudden and massive. **The Atlantic Ocean** is the probable site of the impact, since it covers about **1/3 of the world's water surface** (Hello, skeptics? How could John have

known that???) and over 1/5 of the surface of the earth. In addition, the Atlantic provides about **1/3 of man's yearly catch of fish and shellfish!** (Hello??? Is anybody catching on here??? How could John, writing almost 2,000 years ago, know what the world **fishing catch would be 2,000 years in the future?**) Sinners and scoffers, I want you to tell me again how the Bible is riddled with inaccuracies, myths and fairy tales. **I defy you to prove this marvelous Book wrong!** Find me some ludicrous work of man that claims to be divinely inspired, and see if it can hold a candle to the **Raging Fire of Truth that is the Word Of God!!!** Sorry if I get a little intense from time to time. Can you see why? Fools who say there is no God and mock His Holy Word are storing up a wrath for themselves that is almost beyond description or belief. Meanwhile, back at the Atlantic...

At its widest, counting the Gulf of Mexico, the Atlantic Ocean is about 5,000 miles wide. If, for argument's sake, the asteroid struck **dead center** in the middle of the Atlantic; North America, South America, Europe and Africa would only have a little over **three and one-half hours to evacuate the coastlines of all the affected continents.** Again, the wave would only have to travel 2,500 miles to hit the coastlines of the affected continents. **Clearly, not everyone would get out.** Since the tidal wave would follow rivers that empty into the Atlantic back upstream, damage would rocket deep into the hearts of each of the continents. The Mississippi would be affected. The Rio Grande would be overwhelmed. The Appomattox River, on which Washington, DC sits, would be greatly affected. **Every single major US city on the East Coast would be virtually destroyed!** The Amazon would be massively affected. England, Ireland and Scotland would suffer unthinkable damage, as would France, Spain, the Scandinavian countries, and all the nations along the West Coast of Africa. The Dykes of Holland would be overwhelmed, and the lowlands nations of Europe (Holland and Belgium) would be totally flooded!

All of that considered, it still leaves what John says about 1/3 of the oceans being **turned into blood.** What's that all about? There are several possibilities to consider. I'm not even sure if I have considered them all, since the **actual** possibilities far exceed the **conceivable** possibilities. Here are just a few of the things that might cause this phenomena.

- (1) The release of some deadly meteorite-bourn micro-organism into the Atlantic Ocean. This is not beyond the realm of the possible. Michael Crichton's novel *Andromeda Strain* deals with that very possibility.
- (2) The release of some ancient micro-organism buried but still alive in the sediment beds deep under the sea. The concussion of the impact of the meteorite would rupture the seabed, releasing these life forms that have not been on this planet since perhaps the flood.
- (3) Some sort of element or compound contained in the meteorite itself, polluting and spreading throughout the entire ocean. This possibility I deem the least likely, since the amount of contaminant would have to be massive in order to turn an entire ocean red.

That is just the tip of the iceberg. Speaking of icebergs, yet a 4th possibility would be the release of some ancient organism locked in the Arctic ice for millennia. The impact of the meteorite cause a breakup of the ice packs, and off we go! As you can see, there is no end to the actual, logical reasons for an entire ocean to turn red like blood.

Folks, I don't have to make this up. All I have to do is take the Word Of God as literally true, and then **just see where His Truth leads us.** The **logical results** are always more amazing, bone-chilling and startling that anything that the imagination of man could ever make up. **Our Lord is leaving even the unbelieving world, those folks who mock the Word of God, a vivid witness.** Consider in just the last few years how many movies Hollywood has produced, all dwelling on what happens when some large object from outer space hits our planet. Unfortunately, unbeliever Bruce Willis and his team of losers will not be able to save the planet. **Only Jesus, returning in the clouds for His people, can cut short the time of Jacob's Trouble, and so spare the remnants of battered, shattered humanity from certain destruction!**

All of this would be amazing enough if the damage were only caused by an asteroid, but **I am now convinced that an asteroid is not the source of all this destruction.** Instead, the damage is caused by an **actual mountain** from the Earth's surface, ripped from its foundations, and hurled into

the sea. If this is true, then it would be **an exact fulfillment of Biblical prophecy**. What am I referring to? Listen carefully to the words of Jesus in Matthew, Chapter 17:

"²⁰ *So Jesus said to them, 'Because of your unbelief; for assuredly, I say to you, if you have faith as a mustard seed, **you will say to this mountain, 'Move from here to there', and it will move; and nothing will be impossible for you.**'* -- Matthew 17:20

What mountain was Jesus referring to? Here's the background: Beginning in Matthew 17:1, Jesus had taken Peter, James and John, His three most trusted disciples, up on a high mountain by themselves. While on the top of that mountain, Jesus was **transfigured** while they watched. His "*face shone like the sun, and His clothes became as white as the light*" (Matthew 17:2). While He was in this condition, Moses and Elijah also appeared and talked with him. This clearly places Jesus' ministry on at least a par with that of Moses and Elijah, the two greatest prophetic figures in Israel's history. Although Moses and Elijah were there in spirit form, having passed through physical death, Jesus was still in possession of a mortal, pre-resurrection body. During that experience, his physical body was supercharged with as much Divine energy as any human can absorb without dying. Remember in Exodus how God had to protect Moses from lethal exposure to His Glory by hiding him in the cleft of the rock? Even so, after Moses' two 40-day fasts on Mount Sinai, his own face shone like the sun, and he had to wear a veil over his face because the people were afraid of him. He came down from Sinai "maxed out" with God's power. Since Jesus was not only a prophet of God, but also the **sinless, only begotten Son of God**, His body could absorb an even greater dose of radiant energy without blowing out. But even so, there was still a limit as to how much power Jesus' earthly body could absorb. At that moment in time, Jesus was "maxed out" with the power of God. Malachi, the final prophetic voice to Israel before the "400 years of silence" which separate the Old Testament from the New Testament, had indirectly prophesied the meeting between the three. In the final chapter of Malachi's prophecy, he mentions **all three men of God**, one after the other.

"² *But to you who fear My name, the **Sun of Righteousness shall arise with healing in His wings** (a clear reference to Jesus and His remarkable healing ministry) ;...⁴ **Remember the Law of Moses, My servant, which I commanded him in Horeb for all Israel...**⁵ *Behold, I will send you **Elijah the prophet** before the coming of the great and dreadful day of the Lord,*⁶ *and he will turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the hearts of the children to their fathers lest I come and strike the earth with a curse*" -- Malachi 4:2a,4a,5-6*

It was precisely on the **Mount Of Transfiguration** that God the Father, who would also speak to the disciples from within a cloud on the mountain, establishes once and for all who His three greatest men of all time are -- **Jesus, Moses and Elijah**. There are some remarkable facts surrounding Elijah and John the Baptist, but this article is not the time to go into those matters. Today, we are concerned with the mountain upon which all three men stood.

So, back to the original question...**what mountain is the Mount of Transfiguration?** Like every other historical fact not specifically stated in the Scriptures, there is some discussion and disagreement on the actual site, but most Biblical historians agree that **Mount Tabor** was the actual scene of the Transfiguration. Where is Mount Tabor, and what is its background? Mount Tabor is located at the northeast corner of the **Valley of Jezreel**. The very top of the mountain is a flat plateau area, approximately 3,250 feet by 1,300 feet. From there, the mountain slope drops down very steeply. It was the site of a great battle found in Judges, Chapter 4, when **Deborah the prophetess** and **Barak the general** assembled the troops of Israel on top of the mountain to rush down on their enemies. Ironically, **Nazareth**, where Jesus grew up, is only **six miles away from Mount Tabor**, and the mountain would have been the most dominant landmark in the area to a young boy growing up in that region. Did Jesus climb the mountain as a young lad? We do not know. But we do know **that He climbed it as a man, and came back down as a one-man army of righteousness, power and anointing!**

Now, back to the mountain itself...

Jesus, like most of us in the ministry, found it necessary to repeat certain basic messages and principles again and again throughout His ministry. Why? Because He was preaching, teaching and healing to a different crowd each time He ministered. Just because He had made the statement about faith and uprooting mountains once didn't mean that He was done with the topic and would never bring it up again. I constantly marvel at so-called Bible "experts" who attempt to tear down the Word of God by trying to point out certain "discrepancies" in the Scriptures. "For example", they say, "consider the Sermon on the Mount. One Gospel account places it on a mountainside, while another places it on a plain. How can both descriptions of the same event be true? This proves conclusively that the Gospels cannot be trusted, and they are inaccurate and filled with myths and legends". To which I reply, "Let me ask **you** a question. **Have you ever said the same thing twice? To two different crowds? Even twice to your own family or friends?**" Even these hypocrites find themselves repeating themselves to each new audience, and often repeatedly to the same audience. Studies on human learning show that we only "get" about 20% of what is being said in any given conversation or classroom situation. Even if the teacher were to repeat the same thing over 5 times, it still wouldn't guarantee that the students would totally understand it, since there is no way to ensure that they would get a **different 20%** each time it was taught. Even Jesus, the greatest teacher in the history of the world, found himself having to repeat himself over and over again to His very own disciples, simply **because they didn't get it the first time!**

With that in mind, we turn to the other place in the Gospels where Jesus brought up this same topic of mountains being hurled into the sea – Mark 11:1-23.

"¹ Now what they drew near Jerusalem, to Bethpage and Bethany, **at the Mount of Olives**, he send two of His disciples..." -- Mark 11:1

What followed next was the Triumphal Entry that we celebrate on Palm Sunday. Jesus was received with great adulation by the crowds, which made the Scribes, Priests and Pharisees even more outraged than they already were. Near the end of that day, Jesus decided to take a tour of the Temple. What He saw there angered Him almost beyond measure. By the time they had returned to Bethany and the Mount of Olives, He was steaming mad. He obviously didn't "get over it" that night, because the next morning, on the way back to Jerusalem, He and the disciples encountered a lowly fig tree that didn't have any fruit on it. Even though it wasn't the season for figs (so the tree was innocent in the matter), Jesus **curse**d it, saying, "Let no one eat fruit from you ever again" (Mark 11:14). This has puzzled Bible scholars for centuries, and I have heard a whole raft of lame reasons and excuses for His actions, **none of which really made any sense**. Why did Jesus curse an innocent fig tree? Read on in the Gospel account and take careful note of what happened next: "Then Jesus went into the temple and began to drive out those who bought and sold in the temple, and overturned the tables of the money changers and the seats of those who sold doves. And He would not allow anyone to carry wares through the temple. Then He taught, saying to them, 'Is it not written, '**My house shall be called a house of prayer for all nations?**' **But you have made it a 'den of thieves'** ' " (Mark 11:15-17). Please note the following things about what He said. He called it **His House**. He said that **His House** was supposed to be a **house of prayer**, but that these people had turned it into a **den of thieves**. **NOW PUT YOURSELF IN HIS PLACE**. What if you had been gone from home for a very long time? What if you had instructed that a wonderful house be built for you? What if you had left it in the hands of individuals that you thought you could trust? And what if, when you returned from a long journey, **you found out that the very people you had left in charge had completely trashed your house, and turned it into a center for ORGANIZED CRIME AND ALL MANNER OF CORRUPTION???** Would you be outraged? Would you "bust the place up"? Would you get a whip and drive those losers **out of your house, chase them out of town, and turn them over to the police? YOU BET!!!** So, what did Jesus do? Given that He was and still is the perfect, sinless, only-begotten Son of the Living God, He had **even more right** to be outraged about what He had discovered. But remember, He had observed all of these things **the day before**. He had stewed about it on the way back to Bethany. It had probably bothered Him all night. When he left the Mount of Olives the next morning, **He was itching for a fight. AND IT WAS PRECISELY AT THIS POINT THAT HE SHOWED HIS INCREDIBLE MERCY FOR THOSE EVIL, GREEDY, UNDERSERVING PEOPLE WHO WERE TRASHING HIS HOUSE! By all rights, they deserved to be under a curse! As God Incarnate, He had both the right and the power to place a curse on them! If He had**

continued on to Jerusalem in the frame of mind He was in, the curse He leveled on the fig tree would have fallen on the moneychangers in the temple, damning them to eternal torment!!! And although the fig tree was an innocent bystander in this whole event, it nonetheless **did not possess an immortal soul, which could be condemned to eternal destruction!** So Jesus, in His great mercy and love, **discharged His just wrath and judgment on a living, but non-eternal life form, rather than pouring His wrath out on those who truly deserved it.** It would be a foreshadowing of what He would later do Himself as the sinless Lamb of God to **take on Himself the sins of the world**, even though He did not deserve any of them. So don't be upset about what Jesus did to the fig tree, my friends. Just consider what He allowed to be placed on Him based on our sin and iniquity, and praise His Holy Name that He was willing to discharge most of His anger on something that couldn't inherit eternity. If not for the shed blood of Jesus, The Father wouldn't just overturn us and give us a whipping. His justice and judgment would **call for our death and destruction! Praise Him for His abundant mercy!**

After turning the town upside down, He and His disciples once again returned to the Mount of Olives for the night. Jerusalem was not a safe place for the Son of God to stay. The Jews had been plotting to kill Him for quite some time, and assassins could easily lurk the streets of the city. Not so in Bethany, where Jesus was a local hero, courtesy of the resurrection of Lazarus. The following morning, they once again began the journey back to Jerusalem. On the way, they passed the fig tree that Jesus had cursed only the previous day. Peter noticed that the tree had dried up from the roots and commented on it. Jesus answered him and said, *"Have faith in God. For assuredly, I say to you, **whoever says to this mountain** (Quickly, **which mountain in this case? The Mount Of Olives, where they had been staying the previous few nights**), **'Be removed and be cast into the sea,'** and does not doubt in his heart, but believes that those things he says will be done, he will have whatever he says"* (Mark 11:22-23)

Notice how different the tone is in Jesus' voice this particular morning, as opposed to the previous morning? **Righteous wrath has been satisfied, and He is no longer angry.** Now He is once again able to teach, minister and encourage his followers. What a turn of events! Even so, He has once again introduced the concept of a mountain being torn loose from its moorings on this planet and hurled through the atmosphere to land violently hundreds or even thousands of miles away, in accordance with Revelation 8:8. How do we know that it will **Mount Tabor** that will be uprooted, rather than the **Mount Of Olives**? Ah, dear listeners, **that is a tale for another day!** In our next E-Pistle, we will discuss the incredible plans already laid out in prophecy for the **Mount of Olives**. Those plans are for **good**, and not for **evil**, and for **protection** and not for **destruction!**

Until then, may your heart be pure before Him, and may your works follow you into His Kingdom!

Day 9 – Splitting Mountains in Two



“⁴⁹ Behold, I send the Promise of My Father upon you; but tarry in the city of Jerusalem until you are endued with power from on high’. ⁵⁰ And He led them out as far as Bethany, and He lifted up His hands and blessed them. ⁵¹ Now it came to pass, while He blessed them, that He was parted from them and carried up into heaven.” – Luke 24:49-51

In our last E-Pistle, we examined the remarkable events surrounding Mt. Tabor, the Mount of Transfiguration. Based on what the Lord has shown us, the events in Revelation 8:8 will be literally fulfilled when some “crazy” believer, probably Jewish, will walk up to the mountain and command it to uproot itself and be cast into the sea, just as Jesus said in Matthew 17. But that isn’t the only amazing thing that the Bible promises will happen to a mountain in Israel. The Lord has specifically promised that **The Mount Of Olives** will be the scene of the most remarkable **return engagement** in the history of the world. To understand what we are referring to, we must travel back in time to the **very last thing Jesus ever said before He left this planet**. Where is that passage found? Some believers think that His final statement is found in Matthew 28, where He issues the Great Commission. Other Christians, notably Pentecostals, tend to lean toward Mark 16, with its emphasis on speaking in unknown tongues and signs and wonders. John clearly does not quote the final words of Christ, instead choosing to concentrate on His re-commissioning of Peter and His reference to John himself. Ironically, the **one person to capture Jesus’ last words on Earth was NOT an apostle!** Instead, he was the traveling companion of the apostle Paul, **the beloved physician Luke**. Astonished? I was when I realized the facts of the matter. Remember how I have said that it is almost impossible to “speed read” through The Revelation Of Jesus Christ? As you study on and meditate on the Word of God, it opens itself up to you in a way that you could not have possibly imagined. As I have been prayerfully developing this series, there has not been **one single E-Pistle** where God has not shown me something fresh and new that I never knew before! Writing this series of messages has been as exciting for me as any of you who are learning all of this for the very first time. Let’s look at Luke’s writings to follow the actual chain of events. Remember that he authored two books, his Gospel of Luke, and the Acts of the Apostles. We will pick up the narrative at the end of the Gospel of Luke:

“⁴⁶ Then He said to them, ‘Thus it is written, and thus it was necessary for the Christ to suffer and to rise from the dead the third day, ⁴⁷ and that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in His name to all nations, beginning at Jerusalem. ⁴⁸ And you are witnesses of these things. ⁴⁹ Behold, I send the Promise of My Father upon you; but tarry in the city of Jerusalem until you are endued with power from on high’. ⁵⁰ **And He led them out as far as Bethany, and He lifted up His hands and blessed them.** ⁵¹ Now it came to pass, while He blessed them, **that He was parted from them and carried up into heaven.**” -- Luke 24:46-51

Notice the location of His Ascension. It was **near Bethany**, only about two miles outside of Jerusalem, on the east side of the city. To get even more detail on the event, we can simply turn forward in our Bibles to Acts, Chapter 1. In the first chapter, Luke recounts the events of his Gospel, only with additional details added in which he failed to mention in the previous book. Take the time to read Acts 1:1-8. This remarkable passage gives us the key to let us know **how long the disciples were in the upper room praying until the Holy Spirit fell on Pentecost**. It also gives us a critical key to **the timing of Christ’s return**, and the difference between His ministries as **Son of Man** versus **Son of God**. And it also provides **the very last words spoken by Jesus prior to His Ascension!** We pick up the narrative in Acts 1:7.

"⁷ And He said to them, 'It is not for you to know times or seasons which the Father has put in His own authority. ⁸ **But you shall receive power when the Holy Spirit has come upon you; and you shall be witnesses to Me in Jerusalem, and in all Judea and Samaria, and to the end of the earth.**' Now when He had spoken these things, **while they watched, He was taken up, and a cloud received Him out of their sight.**" -- Acts 1:7-8

Remarkable, isn't it? The very last thing Jesus said to His own was that **they would receive power** and that **they would be witnesses**. There's a whole sermon or three just sitting there begging to be preached, but this is not the place or time for it. Let's move forward quickly to Acts 1:12, where Luke will clearly identify the **place where Jesus' feet last touched the Earth**.

"¹² Then they returned to Jerusalem, **from the mount called Olivet, which is near Jerusalem, a Sabbath's day journey.**" -- Acts 1:12

In our last E-Pistle, we illustrated how important the **Mount of Olives** is to the entire Gospel story. Jesus stayed there, in or near Bethany, while He conducted His ministry in Jerusalem. It provided both relative safety and privacy away from the crowds. After the Last Supper, He and the disciples would leave the Upper Room and travel to the Mount of Olives, to a garden located on the mountain called **Gethsemane**. (Matthew 26:30-36) There, the most important **surrender** and **victory** in the history of the universe would be accomplished when He willingly relinquished His own will to that of the Father, thus ensuring His absolute obedience and sinlessness, and the devil's ultimate defeat. How appropriate that He would choose that same mountain to depart Earth from! But that is not the end of the matter. He had deliberately chosen the Mount of Olives **because of prophecy!** It's hard to imagine the sense of destiny that Jesus possessed. Everything He did, every word He spoke, every place He went was deliberately chosen because of **prophecy in the Old Testament regarding the Messiah**. Even when He had no control over the matter, as in the Crucifixion, He was still fulfilling prophecies found in Isaiah 55, Psalm 22, and many other Scriptures. His sense of Divine Mission was overwhelming. Why did He choose the Mount of Olives to leave Earth from? **Because prophecy already stated that the very same mountain would be the place to which He would ultimately return!** Let's return to the Book of Acts for just a second.

"¹¹ And while they looked steadfastly toward heaven as He went up, behold, two men stood by them in white apparel, who also said, 'Men of Galilee, why do you stand gazing up into heaven? This same Jesus, who was taken up from you into heaven, **will so come in like manner as you saw Him go into heaven**'". -- Acts 1:11

Jesus **left** in clouds. He will **return** in clouds. And when He returns, He will **return in the same way and in the same place!** "Wait a minute, Pastor Ray", you say, "It doesn't say that He will return to **the same place, just the same way!**" Agreed! If you only examine that particular Scripture, you will never see **the rest of the story**. But remember, **Scripture interprets Scripture**. For almost every single verse in the Bible, there are a veritable cascade of multiple verses elsewhere in Scripture that explain, clarify and lock in the meaning of that particular verse. Turn with us now to Zechariah, Chapter 14 and read with us as we find out **the rest of the story**. In Chapter 14, Zechariah prophesies about the **Day of the Lord**. Listen now, as he speaks under the anointing of the Holy Spirit:

"¹ Behold the **day of the Lord is coming**, and your spoil will be divided in your midst. ² For I will **gather all the nations to battle against Jerusalem; the city shall be taken, the houses rifled, and the women ravished. Half of the city shall go into captivity, but the remnant of the people shall not be cut off from the city.** ³ **Then the Lord (Jesus!) will go forth and fight against those nations, as He fights in the day of battle.** ⁴ **And in that day His feet will stand on the Mount of Olives, which faces Jerusalem on the east. And the Mount of Olives shall be split in two, from east to west, making a very large valley; half of the mountain shall move toward the north and half of it toward the south**" -- Zechariah 14:1-4

What is this all about? When Jesus returns to judge and reign on the Earth in Revelation 19:11-16, His feet **will land on the exact same spot on the Mount of Olives where they last touched planet Earth!** When He touches down on the mountain, a massive earthquake will rock the mountain, splitting it cleanly in half. Half of the mountain will move to the north, while the other half splits off and moves south. This will produce a huge, deep valley running directly up to the eastern gate of the city, and from there safely as an escape corridor out of Jerusalem quite some distance away. Why an escape corridor? Because He is about to strike the enemy armies with a terrible plague from which the devout Jews of Jerusalem are to be spared. Let's continue on with Verse 5.

" ⁵ *Then you shall **flee through My mountain valley**, for the mountain shall reach to Azal. Yes, you shall flee as you fled from the earthquake in the days of Uzziah king of Judah. **Thus the Lord my God will come, and all the saints with You.***" -- Zechariah 14:5

What will the inhabitants of Jerusalem be fleeing from? The answer is found in Verse 12.

" ¹² *And this shall be the plague with which the Lord will strike all the people who fought against Jerusalem: **Their flesh shall dissolve while they stand on their feet, their eyes shall dissolve in their sockets, and their tongues shall dissolve in their mouths***" – Zechariah 14:12

At the end of World War II, then-president Harry Truman had a horrible decision to make. Should he order the invasion of Japan by American forces, a feat never accomplished before in history by any other nation, including giant China? If he did, it was a certainty that the Japanese would defend their island to the death of the last man, woman and child. The nation, knowing it was already beaten, was in the process of making preparations for a national and ethnic *hare Kari*, or ritual suicide. Americans had already been astonished by the *kamikaze* pilots who deliberately flew their planes into battleships and aircraft carriers, ensuring the certain death of the pilot. Millions of lives, both American and Japanese, would be lost in a direct invasion. But Truman had one ace up his sleeve – **the atom bomb**. So the unenviable decision he had before him was not **if** people would die, but **how many, how quickly** and **how needlessly**. It was the **worst** – and the **best** – decision ever made in the history of war. Untold millions of Japanese and American lives were spared. The horrors of Hiroshima and Nagasaki so traumatized the Japanese psyche that Japan did something it had never done in its history – it surrendered to another country. Yet, in the awful explosions that lit up the sky above both cities, **men's flesh dissolved while they stood on their feet, their eyes dissolved out of their sockets, and their tongues dissolved in their mouths** because of the terrible radiation blasts. The world was shocked and sickened. Yet it was the only way to mercifully end the war, because a conventional invasion would have taken at **least ten times the number of lives lost in both bomb blasts**. I know that this is controversial, but any student of history will tell you that war is not a pretty thing, and, once released, the hounds of hell always find their prey. In those two terrible days, over 92,000 people died in Hiroshima, and another 40,000 died in Nagasaki, **yet it was far less than the Japanese would have lost in a conventional land invasion**.

The awful art of nuclear war has progressed far beyond those terrible days of August 6 and August 9, 1945. In the 1970's, mankind developed the neutron bomb, capable of killing millions of individuals without damaging buildings or other structures. Where are we now? Only God and a few select scientists know for sure. But if current nuclear technologies were exploded in the vicinity of Jerusalem, God's people would be utterly destroyed **unless Jesus Himself provided a way of escape and protection. And that, my friends, is precisely what He intends to do, using the Mount of Olives as the greatest and most effective fallout shelter in the history of the world!!!**

I know that this is a grim topic, and it troubles me just as it must trouble you. No Godly person wants to see anyone perish. Yet, for those nations and armies that have aligned themselves with the anti-Christ, there is no recourse or hope. They have chosen this path of their own free will, and the consequences of free will and rebellion must always be allowed to come full circle. Only this, then, **rejoice that God knows how to protect and spare those who call on His Holy Name, no matter what the circumstances!**

I urge you and exhort you to stay steadfast in prayer, keeping your lives free from spot or blemish, so that you may be found ready when He comes again to take away His Bride. Do not let the world turn your attention aside, for great is the risk and the peril for those who ignore Him, and great is the reward for those who know Him and live in and through Him!

Until next time, may the God of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob watch over you and protect you and your families!

Day 10 – Bitter Waters



“¹⁰Then the third angel sounded: And a great star fell from heaven, burning like a torch, and it fell on a third of the rivers and on the springs of water. ¹¹The name of the star is Wormwood. A third of the waters became wormwood, and many men died from the water, because it was made bitter.”

– Revelation 8:10-11

If you have been following the chain of events, you know by now that we are in the **7th Seal**, also known as the **Wrath of God**. The Church has already been removed at the end of the **6th Seal**, as outlined in Revelation 7:9, 13-14. Within the **7th Seal**, there are **7 Trumpets**, and we are entering the **3rd** of those 7 Trumpets. Either a small comet or pieces of a comet have already struck the Earth in the **1st Trumpet**, and tremendous damage was done to the planet. A meteorite then crashes into what is probably the Atlantic Ocean in the **2nd Trumpet**. Far more is to come. Now, yet **another** interplanetary body hits the Earth, with deadly consequences. The reason we say that this **3rd Trumpet** is a comet is fairly obvious to anyone with some background in astronomy (not astrology, please!). A few articles ago, we discussed the differences between a **comet** and a **meteorite or asteroid**. Remember that we said that comets are “dirty snowballs”, composed of frozen water, gas and many small-to-medium size rocks, all packed together. Also remember that a comet always has a “tail” when it comes into the Solar System and nears the Sun. Sometimes that tail **trails** the comet as it approaches the Sun. On its trip back out of the Solar System, that same “tail” will **precede** it, leading the way. Why is that so? Because the **Solar Wind**, which always “blows” from the Sun outwards, melts, evaporates and pushes the gaseous tail **away from the Sun**. The fact that this “great star” is *burning like a torch* clearly identifies it as having a gaseous tail. When you look at a conventional torch, you always have a burning center, with a trailing tail of fire coming up from the body of the flame itself. So it is with a comet. There have actually been occasions in the history of our planet when the angle of approach of the comet, coupled with the Earth’s positioning and the Sun’s location, made the comet seem to stand on end in the middle of the sky, with the core of the comet at the bottom, and its trailing tail standing straight up above it. In a case like that, the comet would indeed look exactly like a **burning torch**.

A comet strike, in and of itself, would be devastating. History has already established that fact clearly. But this particular comet contains some nasty things inside of it. When the comet strikes the upper atmosphere, exploding and scattering itself across the face of the globe, it causes **a third of the rivers and the springs of water to become “Wormwood”**. To understand what John is saying requires a little research into either a dictionary or an encyclopedia. Quoting from **Today’s Dictionary of the Bible**, it states that “Wormwood is noted for its **intense bitterness** (Deuteronomy 29:18; Proverbs 5:4; Jeremiah 9:15; Amos 5:7)...The name by which the Greeks designated it, **absinthion**, means **undrinkable**”. Deuteronomy 29:18 says, in part, “...and that there may not be among you a root **bearing bitterness or wormwood**...”. What does **bitterness** or **wormwood** do? **It poisons those who drink of it, causing them to become ill or die**. In Exodus 15, we find a story of what happened when the children of Israel encountered springs of bitter water:

“²³ Now when they came to Marah (which means **bitterness** in Hebrew), they could not drink the waters of Marah, for **they were bitter**. Therefore the name of it was called Marah. ²⁴ And the people complained against Moses, saying ‘What shall we drink?’ ²⁵ So he cried out to the Lord, and **the Lord showed him a tree**. When he cast it into the waters, **the waters were made sweet**. There He made a statute and an ordinance for them, and there He tested them...” – Exodus 15:23-25

It's not uncommon to find springs or pools of poisonous water in desert regions. What makes them poisonous? **High levels of alkaline content or trace minerals.** The human body uses and needs minute amounts of virtually every mineral and element found in nature, but **when those elements or minerals occur in excessive quantities, they become poisonous and often deadly.** Everyone has seen a picture at one time or another of some little pond in the desert, with a "Warning!" sign and the bleached bones of some poor horse or cow that made the mistake of drinking the water. What if enormously high levels of some trace element like cadmium, gallium or arsenic were scattered across the water sources of the world? Those waters would become **wormwood, or deadly poisonous.**

Actually, there's a fascinating historical note that can be inserted at this point that serves to illustrate just how deadly common, everyday things can be if ingested in excessive quantities over a period of time. The Roman emperors, by and large, made a personal pastime of persecuting the Christians, throwing them to the lions, wrapping them in oil cloths and setting them on fire, skinning them alive, and performing all manner of hideous, unspeakable atrocities against the saints of that day. The Roman emperors, by and large, were also crazy as loons. The madness of some emperors, such as Caligula, was legendary. For over a thousand years, historians have wondered why the Romans behaved in such an erratic, psychotic manner. Finally, autopsies were performed on several of the remains of the emperors, and the researchers made an amazing discovery – the bones of most of the rulers famous for their madness were massively saturated with **lead, hundreds of times the allowable limit.** These massive amounts of lead in their systems produced **lead poisoning, which eventually leads to madness as the lead poisoned their brains.** This posed a difficult question: **How in the world did so much lead find it's way into their bodies?** Further research revealed the culprit: **the Romans held frequent orgies, at which huge amounts of wine were consumed.** Guess what poisonous-in-large-quantities metal those wine flagons were made of? That's right! **They were made of LEAD!!!** If the Romans had not been drinking wine, or even ingesting **moderate** amounts of wine, the trace element content would have been low enough to not be significantly harmful. **But when they drank to excess, they also ingested enough lead to poison them, drive them mad, and eventually kill them!**

Now imagine a comet, saturated with trace minerals or elements which, when consumed in limited quantities, are perfectly harmless, and often necessary, but which, when **dumped into the rivers and streams of the world in massive quantities, turn one third of the potable (drinkable) waters of the world into a source of deadly poison for many, and madness for others!**

There's one more thought that needs to be shared in this E-Pistle. You know that I tend to avoid "spiritualizing" texts because there has been so much abuse from the pulpits of Christianity in this area, but given some things that have happened to us and our ministry team over the last few years, what I'm about to say bears saying, repeating, and listening to (particularly by me!). When adversity comes your way, people turn on you, lie about you, betray you, say all manner of things against you falsely, even though you know **in theory** that you should rejoice and be exceeding glad, sometimes you want to strike back, get even or **get bitter** about the treatment you are receiving. But bitterness is a deadly thing. It poisons you and eventually kills you spiritually, just like those trace minerals kill you physically. Truthfully, it can also kill you physically. Here's a true story from my own past: My own mother hated my father, for reasons that I will never understand. Dad was a Godly, decent man, active in church, scouts, little league, and many other good, wholesome activities. Later on, at the age of 52, God would speak audibly to my father three times at Laros Printing and call him into the ministry. He would spend over 20 years effectively serving God in the pastorate. But my mother had mental and emotional problems. She had lost a child to stillbirth before I was born. At the same time she had been pregnant with that child, another woman who lived up the road was also pregnant. She was unmarried, and had her child out of wedlock. Her child lived. Mom's baby died. From that point on, a **root of bitterness** began to grow in mom's heart. It eventually poisoned her mind, heart and emotions toward life in general and my father in specific. She made life a living hell for him during the whole time they were married. Eventually, my father couldn't take the abuse any longer, and a divorce followed, terminating a 40-year marriage. Mom, left to her own devices, drifted further and further into madness. Finally, she announced that she was pregnant, and was going to give birth to the next Messiah. Dr. Billy Graham would perform the wedding, she exclaimed. Indeed, she did look pregnant.

Finally, we talked her into going to the doctor. She was "pregnant" all right, **with a nine-pound malignant tumor in her womb, right where that lost baby would have been!** Her root of bitterness actually killed her. A spiritual condition eventually erupted into a physical condition. Did she make heaven? I truly hope so. Did she cut her life short by embracing a bitterness that Scripture said she must let go of? Without a doubt.

The world, by continuing to embrace sin and rebellion, will eventually harvest a **root of bitterness** in the form of an exploding, mineral-rich comet. Believers can also do the same if they are not careful. Hebrews Chapter 12 says:

*"¹⁴ Pursue peace with all people, and holiness, without which no one will see the Lord: ¹⁵ looking carefully lest anyone fall short of the grace of God; **lest any root of bitterness springing up cause trouble, and by this many become defiled...**" – Hebrews 12:14-15*

In the last few weeks, I have been struggling with bitterness over incredible lies that have been told by ungodly, immoral people about me. At the same time that the ministry has been marked by almost constant signs, wonders and miracles, evil men and women have conspired against me to slander me and everything I stand for in this ministry. For the last few days I have been bitter about this matter. But as I write this E-Pistle, I finally have to admit that my being angry with them doesn't hurt them, only me. So I publicly repent, not for doing anything wrong, as they have accused me of, but rather of holding onto something which can only harm me and never hurt them. I'll close with the Words of Jesus, found in Matthew Chapter 5:

*"¹¹ **Blessed are you when they revile and persecute you, and say all kinds of evil against you falsely for My sake.** ¹² **Rejoice and be exceedingly glad, for great is your reward in heaven, for so they persecuted the prophets who were before you"** – Matthew 5:11-12*

So, fellow E-Postles, I take this time to publicly rejoice and be exceedingly glad! My (and your) reward is great in heaven, and we are in good company to be together in the work of the Kingdom, preaching, teaching, healing and prophesying the deep things of God into the lives of His people!

Until next time, may God richly bless each and every one of you!

Day 11 ~ Smoke Gets in Your Eyes



“¹² Then the fourth angel sounded: And a third of the sun was struck, a third of the moon, and a third of the stars, so that a third of them were darkened. A third of the day did not shine, and likewise the night.¹³ And I looked, and I heard an angel flying through the midst of heaven, saying with a loud voice, ‘Woe, woe, woe to the inhabitants of the earth, because of the remaining blasts of the trumpet of the three angels who are about to sound!’ ” – Revelation 8:12-13

When you first look at a picture, all you get is a general impression. There is simply too much information to take in at one glance, and so your mind concentrates on the overall picture. Later on, if you go back to study that same picture further, you will begin to notice details that you had not seen before; ridges of paint, subtle overlays of color, gentle feathering of brush strokes, all of which had eluded you during your initial assessment of the painting. So it is with The Revelation of Jesus Christ. At first, the details are so overwhelming that your brain recoils at all of them and tries to draw back and just take in the overall picture. It isn't until much later, as you analyze the book line by line and precept by precept, that certain details begin to emerge that you would never have noticed before. Actually, that's true of everything in life, but particularly of the Word of God, because God has carefully and cleverly hidden wonderful and mysterious things woven into the tapestry of His Word. These fascinating details don't reveal themselves to the casual viewer, only to those who meditate deeply on the things of God.

We are currently walking through the **7 Trumpets** of the **7th Seal**. In an earlier *E-Pistle*, I mentioned that as you go into Revelation the more complex and the more detailed each of the checkpoints become. Actually, this pattern of cascading complexity occurs **twice** in this marvelous book. Let me take you back to Chapter Six for just a second, at the point where we begin to open the Seals of the Scroll. It's hard to imagine that it has taken a book and a half to get from that point to this, and yet I didn't tell you everything that I knew, just what I considered essential to your survival. John said in his Gospel, regarding Jesus, that if all the things were written down that He did, there wouldn't be enough books in the world to contain them. Perhaps that is also true of this series. I am just grateful that He has shown me so much, and given me the privilege of showing it to you. As it is, we have gone from page 1745 in my Bible to page 1748 during this period of time. Only three pages and it has taken 1½ books to do it!

I said that there were two duplicating patterns, and there are. When we open the Scroll, the first **four Seals** open and pass rather quickly. Here's the outline:

- (1) 1st Seal – Revelation 6:1-2
- (2) 2nd Seal – Revelation 6:3-4
- (3) 3rd Seal – Revelation 6:5-6
- (4) 4th Seal – Revelation 6:7-8

So far it's been bang, bang, bang, right down the line, two verses per Seal. You start thinking to yourself, "*Man, I'll be through the book in 15 minutes at this rate, and I don't even read well!*" Ah, beware, dear Pilgrim! The footing is going to get a little trickier in just a second. When we hit the 5th Seal, things start to get a little more complex:

- (5) 5th Seal – Revelation 6:9-11

Wal, shucks, Pastor Ray! We only added an extra verse! What's so big about that? Nothing, **yet**. It's just a little hint of what is about to happen next.

(6) 6th Seal – Revelation 6:12 - 7:17

Wow! I see what you mean, Pastor. How many verses did it take to cover that Seal, again? **Twenty-four verses**. Compared to **three** in the previous Seal and only **two** in the first four. And if you think that is bad, take a look at what happens next:

(7) 7th Seal – Revelation 8:1 – 18:24

Omigosh! This thing has absolutely gone out of control! How many verses did that final seal take, Pastor? Hmm... Good question. Let me count for just a second... one... fifteen, one hundred twenty-three... add seven... subtract three... divide by 9... no, no, that's not right... ummm... ah! **190 verses!** Now, that's cool! But I've got even cooler things than that to show you. Some time ago, I told you that the entire Scroll goes **eight layers deep**, didn't I? Now the number eight shows up again, this time, **twice**. First of all, the 6th Seal is **8 times more detailed** than the 5th Seal. How do I arrive at that number? By simply dividing 24 by 3. And it gets better than that. If you divide 190 by 24, you get **7.9**, or if you prefer to round off as I do, you get **8 again!**

So what have we just found out? Well...

- (1) The entire Scroll is a gigantic outline going **8 levels deep**.
- (2) The 6th Seal is **8 times larger** than the 5th Seal.
- (3) The 7th Seal is **8 times larger** than the 6th Seal.
- (4) The number 8 is considered to represent **eternal, infinite perfection**.

The number **six** has always been considered to be **man's number**. That's why the number of the name of the Beast, also known as the Anti-Christ, is **666**. The number **seven** has always been considered to be **God's number**. That's why, even when unbelievers shoot craps or play cards, **seven** is always a "**lucky**" number. It isn't lucky, it's divine! And finally, **eight** has always represented **eternity, infinity and perfection**. That's why the scientific symbol for infinity just happens to be a **sideways eight that looks like this: ∞**. When all of this is taken together, what is God telling us in these amazing, hidden mathematical relationships? **That His Word is perfect, just as He is!** Yea! Hooray! Go, God! Gimme a "G"! No, no, wait. I've got to calm down. Sorry about that. I just get so excited when He once again pulls a supernatural rabbit out of His celestial hat and lays down the trump card in the face of rebellious mankind and His former servant, Lucifer. I rather suspect, even as deep as this work is, that the **actual** interleaved complexity of Revelation is probably 100 times what I am aware of. I am fully convinced that the longer I study this marvelous Book of His, the more of this Mystery I will uncover. To quote that great animated philosopher, Shreck, "*It's like an onion! When you peel one layer off, you find another!*" Oh well, so much for moving from the sublime to the ridiculous!

Now, remember that I said that this pattern occurs **twice**. Not only does the complexity increase by eight fold **twice** in relationship to the **Seals**, but that geometric complexity increase also occurs **twice inside the 7th Seal, in the Trumpets**.

Let's return to Chapter 8 and analyze the structure of the Trumpets:

- (1) 1st Trumpet – Revelation 8:7
- (2) 2nd Trumpet – Revelation 8:8-9
- (3) 3rd Trumpet – Revelation 8:10-11
- (4) 4th Trumpet – Revelation 8:12-13

So, the pattern of the Trumpets parallels exactly the pattern of the Seals. Mathematical precision taken to the Nth degree. Now we move to the 5th Trumpet:

(5) 5th Trumpet – Revelation 9:1-12

And we're off to the races again! Notice how the 5th Trumpet suddenly increases in size, just as the 5th Seal did? Let's see where this little red string leads us from here:

(6) 6th Trumpet – Revelation 9:13 – 11:14

Can you feel the supernatural acceleration? God has the pedal to the metal, and He ain't slowing down for nobody!

(7) 7th Trumpet – Revelation 11:15 – 18:24

Now that we have the structure, let's look at the numbers. In moving from the 4th Trumpet to the 5th Trumpet, we move from **2** verses to **12** verses. In moving from the 5th Trumpet to the 6th Trumpet, we move from **12** verses to **34** verses. And in moving from the 6th Trumpet to the 7th Trumpet we move from **34** verses to **131** verses. It would have been totally cool if each of those progressions would have been in multiples of eight, but, sadly, that didn't happen within the 7th Seal. However, the principle of dramatic, geometric increases of complexity **did** occur. Within the Seals, the complexity of each Seal remains the same until the 5th Seal, and then increases dramatically. Within the Trumpets, the complexity of each Trumpet remains the same until the 5th Trumpet and then increase dramatically. The complexity of the 7th Seal far outstrips the complexity of the previous six Seals. The complexity of the 7th Trumpet far outstrips the complexity of the previous six Trumpets.

Now, the cynic in the midst of you might say, "*Yeah. Right. Sure. Don't you know that when they wrote this thing, they figured out what they were going to do before they started out and then mapped all the verses and Seals and stuff out accordingly.*" You know what? That's a nice argument. And it might even be persuasive for someone who doesn't know the Word of God, but there's a nasty little flaw in your reasoning. It seems that the verses in the New Testament weren't added until the Middle Ages, by a dedicated little monk who decided he needed a way to quickly refer to particular passages. Whoops! Gotcha! The probability of that monk synchronizing his chapters and verses exactly with the Seals and Trumpets of Revelation is pretty slim indeed, and so small that it does not bear considering at all.

Having said all that, we come once again in the timeline to a global blackout, this time in the **3rd Trumpet** of the **7th Seal**. If you will remember, we had one of these once before, in the **6th Seal** as a result of all the volcanic soot and ash thrown up into the atmosphere as a result of the first **global** earthquake since the days of the Flood. That happened back in Revelation 6:12-14. By the way, since I first wrote that *E-Pistle*, I have discovered an interesting fact. In the 6th Seal, the massive, global earthquake triggers a global eruption of all the volcanoes in the world. I knew at that time that there were **300+ active volcanoes** in the world. What I didn't know is that there are over **1,300 total volcanoes** in the world, including the currently dormant super-volcano in North America called **Yellowstone National Park!** What? Didn't know that? Yup! Yellowstone is actually two separate giant **calderas**, the "seal", if you will, over the top of two mega-volcanoes, perhaps the largest known volcanoes in the world. And those volcanoes don't happen to be dead, either. Seismologists have been carefully monitoring Yellowstone ever since they discovered what it really is, and they have found multiple instances where ground levels are rising dramatically, sometimes several inches in a year. What is causing the ground to go up? Boiling hot magma, lava; waiting to erupt catastrophically when the pressure once again becomes too great to contain it underground. It would be bad enough if all 300+ active volcanoes erupted at the same time, but if all 1,300+ erupted at the same time, the pyroclastic flow, soot and ash would block the skies in no time flat.

In this **3rd Trumpet**, the blackout isn't complete, only 33% of the light from the sun, moon and stars is blocked out. Where is the atmospheric debris coming from this time? Well, after being smacked by not one but **two comets** and an **asteroid** or actual mountain torn from the surface of the planet, there is enough soot, junk and ash floating around in the sky to effectively block a good deal of the light. Now, I want you to stop and think for a second. Before you picked up this series of seven books, I bet you had been taught repeatedly from both the pulpits of the churches you have attended and almost all the

TV shows you have ever watched that all this stuff was **symbolic**, right? Isn't it sort of shocking and somewhat disconcerting to realize that this stuff was **literal, logical and chronological**, all along? Isn't it frustrating to realize, after the fact, of course, that if you had been permitted to read the Revelation of Jesus Christ as Christ **meant** it to be read, that it would have made **perfect sense all along**? Now, I know that I have helped some by explaining and decoding the symbols for you. And it also helps that I have given you a series of hermeneutical guidelines and principles to help you in interpreting Scripture. Tell me, **have any of these principles ever let you down or proven to be false**? No? I didn't think so. They've never failed me, and they will never fail you. Why? Because God gave them to me **out of His Word** to help you **understand His Word**. Remember, dear saints of God, **no prophecy of Scripture is of any private interpretation (II Peter 1:20)**. This passage, like so many, has been frequently misused, usually against someone whose doctrines you do not agree with. I remember that many years ago, I was sharing what the Lord had shown me regarding the positioning of the Rapture with a person who was strongly Pre-Trib and they used that passage on me. Actually, I could have used the same Scripture on them, since they based their doctrines on the **opinions of man** rather than the **Word of God**. I could prove, by multiple, in-context references to Scripture, what I believed. Could he? By now you know the answer to that question. How, then, do we interpret Scripture? **By other Scripture!** Repeat this 50 times slowly, and then call me to thank me. **Scripture interprets Scripture**. Good. Now say it again. Now again. Again. Stop throwing things at me! Why am I so insistent on this cardinal principle? Because if you allow Scripture to interpret Scripture, it will be very, very difficult to lead you into false doctrine. Let's allow Peter to complete his previous statement: " ²¹ **...for prophecy never came by the will of man, but holy men of God spoke as they were moved by the Holy Spirit**". Dear friends, **your opinion** of what God's Word says is of absolutely no importance. I know that sounds rude, but it is also true. What matters? **God's opinion** of what **you** say! And how do we know God's opinion? **Through His Word!**

So, here we are in a blackout again, already! Can it **possibly** get worse than this? Oh, yeah! **A whole lot worse!** In fact, it's going to get so much worse that these final three Trumpets have a special name given to them by God. These are not just the 5th, 6th, and 7th Trumpets. They are also **the Three Woes!** These final three Trumpets will be so horrible, particularly the final Trumpet, that **woe** is the only word adequate to describe them. Now that begs the question, "*So, what does **woe** mean in the original Greek, anyway?*" Friend, I'm glad you asked!

The word that we translate **woe** in English is a strange word in Greek. It's one of those words without a single consonant in it! It is spelled **ouai**, and pronounced "**you-eye**". It means **woe or alas**, the second word being a word that some of you might not be familiar with. All through the New Testament, it is used to describe both **grief and denunciation**. Jesus used it to describe the cities of the Decapolis who had seen His miracles yet refused to believe. He used it against the Scribes and the Pharisees. Paul used it to describe what would happen to him if he **didn't** preach the Gospel! John uses it to describe the three final Trumpets and also to describe what finally happens to Babylon. In every case, it implies **certain and absolute destruction and eternal judgment**. It doesn't have a really clear parallel in our language today, but the only equivalents that I can think of that the common man would understand involve saying, with semi-profane or profane language, how totally hopeless their situation is. I hope you can figure it out from there. I ain't gonna say no mo'!

Quite some time ago, I shared with you how the Holy Spirit will be pulled from the Gentile world, making any further repentance or conversion from the Gentiles impossible. As we have moved forward in the seals, we see a rapidly increasing hardness of heart in the Gentile world toward the Gospel, just as it was with Pharaoh's heart during the time of the Exodus. By the time they had reached the 6th Plague, Pharaoh was no longer hardening his own heart, **God was**. In Exodus 7:3, we find God **promising** that he will harden Pharaoh's heart. From that point on, we find the following scenario:

Exodus 7:10-14	Aaron's rod turns into serpent	Pharaoh hardens his own heart
Exodus 7:15-25	1 st Plague - Water turned into blood	Pharaoh hardens his own heart
Exodus 8:1-15	2 nd Plague - Frogs	Pharaoh hardens his own heart
Exodus 8:16-19	3 rd Plague - Lice	Pharaoh hardens his own heart
Exodus 8:20-32	4 th Plague - Flies	Pharaoh hardens his own heart
Exodus 9:1-7	5 th Plague - Egyptian livestock die, not Hebrew	Pharaoh hardens his own heart

Exodus 9:8-12	6 th Plague – Boils on Egyptians	God hardens Pharaoh’s heart
Exodus 9:13-35	7 th Plague – Hail and Fire	Pharaoh hardens his own heart
Exodus 10:1-20	8 th Plague – Locusts	God hardens Pharaoh’s heart
Exodus 10:21-29	9 th Plague – Darkness	God hardens Pharaoh’s heart
Exodus 11:1-12:51	10 th Plague – Death of the Firstborn	-----
Exodus 14:1-31	Crossing of the Red Sea	God hardens Pharaoh’s heart

What a fascinating scenario! And how **absolutely similar in sequence to the Seven Seals!** All through the first five Plagues, there is still a chance for Pharaoh. He is hardening his own heart. God has already said that **He** would harden Pharaoh’s heart, but, even so, He is giving him a chance to repent, providing him with some “wobble room”. Unfortunately for Pharaoh, he just doesn’t get it, ever. In the **6th Plague**, God finally hardens Pharaoh’s heart **for him**. Then, in the 7th Plague, God inexplicably backs off for just a second, giving Pharaoh **one last chance**. But Pharaoh **never** gets it, and from that point on his doom is sealed. When the 10th Plague finally comes, Pharaoh finally **does repent**, momentarily, as he had earlier on several occasions in the process. But at the Red Sea, God closes the door on him once and for all. Pharaoh himself doesn’t die, but his whole army does, as he watches helplessly on from the near shoreline.

Now, compare that sequence with the Seals of Revelation. During the first five Seals, **there is still room for repentance. But in the 6th Seal, at the end of the sequence, just before the Rapture of the Bride, the Holy Spirit is pulled from the Gentile world, making it impossible for them to change their minds and hearts.** God has hardened both Pharaoh’s and the Gentile world’s hearts at **exactly the same point in the sequence!** How amazing! And you thought God didn’t like reruns?

From that point on, the Plagues of Egypt and the Trumpets of the 7th Seal will be **woes**; grief, anger and punishment beyond redemption, beyond escape and beyond repentance. From this point on, the boundaries between the natural and the supernatural will be rent asunder until human/demonic cooperation will be considered normative. The very first manifestation of this new unholy relationship will be the opening of a black hole **inside** of the earth. Join us tomorrow when we encounter the **Locusts from Hell.**

Day 12 ~ Locusts from Hell



“¹ Now it came to pass, when men began to multiply on the face of the earth, and daughters were born to them, ² that the sons of God saw the daughters of men, that they were beautiful; and they took wives for themselves of all whom they chose. ..⁴ There were giants on the earth in those days, and also afterward, when the sons of God came in to the daughters of men and they bore children to them. Those were the mighty men who were of old, men of renown.

~ Revelation 9:1-2,4

Up until now, the plagues and disasters that have struck the planet have been largely explainable in scientific terms. Although the origins of these events are supernatural, the events themselves can be connected to the principle of cause and effect in the natural world. If a believer tried to explain that these events were punishment from God, an unbeliever could counter by saying that it was just “bad luck” that the Earth happened to run into such a series of celestial pummelings. Granted, the sudden and dramatic disappearance of several hundreds of millions of people all across the globe is a hard one to explain, but, other than that, everything else fits right into the skeptical, unbelieving mindset of the rationalistic, scientific, godless world. Why on earth do you think that Hollywood has been bombarding us with one ELE disaster movie after another? From Bruce Willis in *Armageddon* to Dennis Quaid in *The Day After Tomorrow* to Robert Duvall and Tea Leoni in *Deep Impact*, Hollywood has methodically been churning out “*End of the World*” movies since the 1950’s, when we finally unlocked the secret of the atom and instantly wished that we hadn’t. In just the last few years, however, there has been a veritable explosion (pardon the **extremely** bad play on words!) of movies in this genre. We have suffered through a staggering number of films centered around the Anti-Christ, 666, and everything else that our film makers could borrow from the Bible and conveniently twist and distort. As a result, several things have happened, none of them good. First of all, the church, most of whom haven’t opened their Bibles in years, now think that this satanic trash being spewed out from the motion picture industry **actually represents what will happen** at the end of time. Nothing could be further from the truth. Hollywood has always felt that they could act with impunity when altering what the Sacred Scriptures say to fit their plot lines. It drives me slightly wacky to try and explain again and again to people that the *Ten Commandments* with Charlton Heston is not exactly accurate in relation to what actually happened according to the Bible. The second thing that causes me some unease is that the population of America and the world is being slowly programmed to accept the satanic and demonic as natural and normal. We have had cartoon series in which gargoyles, for crying out loud, are actually the good guys! The Bible says, “**Woe unto them that call evil good, and good evil; that put darkness for light, and light for darkness; that put bitter for sweet, and sweet for bitter!**” (Isaiah 5:20) Yet this is exactly what the entertainment industry has been methodically doing to us for quite some time now. In “*Hellboy*”, our hero is a demon (minus his sawed off horns) who battles on the side of right and good. In the new TV series, “*Fallen*”, there are **good** fallen angels and **bad** fallen angels who happen to fight just like Ninjas! The American viewing public eagerly sucks all of this up, half believing every word. Why do you think we have been inundated with TV show after TV show showing homosexual and lesbian lifestyles as good and acceptable? We even have a TV show which allows homosexual men to “help” their dysfunctional “straight” participants. Satan has been poisoning the mind and heart of America for a very long time, hoping to destroy or at least pervert what once made America great. And he has been successful in doing so. What was a disgrace and an abomination only 50 years ago is now considered to be normal and even desirable. Why has there been such a tremendous attack on the boundary between righteousness and iniquity? Because in the final days of this planet, after the Holy Spirit has been taken from the Gentile world, all boundaries between the normal and the paranormal, the natural and the supernatural, will be taken away. How is this possible? What is currently holding this frighteningly powerful demonic intrusion back? The answer is that there is **Someone** hindering the

direct activities of Satan, making him work for each and every inch he gets. Who is that **Someone**? Let's see if we can find out:

"¹ Now, brethren, concerning **the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ and our gathering together to Him**, we ask you, ² not to be soon shaken in mind or troubled, either by spirit or by word or by letter, as if from us, as though the day of Christ had come. ³ Let no one deceive you by any means; for **that Day will not come unless the falling away comes first, and the man of sin is revealed, the son of perdition,** ⁴ who opposes and exalts himself above all that is called God or that is worshiped, so that **he sits as God in the temple of God, showing himself that he is God.**" – II Thessalonians 2:1-4

Now, let's sit down for just a second and do a little sentence structure analysis. I used to hate doing this kind of stuff in school. If I remember correctly, we had to do a lot of it in about 8th grade. The only thing that made it bearable was the fact that our English teacher, Mrs. Miller, was drop-dead beautiful; so pretty, in fact, that even the boys paid attention in class, although I'm not exactly sure our motives were pure. Whatever the cause, I do remember how to do this stuff, and it has paid off handsomely in reading the Word of God and trying to make sense of it. Now, on to the analysis!

- (1) Our topic in this discussion is:
 - (a) **The coming of our Lord Jesus Christ**
 - (b) **Our gathering together to Him**

Apparently, some folks had been circulating around in the churches, teaching that Christ had already come. This, of course, would have been bad news for everyone left behind. Common sense should have told the Thessalonians that since they were **all still there**, there might be some fundamental flaws in the teaching, but I have found that the wackier the teaching, the more quickly people will grab hold of it and believe it. Say something right, Biblical and logical, and people just go, "*Oh, well, that couldn't possibly be correct!*" P.T. Barnum was only partially correct. Yes, a sucker is born every minute. No, the rate inside the church is probably double that! I can still clearly recall the absolute lunacy that the church went through in 1999, when we were about to pass into the new millennium. Untold thousands of sermons were preached about the world coming to an end, airplanes dropping out of the sky, equipment failing worldwide, etc, etc. I was the Systems Administrator for a county in Southeastern Indiana, in charge of all the computer systems in the building. No matter how hard I tried to convince the County Council and the Commissioners that their computer systems were not going to explode at midnight of December 31, 1999, they nonetheless bought into the scare tactics that the vendors were using and purchased over \$60,000 worth of new equipment so that they would be "prepared" for the upcoming crisis. They were more than a little embarrassed when, exactly as I had told them, absolutely nothing at all happened, other than we moved to the year 2000. The church was even more lunatic on the matter. Christians were buying bottled water, dried rice cakes (ever try to **eat** one of those things???) and making preparations to either be raptured or have to go through the Tribulation. Duh! Excuse me, didn't Jesus specifically say that **no man knows the hour or the day**? Now, I want you to think carefully about this for just a second. If Jesus said that **nobody** knows the hour or the day, then **by definition**, wouldn't anyone setting a date for His return **automatically be wrong???** Over 2,000 dates for His return have been set in under 2,000 years since He left. Anybody see anything wrong with that picture? Recently, such dates as 1981, 1992, 1993, 1994, 1997, 1998, 2000 and 2006 have all been loudly trumpeted by their proponents as the year in which Christ would return. Even Godly men get sucked into this trap. I clearly remember a fine man of God named Edgar Whisenant, a scientist who did extensive research on the matter and dutifully published a book in 1988 entitled, "*88 Reasons Why the Rapture Will Be In 1988*". When that didn't happen, as anyone with a brain and able to read should have known, he went back to his calculations and "found" a discrepancy of one year. It doesn't matter that this same "error" has happened again and again, most notably in 1844 with the Millerites. He then published a **second** book which also sold a zillion copies entitled, "*The Final Shout – Rapture Report - 1989*". Chapter One in that book is entitled, "*What Went Wrong in 1988 – And Why?*" In it, he outlines carefully all the reasons for the "miss" in '88, and reassures his readers that 1989 has **got** to be the year when Christ returns. For obvious reasons, there was no book published for 1990. Now, to be fair, I also have to say the following things about the man himself. I have no idea whether Brother Whisenant is still alive today. If he is, I would say the following things to his face. First, you are a man of God and I love you and respect you for your genuine but slightly

misguided attempt to get people ready for Christ's return. Second, I also respect you for your great intellect and all of the rigorous scientific research that you put into these matters. Third, I have no doubt that I will see you in heaven, and, God willing, will bump into you in the Rapture when we finally do go. Fourth, you completely disregarded what Jesus said, and in doing so, set yourself up for a guaranteed fall. Fifth, I, along with Christ Himself, forgive you for that honest mistake. Sixth, I can only hope that your failure didn't cause a lot of Charismatic Christians to fall away because they had bought into your timetable. Seventh, all of us, you and I included, will all stand before the Judgment Seat of Christ to answer for everything we did right or wrong, so I will pray for you and I would greatly appreciate it if you would pray for me.

One of the most rational statements about the return of Christ that I have ever encountered comes, ironically, not from our own century, but from over 300 years ago. Sir Isaac Newton, one of the greatest scientists who ever lived, also had a keen interest in Biblical prophecy and drew his own conclusions about the return of Christ. In a letter written in 1704 he confidently stated that the Bible proved the world could not end before 2060, adding: "*It may end later, but I see no reason for its ending sooner...This I mention not to assert when the time of the end shall be, **but to put a stop to the rash conjectures of fanciful men who are frequently predicting the time of the end, and by doing so bring the sacred prophecies into discredit as often as their predictions fail.***"

Ouch! Thank you, Sir Isaac! Brothers and sisters out there in the prophecy interpretation game, if you don't want to pay attention to me, please pay attention to one of the greatest men this species has ever produced. It would appear that Sir Isaac had to deal with the same kind of nonsense that we deal with today. And although I am not sure about his mathematics for the date, I have to agree with him that it is **highly unlikely** that Christ could return much before then, particularly in reference to the Invasion From Heaven predicted in Revelation Chapter 19.

It is obvious that people have not changed a great deal during the almost 2,000 years that have intervened between Paul's frustrated letter and today. Given their concern, Paul outlined several things that absolutely **had** to happen before Christ came back.

- (2) There had to be a major **falling away of the church**.
- (3) The Man of Sin, a.k.a. the Son of Perdition, the Man of Lawlessness, the Beast, and the Anti-Christ **has to appear**.
- (4) He (the Anti-Christ) has to go into the Temple in Jerusalem and sit there, **demanding that he be worshipped as God** because he really thinks that he is God.

Clearly at that time those three things had not happened. They **still** have not happened. Don't go on with me about how Jesus could return at any moment, and that all the things that the Bible says must happen have already happened. Utter rubbish! This is as ridiculous as preparing for the end of the world in 1999, or buying into the Jewish Feast timetable to predict the return of Christ in 1988. It didn't happen. It ain't gonna happen, either, based on somebody's artificially contrived timetable! Wake up, church! Get a grip!

Paul then goes on to establish some additional requirements for the actual timetable of Christ's return. Here's what he has to say about that:

"⁶ And now you know **what is restraining**, that **he may be revealed in his own time**. ⁷ For the mystery of lawlessness is already at work; **only He who now restrains will do so until He is taken out of the way**. ⁸ And **then the lawless one will be revealed, whom the Lord will consume with the breath of His mouth and destroy with the brightness of His coming**. ⁹ The coming of the lawless one is according to the working of Satan, **with all power, signs, and lying wonders**, ¹⁰ and with **all unrighteous deception** among those who perish, because they did not receive the love of the truth, that they might be saved. ¹¹ And for this reason God will send them **strong delusion**, that they should believe the lie, ¹² that they all may be condemned who did not believe the truth but had **pleasure in unrighteousness**." -- II Thessalonians 2:6-12

Again, we can convert this into a list. When we do so, here's what comes out:

- (1) Something is **restraining** the Anti-Christ, preventing him from being revealed.
- (2) A **Divine male person or entity** is what is restraining the Anti-Christ and will do so until He is **taken out of the way**.
- (3) Once He is taken out of the way, **then and only then** will the Anti-Christ will be revealed.
- (4) When the Anti-Christ appears, he will be able to work **extraordinary supernatural signs and wonders**.
- (5) People will be **totally deceived** by these signs and wonders because, like Pharaoh, God will influence their minds so that they cannot help but be deceived.
- (6) This will happen because they **fell away during the great period of apostasy** and now reject **righteousness, holiness and sanctification**.
- (7) When Christ comes back He will consume him with the **breath of His mouth**.

Let's look at each of these points, one at a time.

In points (1) and (2), Paul clearly identifies the individual as a **He**. Therefore, that individual cannot possibly be the church, who is always referred to as a **She**. Like it or not, fellas, we are not part of the **Groom**, we are part of the **Bride**. The collective consciousness of the raptured part of the church is **distinctly feminine** in nature. Now, that doesn't mean that no men will be included or that the men included have to be effeminate. In fact, as a former college lineman, it bothers me that there are so many wispy Christian men out there. Jesus was no wimp. Anyone who has worked in carpentry can attest to that. You can be strong and masculine and still be gentle with those around you. It seems to elude people that Peter, James and John were more than just a little rowdy. Peter managed to handle a sword skillfully enough (or with enough dumb luck) to cut off the ear of a servant in the Garden of Gethsemane. James and John were known in their earlier days as the **Sons of Thunder**. I'll give you three guesses why two itinerant family fishermen might have earned that title. I could easily see the three of them clearing out the local pub in a Saturday night brawl before Christ truly converted them. Why do you think that Peter said, "*Depart from me, Lord, for I am a **sinful man***" when Jesus performed that little miracle in his boat?

That being the case, the church is excluded as the **restraining agent** who is holding the Anti-Christ back. Now a little common sense is in order. Quickly, tell me: **what is the source of the Anti-Christ's power?** Yes? Very good. **Satan**. Satan is a **spirit**, a **fallen angel**. Could anything human possibly be strong enough to hold back Lucifer himself? Now, other than **the Father** or **Jesus Himself**, who are the other candidates for the office? Yes? I see that hand. And the answer is...**the Holy Spirit!** That is why, when Paul speaks of Him, the translators always **capitalize** the personal pronoun. If we were speaking of a human individual, it would appear as **he**. Only if we are speaking of one of the members of the Godhead do we refer to that individual as **He**. Some expositors have suggested that it is the angel **Michael** who is holding the Anti-Christ back. But there is a problem with their theology. At no point anywhere in the Bible do the translators ever capitalize a personal pronoun associated with an angel, even Michael.

That raises the next question. **When will the Holy Spirit be removed from hindering the Anti-Christ?** We can find that out by locking into some clearly defined moments in time elsewhere in Revelation. Paul also tells us that **after** the Holy Spirit is removed from hindering the Anti-Christ, he will be able to move in extraordinary supernatural power, creating **great signs and wonders**. Paul also says that for that same reason, the people of the world (the Gentile nations) will be **compelled by God to believe a lie**, just as God hardened Pharaoh's heart during the Exodus. Given those two **timeline-specific clues**, it then becomes relatively easy to establish a fairly narrow boundary for the event. These two timeline-specific clues are found **side by side** in Revelation Chapter 13.

" ¹ Then I stood on the sand of the sea. And I saw **a beast rising up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, and on his horns ten crowns, and on his heads a blasphemous name.** ² Now the beast which I saw was like a leopard, his feet were like the feet of a bear, and his mouth like the mouth of a lion. The dragon gave him his power, his throne, and great authority. ³ **And I saw one of his heads as if it had been mortally wounded, and his deadly wound was healed. And all the world marveled and followed the beast.** ⁴ So they **worshiped the dragon who gave authority**

to the beast; and they worshiped the beast, saying, "Who is like the beast? Who is able to make war with him?" ⁵ And he was given a mouth speaking great things and blasphemies, and he was given authority to continue for forty-two months. ⁶ **Then he opened his mouth in blasphemy against God, to blaspheme His name, His tabernacle, and those who dwell in heaven.** ⁷ It was granted to him to make war with the saints and to overcome them. And authority was given him over every tribe, tongue, and nation. ⁸ **All who dwell on the earth will worship him, whose names have not been written in the Book of Life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world."**

– Revelation 13:1-8

So far, so good. We have established a demonically energized individual who will deceive the whole world, and whom the whole world will worship, along with his master, Satan. Now comes the second clue:

" ¹¹ Then I saw **another beast coming up out of the earth**, and he had two horns like a lamb and spoke like a dragon. ¹² And he exercises all the authority of the first beast in his presence, and causes the earth and those who dwell in it to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed. ¹³ **He performs great signs, so that he even makes fire come down from heaven on the earth in the sight of men.** ¹⁴ And he deceives those who dwell on the earth by those signs which he was granted to do in the sight of the beast, telling those who dwell on the earth to make an image to the beast who was wounded by the sword and lived." – Revelation 13:11-14

And there's the second clue, as clearly identified as anyone could possibly ask. That clearly tells us that the removal of the Holy Spirit occurred sometime **before Chapter 13**. Now we have to go to the other end of the timeline to close in on the actual event. If you will remember earlier in this *E-Pistle*, we established through what Paul said that there would have to be a **massive falling away of the church** before the appearing of the Anti-Christ. As we look through Revelation, that event is also clearly marked, this time in **Chapter 6**:

" ⁹ When He opened the **fifth seal**, I saw under the **altar the souls of those who had been slain for the word of God and for the testimony which they held.** ¹⁰ And they cried with a loud voice, saying, 'How long, O Lord, holy and true, until You judge and avenge our blood on those who dwell on the earth?' ¹¹ Then a white robe was given to each of them; and it was said to them that they should rest a little while longer, until both the number of their fellow servants and their brethren, who would be killed as they were, was completed." – Revelation 6:9-11

If this were the only Scripture involved, I would have to admit myself that it is insufficient to clearly mark the **5th Seal** or **Tribulation** as this event referred to by Paul. However, Scripture interprets Scripture, and so a quick trip to Matthew Chapter 24 helps to take care of the loose ends.

" ⁹ Then they will deliver you up to **tribulation** and **kill you**, and you will be **hated by all nations for My name's sake.** ¹⁰ And **then many will be offended**, will **betray one another**, and **will hate one another.** ¹¹ Then **many false prophets will rise up and deceive many.** ¹² And because **lawlessness will abound**, the **love of many will grow cold.** ¹³ But he who endures to the end shall be saved." – Matthew 24:9-13

Well, folks, there's the location of the **Tribulation**, identified as clearly as any event in Scripture. But that's not our objective in this article. What we do find is a period of time where a **great persecution arises against the Church**. Many will be killed for their testimony. And even more, having been told that they would be raptured **prior** to this horrendous period of time, **become offended, betray one another, and hate one another**. As a result of their apostasy, God will send a **strong delusion** on them, and they will then be **easily deceived** and will gladly follow **false prophets** who will deceive them. Now we clearly have both a **starting** and an **ending** point to work from.

We can further mark this point of complete rebellion against God by looking for a place in Revelation where **people will no longer repent from their sins**. Again, identification is swift and sure.

"²⁰ But the rest of mankind, who were not killed by these plagues, **did not repent of the works of their hands, that they should not worship demons, and idols of gold, silver, brass, stone, and wood, which can neither see nor hear nor walk.**²¹ And **they did not repent of their murders or their sorceries or their sexual immorality or their thefts.**" -- Revelation 9:20-21

So, by means of a wonderful little process called **calculatus eliminatus** (to find out where something **is**, you find out where it **isn't**), we have narrowed the search for the removal of the Holy Spirit from the Gentile world down to a point somewhere between Revelation 6:12 and Revelation 9:19. Time to narrow it down a little more. It is a given fact that **unbridled demonic activity** could not possibly occur in the world unless the Holy Spirit had been removed. That narrows the search area even more. Without actually pulling up the Scripture, please look at Revelation 9:1-11. This **just happens** to be the very area we are supposed to be discussing today, but which, as usual, we haven't even been able to touch yet. If the Holy Spirit were still active in the Gentile world, Abbadon the Destroyer could **never** have been released from the Abyss.

After just a little more searching, we do find a tremendous pair of events that seem to clearly imply a major **paradigm shift** of God's attention **from** the Gentile world **to** Israel. At the very end of the **6th Seal**, we find the commissioning of the 144,000 male, virgin Israelites, from 12 of the 13 tribes. Why are they being commissioned? **So that all Israel shall be saved.** Does that mean that God is finally done with the Gentiles? Sure looks that way, since the very next event is the **Rapture of the Bride**, clearly documented in **Revelation 7:9 and 7:13-14**. With the Bride gone and the full number of the Gentiles having come in, the times of the Gentiles are now fulfilled and it is once again Israel's turn to be attended to by the Almighty. Since no further Gentile conversions are needed or permitted, there is also absolutely no need for the Holy Spirit to remain on the Gentile world. Since all Israel now needs to be saved, it is now of **maximum importance** that the Holy Spirit be poured out on Israel. Consequently, even though the event is never actually spoken about, we can infer from the text that this must happen at this place in time.

Whew! That was a lot of work, wasn't it? That, dear friends, is the price you must be willing to pay to have the deep things of the Word of God. When Paul tells Timothy to **study to show himself approved, a workman not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the Word of truth** (II Timothy 2:15) he isn't kidding. This kind of stuff doesn't come easily. That's why I have to lay it out for people a small bite at a time. Even one of these articles is sometimes more than the average Christian can handle in one session. To make matters worse, I am like Paul when it comes to teaching and preaching. I can easily go three straight hours teaching, and poor Eutychus is just as likely to fall asleep and fall out of the second story window when I teach deep into the night as he did under the Apostle Paul's teaching.

After slightly more than five pages, we have finally come to a point where we can start talking about those **Locusts from Hell** that we advertised at the beginning of the show. It's kinda like the horror movies that hint at this terrible monster but never show it until near the end. Then you tend to go, "*Oh, jeepers! It's just some dumb guy in a rubber suit! What a waste!*" Not today, dear reader, not today.

When we begin the **5th Trumpet / 1st Woe**, we encounter an astonishing thing. A "star" falls from heaven to the earth. Now, sometimes the Greek word in question has more than one meaning. Not this time. Star in Greek means just that, star. There are probably only two realistic ways to handle this passage. Either "star" refers to a **falling star**, like a meteorite or asteroid, as when the Bible says that the stars fell from heaven, or it can (groan!) refer **symbolically** to some sort of **angelic being**. Later on in Revelation, Satan, that old dragon, will be cast down from heaven to the earth and will, in the process, sweep 1/3 of the "stars" out of the heavens. Traditionally, Bible scholars have interpreted that to mean that when Lucifer fell, eons ago, he took 1/3 of the heavenly host with him in the rebellion. We'll deal with that passage a little later in this episode. What's interesting about this "star" is that he is **given the key to the bottomless pit or Abyss**. That means he has the power to open it. Now, here's the question: **Who the heck is in there and why are they there in the first place?**

Now we have literally opened up another can of worms. It's impossible to explain the inhabitants of the Abyss without backtracking all the way to Genesis, to a nasty little situation that developed after the creation of man and his expulsion from the Garden, but before the Flood. And, like so many situations in our own world today, it involved a morals violation.

"¹ Now it came to pass, when men began to multiply on the face of the earth, and daughters were born to them, ² that the **sons of God** saw the **daughters of men**, that they were beautiful; and **they took wives for themselves of all whom they chose.** ³ And the LORD said, 'My Spirit shall not strive with man forever, for he is indeed flesh; yet his days shall be one hundred and twenty years.'⁴ **There were giants on the earth in those days, and also afterward, when the sons of God came in to the daughters of men and they bore children to them. Those were the mighty men who were of old, men of renown.** ⁵ Then the LORD saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every intent of the **thoughts of his heart was only evil continually.** ⁶ And the LORD was sorry that He had made man on the earth, and He was grieved in His heart. ⁷ So the LORD said, 'I will destroy man whom I have created from the face of the earth, both man and beast, creeping thing and birds of the air, for I am sorry that I have made them.'⁸ But Noah found grace in the eyes of the LORD." -- Genesis 6:1-8

This particular passage is yet another part of Scripture that is loaded with controversy, but it is also loaded with truth and key pieces of information that we need to understand what is going on in Revelation. All of the controversy involves the phrases **sons of God** and **daughters of men**. Now, if truth be told, the part about the daughters of men isn't any big deal, but the reference to the sons of God does create a firestorm of controversy. In order to resolve the issue, we once again have to go back to the original Hebrew text. Technically, the Hebrew word used is '**elohiym**, or, as we typically translate it in English, **Elohim**. It can mean rulers, judges, divine ones, angels, gods, god, goddess, godlike one, works or special possessions of God, the (true) God or simply, God. That's an awful lot of choices to pick from, but if we remember the rule that says that we have to look at the word or phrase **in context** with the surrounding text, the task becomes much simpler. Because one possible interpretation is rulers or judges, some "scholars" say that the reference to sons of God simply means that the rich boy sons of the local rulers that had developed after the expulsion from the Garden simply took advantage of their position of privilege and picked out the prettiest girls available. Again, it is an explanation that, on the surface, looks reasonable. Once we analyze the phrase in context, it will soon be obvious that this interpretation simply can't be correct. One of the great features of the **Blue Letter Bible** (www.blueletterbible.org) is that you can look up **every single occurrence of a given word in the entire Bible**. So all I did was scroll to the bottom of the screen and begin to examine the huge number of times that this word is used in the Bible. Fortunately, I didn't have to look at **every** occurrence of the word, only the usages of the word in Genesis, to understand how Moses intended that the word be used. That made the task **very** easy. **In every single case**, the Hebrew word **Elohim** refers, not to man, but to **God Himself**. The word **sons** was an absolute pushover because it was the standard Hebrew word **ben**, which means **son**. My youngest son is named Benjamin. If he were Jewish, his name would be written as **ben Jamin** which means "**son of my right hand**" or "**son of my strength**". This means that the phrase in question would read as **ben Elohim**, exactly as the translators have rendered it, as "**sons of God**".

The next question we have to ask is exactly **who** these sons of God are? Ironically, there are only five occurrences of the phrase **ben Elohim** in the entire Old Testament. Two of them are found in this passage of Genesis that we are looking at. The other three are found, interestingly enough, in the only book of the Bible **older** than Genesis, the Book of **Job**. According to Bible scholars, Job predates the Pentateuch by a considerable amount of time, and was part of the wisdom literature of the Semitic world long before Abraham took leave of Ur of the Chaldees. Since Scripture interprets Scripture, all we have to do is look at the usage of this phrase in the Book of Job in order to see if our interpretation is consistent with the other usages of the phrase.

"⁶ Now there was a day when the **sons of God** came **to present themselves before the LORD**, and **Satan also came among them.** ⁷ And the LORD said to Satan, 'From where do you come?' So Satan answered the LORD and said, 'From going to and fro on the earth, and from walking back and forth on

it.' ⁸ Then the LORD said to Satan, 'Have you considered My servant Job, that there is none like him on the earth, a blameless and upright man, one who fears God and shuns evil?' " -- Job 1:6-8

As you begin to examine the story line, certain things become absolutely clear. First of all, this little gathering is **not** occurring on Earth. If the sons of God were going to present themselves **before the Lord**, it wasn't going to happen here. It would have to happen in Heaven. In addition, when the Lord asks Satan where **he** has been (kind of like asking some slimeball that you hate, "Well, what have **you** been up to?"), Satan answers that he has been just strolling around **across the earth**, having fun. This had to be particularly galling to God, who originally intended the stewardship of the planet to be the domain of Adam, who had defaulted the contract to Lucifer when he sinned and fell from grace. Lucifer deliberate couched his phrase in this manner to insult and cause affront to the Almighty. Clearly, conventional human beings would not be in Heaven, presenting themselves to the Lord and in the immediate presence of the Adversary himself.

The next occurrence happens after poor Job has lost everything, but still clings to God in faith and praises Him even when he has nothing to praise Him about.

" ¹ Again there was a day when the **sons of God** came to present themselves **before the LORD**, and **Satan came also among them** to present himself before the LORD. ² And the LORD said to Satan, 'From where do you come?' Satan answered the LORD and said, 'From going to and fro on the earth, and from walking back and forth on it.' -- Job 2:1-2

This is just a repeat of the first meeting, and the usage of the words has not changed at all. The last passage in question, however, clearly closes the case on this phrase.

" ¹ Then the LORD answered Job out of the whirlwind, and said: ² 'Who is this who darkens counsel by words without knowledge? ³ Now prepare yourself like a man; I will question you, and you shall answer Me. ⁴ **Where were you when I laid the foundations of the earth?** Tell Me, if you have understanding. ⁵ Who determined its measurements? Surely you know! Or who stretched the line upon it? ⁶ To what were its foundations fastened? Or who laid its cornerstone, ⁷ When the morning stars sang together, and **all the sons of God shouted for joy?**' " -- Job 38:1-7

At this point, there can be no doubt that we not talking about humans, but rather about **angels**. There sure weren't any humans present at the **creation of the heavens and the earth!**

Well, now that we've solved one problem, we've created another! We now have a situation where **angels**, for crying out loud, are marrying **human women**, having sex with them and producing children! Man, this could get ugly in a hurry! This is too complicated a situation be completed today, so stay tuned for tomorrow's *E-Pistle*, entitled **The Mutant Menace!**

Day 13 ~ The Mutant Menace



“¹ Now it came to pass, when men began to multiply on the face of the earth, and daughters were born to them, ² that the sons of God saw the daughters of men, that they were beautiful; and they took wives for themselves of all whom they chose. ∴ ⁴ There were giants on the earth in those days, and also afterward, when the sons of God came in to the daughters of men and they bore children to them. Those were the mighty men who were of old, men of renown. ~ Revelation 9:1-2,4

When we last left events, we found a jail-break in progress. A black hole hidden in the center of the earth referred to as the Abyss or Bottomless Pit had been opened, and a significant number of spirit beings were in the process of escaping out onto the surface of the planet. Aside from the shock of knowing that something that could instantly destroy this planet has comfortably been snuggled inside of the planet is more than somewhat disconcerting. Even a small black hole, if placed unchecked inside the earth, would quickly swallow the planet and everything in it. Somehow, then, there must be some sort of protective force field, shield or defense mechanism which keeps us from being destroyed. The black hole itself is a perfect, inescapable trap for beings composed of light. Inside a black hole, gravity becomes so intense that time and space are distorted and not even light itself can escape. Ironically, a black hole really is a bottomless pit, the only thing in the universe that can be described as such. Every black hole has something called an **event horizon**. That event horizon is the point of no return beyond which nothing can escape the overwhelming gravity pull of the black hole. Once past the event horizon, any object is drawn inexorably into the enormous gravity well. Paradoxically, the further something falls, the slower it falls, and the more it becomes stretched out over the length of the gravity well. Normal physical objects couldn't possibly endure such stresses and would quickly degenerate into mere molecules of scattered matter. Not so with a being originally made out of light. Light is the fundamental material out of which both matter and energy are drawn. The Bible makes it abundantly clear that the first thing brought into existence during Creation was light. Interestingly enough, current theories about the origin of the universe say that when the **Big Bang** occurred, there was a blinding flash of light as the microdot which contained everything that today makes up the cosmos suddenly exploded, expanding exponentially in all directions at a rate that we cannot possibly comprehend or imagine. The beings that we today call **angels** and **demons** are most likely constructed out of light, the very basic essence of the universe itself. That is their strength, for, as beings of light, they can make themselves appear in any way they choose. An angel can appear to be a normal man, so that we can entertain angels unawares. Satan himself can disguise himself so as to appear once again to be an angel of light, just as he once was. But the fact that they are composed in some remarkable way of light is also their weakness, because even light is subject to the force of gravity in this universe. Once such a being were cast into a black hole, it would not be destroyed like normal matter would, but instead would continue to fall eternally, at an increasingly slower rate the further it fell into the bottomless pit that is created by a black hole.

How this "star" is enabled to open that black hole and let these creatures escape is a mystery to me. The fact that it fell from heaven tells me that if it, too, is an angel, it must by definition be a fallen angel. That would classify it as another demon. Is this an angel that actually falls from grace at the end of time, during the Wrath of God? Perhaps. It is unlikely that a normal angel would unlock the Abyss. The language seems to imply that this is some sort of covert operation, an undercover attempt to let loose the rebels who fell in the beginning. That would not surprise me in the least. Can you imagine what the "key" looks like that would open up the gravity well of a black hole? Scientifically, it

boggles my mind to think of the energies bound up in that “key”, energies sufficient to override the most powerful force in the natural universe.

In our last *E-Pistle*, we posed the question regarding **who** the prisoners in the black hole were and **why** they were imprisoned there. We discovered that they are **fallen angels** who took sexual actions on the earth in direct violation to the commandments of God. It would appear that after the rebellion in Heaven, Lucifer and his Unholy Alliance were cast down from the 3rd Heaven to the 1st Heaven. We have already discussed that event in some detail. While in the 1st Heaven, the atmosphere of our planet, they had the power to assume the form of men and walk among us, just as “good” angels do. In the process of doing so, with the sin of rebellion already in their hearts, they were vulnerable to others sins as well, such as lust, pride and greed. With that in mind, they decided to cross a boundary which God had said should never be crossed, the boundary of **cross-species mating**. From the very beginning, God had established, using genetic markers, that each species of creature on this planet, including mankind, should reproduce **according to its own kind**.

" ²⁴ Then God said, 'Let the earth bring forth the living creature **according to its kind**: cattle and creeping thing and beast of the earth, each according to its kind'; and it was so. ²⁵ And God made the beast of the earth **according to its kind**, cattle **according to its kind**, and everything that creeps on the earth **according to its kind**. And God saw that it was **good**.'" -- Genesis 1:24-25

Why good? Because to allow the various plants and animals of this planet to cross-pollinate and cross-mate would produce bizarre mutations unfit for survival. As Tevye in *Fiddler on the Roof* puts it, "**A bird may love a fish but where would they build a home together?**" For this reason, God established clear genetic boundaries which cannot be crossed by normal means. If a horse and a donkey mate they can produce an offspring called a mule. And while mules may possess certain desirable traits, it is also **sterile**, or incapable of reproducing **according to its own kind**. Unfortunately, these kinds of boundaries, which worked so effectively for **natural creatures**, had no effect on **supernatural beings**. In some fashion currently unknown to our sciences, these beings of light and energy have the ability to fashion flesh around them and assume a human form, apparently for extended periods of time. I can guarantee you that the physical forms that these supernatural creatures assumed were in no manner unpleasing. Every account of angels I have ever read says that they are larger than human beings, sometimes massively so, extremely strong and well-muscled, and very good looking. Years ago, the Rev. Charles Finney, one of the greatest revivalist preachers ever to step into a pulpit, was holding a crusade in the Chicago area. Two men who wanted nothing to do with the Gospel made a pact to kill Finney and end the crusades. When they analyzed Finney's daily habits, they found what they considered to be a vulnerability. Every evening, after the crusade service, Finney would walk **alone** down the levee that ran from the place where the revival was being held to the hotel where Finney was staying. It was there, they decided, that they would lay their trap. One evening, they dressed in dark clothes and huddled at the base of the levee far enough away from most of the buildings to avoid detection. It was their plan to attack and kill Finney as he walked by the spot of the trap. But when Finney arrived, they discovered, much to their dismay, that he was flanked on either side by **two of the largest, most well-muscled men they had ever seen!** The two men were dressed in the garb of the day and would have blended into any crowd other than for their size. The two men knew that there had been no armed escort the previous nights, and were frustrated and puzzled at this new twist in the plot. Having failed that night to carry out their nefarious plan, they vowed to attack and kill Finney the next night. But when the next evening rolled around and they once again lay hidden at the base of the levee, they were again thwarted. Finney was again flanked on either side by the two massive men. The would-be murderers made a few more attempts, but in every case, could do nothing because of the two security guards that accompanied him. Finally, in disgust, they abandoned their attempts. Several years later, one of the men was actually converted at a Finney crusade and came forward to confess to Finney what he and his partner had attempted to do. "*If not for those two huge bodyguards*", he concluded, "*We would surely have taken your life!*" Finney stared at him for a moment, and then replied, "*My friend, in all the time of the Chicago crusade, there was not a night when I did not walk that levee **alone!***" What had the two would-be assassins seen? **Angels!** Adapted to appear as regular men of that age, but with huge frame and musculature, they were a powerful deterrent to anyone who would have harmed the man of God who, although he walked beside them, could not see them.

Now consider this: When we speak of demons today, we generally describe them as hideous, ugly creatures. I have had several encounters with them myself, and would agree, in general, with those descriptions. But what if, at the beginning when they first fell, they didn't look like that? What if they still retained their original angelic good looks and rugged frame? What if it took thousands of years to warp them and twist them into what they are now? And what if you **couldn't tell them apart from any other human male?** The best looking women would have been attracted to them; strong, handsome to the point of being beautiful in a masculine way, tall, everything that a carnal woman would want in a man. At the same time, they seemed to possess unusual knowledge of Heaven, things about which mortal men knew nothing. It would have taken no time at all for such "men" to rise to positions of authority and power. Soon, they would be the leaders of the entire world. And, possessing arcane and scientific knowledge far beyond mankind around them, could have pushed their relative civilizations to peaks of accomplishment that we cannot duplicate even today. It is common knowledge that we do not have the tools or the technology in our modern world to build the pyramids. The precise angles of construction, the incredible accuracy of the chiseling of the stones and many, many more things all point to a level of technology and understanding far beyond our own. Perhaps the fabled stories of Atlantis are not so far-fetched after all. The level of the civilization of pre-flood Earth may have been far above what we have been able to achieve on our own. I have seen way too many things unearthed in archeological digs which seem to smack of air flight and space ships to blindly ignore them. **Something** was going on in this earth prior to the deluge that doesn't fit the picture of some rude, uncouth, ignorant caveman with pieces of shrubbery between his teeth. The Aztec Empire, the Mayan Empire, the massive ruins being discovered in the Amazon even as we speak, the Pyramids, Angkor Wat in Cambodia and many other similar ruins all speak to the undeniable fact that mankind has achieved great levels of civilization in the past, equal to and perhaps even superior to our current levels of achievement.

There is another concern that would logically follow this fallen angel/demonic leadership and inter-species mating. The children born of such unions would be **half human and half demon**. They would not be as large or as intelligent or as strong as their demon fathers, but they would still be substantially larger, more intelligent and stronger than any of the humans around them. They would naturally rise to positions of leadership in the antediluvian world. Their children, in turn, would be one-quarter demon and three-quarters human and so on. You would think that over time, the extremely large gene pool of humanity, primitive as it was, would override the demonic genes. But also remember that those demonic genes were being inherited from **eternal beings**. As such, those genes would almost certainly be **dominant genes**. They would override any genetic patterns found in conventional, fallen humanity. In doing so, the genetic makeup of the fallen angels would, over a period of time, **completely rewrite human DNA into its own structure**. Mankind would be genetically erased from the planet and replaced by the offspring of the fallen angels. Not only could such nations out-work, out-fight and out-produce conventional human nations around them, intermarriage would spread the angelic DNA across the globe, and that is **exactly what happened!** So extensive was the DNA rewrite that **only one family** escaped from the corruption. As this demonic DNA spread throughout mankind, its thoughts were **continually completely on evil!** Combining fallen human DNA and fallen angel DNA produced the most savage, brutal, evil hybrid species the world has ever seen. In addition, since these fallen angels are **eternal**, they would outlive **one wife after another**, spawning a whole new set of demonic children **one generation after another!**

Now do you understand why God would outlaw the crossing of genetic boundaries??? Some of you will say, "Wal, now, Pastor Ray. Don't the Bible say that angels can't have sex and have kids? Jesus said that in the Resurrection, we would be like the angels and not get married?" Nice try. If only that were an **accurate** quote, you might be right. But let's look at the **actual** quote and see what Jesus **actually** said:

"²³ The same day the Sadducees, **who say there is no resurrection**, came to Him and asked Him, ²⁴ saying: 'Teacher, Moses said that **if a man dies, having no children, his brother shall marry his wife and raise up offspring for his brother**.²⁵ Now there were with us **seven brothers**. The first died after he had married, and having no offspring, left his wife to his brother.²⁶ Likewise the second also, and the third, even to the seventh.²⁷ Last of all **the woman died also**.²⁸ Therefore, in the

resurrection, **whose wife of the seven will she be? For they all had her.**' ²⁹ Jesus answered and said to them, 'You are mistaken, **not knowing the Scriptures nor the power of God.** ³⁰ **For in the resurrection they neither marry nor are given in marriage, but are like angels of God in heaven.**' " -- Matthew 22:23-30

Now, let's take a quick look at this little episode. The Sadducees, who did not believe in the Resurrection, came to Jesus with one of their standard trick questions. They didn't make this up on the spot. They used this story as a standard argument against the Pharisees, who did believe in the Resurrection. In this story, you have to wonder about both the brothers and the woman. All seven died? There must have been some serious genetic problems in that family! Or, was this lovely woman actually a **Black Widow spider**, poisoning each husband in succession? We may never know. The ultimate question that the Sadducees posed was **whose wife would she be in the Resurrection?** Jesus' answer shut them up in a hurry. First of all, **they didn't know the Scriptures!** Second of all, **they didn't know the power of God!** Third of all, **nobody was getting married in the Resurrection!** Fourth and lastly, **they would remain unmarried like the angels.**

At no time did Jesus say that the angels **couldn't** have sex or get married or raise children. He already knew from the Genesis account that such things had already occurred and would doubtless happen again. He rather said that they **wouldn't** get married.

As always, answering **one** question always leads to **another** question. "OK", you might say. "I can buy into the fact that the angels **could** have kids but **won't**. Why then, **are they not permitted to marry?**" Aha, dear friends, we have come to one of the greatest **mysteries** in the entire Bible! Are you ready? In the Resurrection, we will not be permitted to marry one another **because we are already married to Christ as part of the Bride!** The concept of marriage on earth involves **one man and one woman**. The concept of marriage in Heaven involves **one heavenly man who made us all and all of us in a single collective entity know as the Bride**. Now, let me immediately say that this is **not** any form of homosexuality or lesbianism. The sexual makeup of the resurrection body, while retained to sustain the original body's form and shape, **will no longer serve the purpose that it did in its earthly existence**. There will be no need for procreation, since we will be living **forever**. We will not need replacement, because we aren't going anywhere! I know it is a little awkward for guys to picture being married to Christ, because it summons up unpleasant images that are repulsive to the normal male. If sex were involved in any way in the union, I would agree. But the consummation of **this** marriage involves a spiritual union so much higher, so much deeper and so much more satisfying than sex that the two cannot be compared together. Let me share something with you. I have, on several occasions, been caught up in a state of **rapture**. During those times, several things have happened. First of all, I have never felt **more loved in all my life**. Most human love is based conditionally on performance. Do **this** for me and I will love you. Do **that** for me and I will love you. Not so with God. His love is **eternal, unconditional and totally beyond our ability to understand or describe**. I know what I felt and saw. I can try to describe it to you, but words would fail in every instance. Second of all, **my sense of purpose and belonging was total and instant**. I knew beyond a shadow of doubt **who** I was and **why** I had been sent to the earth. Knowledge which I lost when I was born into an earth suit suddenly flooded back into my awareness. Third of all, **there was an unspeakable, indescribable sense of joy, peace and fulfilling**. Better than sex, folks! Better than booze! Better than drugs! **An ultimate, eternal, total high that never goes away!** Dear friends, let me assure you that what we have coming is so very much better than what we have! That's why Paul, who experienced this exact same thing on Mount Sinai in Arabia and described it in II Corinthians 12:1-4, was torn between **staying on the earth for our sakes** and **going back to Heaven to be with Jesus**. Listen to his brief description of that experience:

" ¹ *It is doubtless not profitable for me to boast. I will come to visions and revelations of the Lord:* ² *I know a man in Christ who fourteen years ago—whether in the body I do not know, or whether out of the body I do not know, God knows—**such a one was caught up to the third heaven.*** ³ *And I know such a man—whether in the body or out of the body I do not know, God knows—* ⁴ *how he was caught up into Paradise and **heard inexpressible words, which it is not lawful for a man to utter.***"

-- II Corinthians 12:1-4

Paul's experience was so glorious that he wasn't even allowed to talk about it! That's why he longed to go back there and be with Christ. It was just so much better than anything here. Later on, he would talk about being torn between the two choices:

*"²¹ For to me, **to live is Christ, and to die is gain.** ²² But if I live on in the flesh, this will mean fruit from my labor; yet what I shall choose I cannot tell. ²³ For I am hard-pressed between the two, **having a desire to depart and be with Christ, which is far better.** ²⁴ Nevertheless to remain in the flesh is **more needful for you.** ²⁵ And being confident of this, I know that I shall remain and continue with you all for your progress and joy of faith, ²⁶ that your rejoicing for me may be more abundant in Jesus Christ by my coming to you again." -- Philippians 1:21-26*

Having been in Heaven once, Paul had no desire for anything else but to return there. However, the need of the believers was greater than his own personal desire, so he opted to stay until he had finished his course and his job was finally done. Every believer that I have ever met who has had a near death experience and actually passed through complete death and then was resurrected all say the same thing: they are here because of **unfinished business** or by **mandate of Christ**, not because they **wanted to come back**. Every single person has told me the same thing: **there is nothing more they want in the whole world than to be able to go and be with Jesus again**. I personally have met and know **three men who were dead for extended periods of time, "toe-tag" dead**. For those who say that these "near-death" experiences are hallucinations generated by the human brain as it shorts out due to lack of oxygen, chew on these three for a while:

- (1) **Dr. Richard Eby**, former heart surgeon who fell three stories and landed head first on concrete. The impact split his head open like a ripe melon. Try not to get grossed out. This is sooooo important! Dr. Eby was pronounced dead at the scene. No attempt was made to revive him. He was too far gone. He remained in the morgue for about 5 hours, and **then came back to life with no physical problems in his body!** Dr. Eby's story is well documented medically.
- (2) **Ron Estes**, financial planner, who had the steering column of his car driven into his midsection by a violent collision. He did not know it, but his colon was ruptured during the accident, and it began to seep fecal material into his inner organs. By the time the doctors realized what had happened, most of his vital organs had been eaten up. When he died, he weighed 94 pounds and his skull could be seen protruding through his scalp and hair. He was pronounced dead and then resurrected from the dead about two hours later. When he came back to life, one of the nurses in the room at the time lost her mind and had to be institutionalized. Subsequent medical examinations revealed that his internal organs, previous eaten up by the extreme toxemia that had killed him, were completely regenerated and back in place! He carries his death certificate from the Commonwealth of Kentucky with him to prove to everyone that this 6 foot, 225 pound man was really dead.
- (3) **Evangelist Dale Begley**, who was run over by a car going 70 miles an hour when he was 12 and killed instantly by the impact. His father, who was also a Pentecostal minister, and his mother were warned by an angel that he would be killed but would be raised from the dead later on. Begley's torn and mangled body, which had been dragged **underneath the car for over 200 feet**, was taken to the hospital. He was declared dead on the spot. No attempt was made to revive him. Even after that, his mother did not leave the hospital, insisting that God was going to raise her son from the dead. **Eight hours later, Dale Begley sat upright on the slab his body was resting on, alive and well!** He still bears some of the scars from the accident that took his life, and cannot see out of one eye. God has promised that someday He will restore that to him as well.

I have met all of these men and talked with personally. Their testimonies are well-documented and irrefutable. All of them praise the Lord for resurrecting them, but earnestly desire to return to the perfect peace, love, joy and serenity that are Heaven. There will come a day when Heaven will come to earth, just as the Scriptures say. And we will be part of it.

Paul, writing in I Corinthians and quoting the prophet Isaiah, says it this way:

"⁹ *But as it is written: 'Eye has not seen, nor ear heard, nor have entered into the heart of man the things which God has prepared for those who love Him.'* " -- I Corinthians 2:9

'Nuff on that, though! I hope you get the point. We are already betrothed to Christ. In the Resurrection, we will be interfaced in the most glorious neural network ever conceived in the history of the universe. All of us who love Him and have prepared ourselves will be in the Bride, interconnected with one another and interconnected with Him. We will have the completely activated Mind of Christ, with **all knowledge and understanding of all resurrected humanity and all knowledge and understanding of the Risen Christ at our complete disposal instantly upon merely thinking about it.** The Bible says that we will **know even as we are known.** That's pretty awesome. And we will be **in love with Him and in love with one another** on a plane and at a level that makes physical sex completely trivial and unnecessary. We will still have the equipment, but there will be no significant use for it as far as I know.

Now we have successfully established that the Bible clearly teaches that the fallen angels not only had sex with human women, but married them as well and had children by them. All of their offspring were mighty men, for obvious reasons. The next question we must ask is **how did God respond to this problem?** The answer is found in the shortest book in the New Testament, the book of **Jude.** Jude, as I have mentioned earlier, was Jesus' half brother; same mom, different dad! Here's what **he** had to say about the outcome of the events:

"⁵ *But I want to remind you, though you once knew this, that the Lord, having saved the people out of the land of Egypt, afterward destroyed those who did not believe.* ⁶ **And the angels who did not keep their proper domain, but left their own abode, He has reserved in everlasting chains under darkness for the judgment of the great day;** ⁷ *as Sodom and Gomorrah, and the cities around them in a similar manner to these, having given themselves over to sexual immorality and gone after strange flesh, are set forth as an example, suffering the vengeance of eternal fire."*

- Jude 5-7

Jude tells us clearly that a group of angels did not **stay in the place they were supposed to remain in, but left the place where they lived and came down to earth.** As a result, the Lord **imprisoned them in chains and placed them in everlasting darkness.** Where is this everlasting darkness? **Inside a black hole!** Why were they imprisoned there? **Because of sexual immorality caused by crossing the barrier established by God prohibiting inter-species mating!** The wickedness that this caused so infected mankind that the Lord came to a point where He was forced to destroy all mankind in the Flood. See what happens when you cross the barrier lines that God has established? He did so for very good reasons. Trust Him. He knows what He is doing!

Well, there's the story, folks! And so for thousands of years, a group of fallen angels have been trapped in the Abyss, chained in absolute darkness, unable to escape, unable to do anything. And all this time, their hatred has been growing, their rage against God and against humanity increasing, until it began to mutate their very form into something evil and grotesque. Once they were the most beautiful beings on the planet. Now, they barely have anything about them that looks human. A renegade angel has fallen from heaven and now has opened the Bottomless Pit and released them. As the door swings open, some of the smoke generated by their torment rises out of the opening of the chasm, smoke so thick and billowing that it blocks out the sun and pollutes the air. Now these twisted, mutated former angels begin to come out of the chasm, freed for the first time in untold thousands of years. They look like locusts, but have stingers like scorpions filled with a deadly neurotoxin that can cause agonizing pain for five whole months but not kill. As the creatures begin to pour out, we must quickly move away from the edge of the Abyss, lest we ourselves be stung by them. Quickly now, let us flee away. The Holy Spirit is no longer protecting the Gentile world. Satanic activity will now be as normal as Starbucks coffee. **Aren't you glad that you were raptured at the end of the 6th Seal?** Er, ah, **you were ready, weren't you?** You didn't get **left behind**, did you? Oh, I so hope not, dear reader! You do **NOT** want to be here for what happens next, as we examine creatures which **Float Like A Locust, and Sting Like a Scorpion!** May the God of all grace and mercy protect you and keep your soul pure and free from sin until the day when we meet in the air!

Day 14 – Float like a Locust, Sting like a Scorpion



³ Then out of the smoke locusts came upon the earth. And to them was given power, as the scorpions of the earth have power. ⁴ They were commanded not to harm the grass of the earth, or any green thing, or any tree, but only those men who do not have the seal of God on their foreheads. ⁵ And they were not given *authority* to kill them, but to torment them for five months. Their torment was like the torment of a scorpion when it strikes a man. ⁶ In those days men will seek death and will not find it; they will desire to die, and death will flee from them.” – Revelation 9:3-6

*"Didn't I warn you that things were going to get ugly? Didn't I tell you that we should have listened to that crazy old Full Gospel guy who wrote all those books telling us that this would happen? If you set foot out of this house, you **know** what's going to happen! One of those things is going to come up on you unawares, and it's going to sting you and you are going to hit the ground in agony. I won't be able to come and get you, or they'll get me, too! And where would we put you for five full months? Every hospital in America is filled with people in unspeakable torment and no pain medication seems to help them. What am I supposed to do, Bill? Bill? Bill? Children, quick, where is your father? Outside? Bill! No! Bill! (Sound of front door slamming) Oh, nooooooooooooo!"*

This will be the scene in America and across the world after the opening of the Abyss in the 5th Trumpet / 1st Woe of the 7th Seal. With the Bride safely removed at the end of the 6th Seal and the Jews in the midst of the greatest spiritual revival in their history, God now moves with ruthless certainty against all those who rejected Him and resisted Him all through history. With the precious Holy Spirit pulled from the Gentile world, the full range of demonic activity now begins to break loose, no longer restrained by Him. Untold thousands or millions of demons imprisoned in the black hole are now pouring out, assuming the most hideous form ever known to man. No longer are there any boundaries on interspecies mating and cross-genetic mutations, and so these creatures who were once beautiful to look upon, the highest creation in God's universe, now assume the most grotesque forms imaginable.

Focused exclusively on rebellious mankind, those who do not have the mark of God on them, these creatures seek out and sting everyone possible. Contained in their stingers is a near-deadly neurotoxin which, when injected into the human body, spreads throughout the entire nervous system, poisoning it and causing unspeakable agony. I can speak with great authority about this matter because I was the victim of severe nerve damage which caused and still causes severe problems in my body. Let me explain.

In the fall of 2004, I began to experience severe earaches, so bad that they would keep me up late at night, crying sometimes under the pain. This constant pain made it hard to focus, preach, minister and do my job. I went from specialist to specialist with no help in sight. One "specialist" declared authoritatively that the only thing that was bothering me was a piece of dead skin in my ear, which he "expertly" plucked from my ear, thus "solving" my problem. The next "specialist" decided to give me a full scouring of my sinuses, even up into my skull, an operation of some severity and risk. I was on the way to having that arranged when, one Sunday evening after church I began to experience severe chest pains and was rushed to the hospital. I was diagnosed with 80% blockage in one of my main arteries, and they decided to perform an angioplasty and put in a metal mesh tube called a stent to hold the artery open. In the midst of the procedure, the artery suddenly collapsed and I found myself in the midst of a full scale heart attack on the table. A new "balloon" was inserted to re-expand the artery, the stent inserted, and the crisis averted.

After the operation during the recovery period, I asked my heart surgeon if they knew **any** decent ear, nose and throat specialist and they referred me to a wonderful young Jewish doctor who took one look at me and **immediately** ordered scans and tests looking for the presence of cancer. Those tests proved positive, and they discovered that I had a tumor growing in the region near my right ear. The tumor was blocking off the Eustachian tube and preventing it from draining. As a result, infection had set in, causing me all the pain. The tumor was both malignant and inoperable because it lay too close to a bundle of critical nerves which, if damaged or severed, could produce permanent and severe brain damage. Instead, a combined treatment of radiation and chemotherapy was recommended. The radiation would be a type called IMRT, used to spread the radiation out across my face and throat. Instead of causing severe damage to the tissue and cells between the radiation "gun" and the tumor, the damage would be spread out over a larger area and not be so severe to any one place. That would attack and hopefully kill all the cancer cells and totally destroy the tumor. The chemotherapy, on the other hand, was designed to kill any cancer cells that had broken off from the tumor and were moving free in my body. I was reluctantly in agreement with the radiation therapy, and it worked, coupled with massive amounts of prayer from all over the world. But the chemotherapy caused me great concern. There was no evidence that the tumor had metastasized, or spread. I resisted taking the chemotherapy, but finally agreed to take my first session. I knew immediately it was a big mistake. That afternoon, I let them put the deadly compound into my veins. By evening, I was throwing up non-stop. My body reacted violently to the chemo, treating it as a deadly poison, which is exactly what it is. I went to talk to the chemotherapy physician, and tried to get him to understand how negative my reaction had been. But I was so weak from everything that had happened to me, and he was so forceful and insistent that I let him talk me into continuing with the treatments. It was the worst mistake of my entire life. Each successive treatment drove me deeper and deeper into chemical shock. I began throwing up constantly. I lost 80 pounds during the ordeal. I couldn't keep anything down. But that was not the worst thing that started to happen. Chemotherapy is kind of like killing ants in your kitchen with a flame thrower. You may get the ants, but you will set your kitchen on fire and burn everything else up. The chemotherapy began to destroy **all** my fast-growing cells, not just any potentially cancerous ones. It severely damaged my hearing and caused almost total hearing loss in one ear and about 50% in the other. But even that wasn't the worst thing. It also severely damaged the lining around the nerves in my hands and feet. This lining is called myelin and is made of cholesterol, believe it or not. There are some good uses for the substance, it seems. Now, with the lining damaged, my nerves were like electric wires without the rubber insulation that surrounds it. The nerves began to send out erratic, incorrect, inconsistent signals. The soles of my feet became numb, tingling and painful, all at the same time. So did my hands. In addition, since balance depends on the nerves in your foot to accurately report pitch, pressure, speed and other factors about your walking back to your brain, damage to those nerves caused me severe problems with walking or climbing steps. I never quite knew where my food was. I would have to look very carefully before I took a step. Sometimes, in the middle of a stride, I would find myself swinging out wildly because my damaged nerves had reported some false information to my brain, and, despite my best efforts to try and get my brain to ignore them, it was dutifully reacting to the lying signals coming from the soles of my feet. All of that was bad, but it wasn't the worst thing. The worst thing was the **constant, unremitting, unendurable pain**. Each chemotherapy treatment only worsened the damage to my nerve endings. After each treatment, I would say, *"This is the last one. I'm not going to take it anymore!"*. And each time, the chemo oncologist would talk me into another one. In retrospect, it was the worst decision I have ever made. I ended up enduring five of the six scheduled treatments. Each time, liquid rat poison would course through my veins for hours. Each time, I would spend the next two to three days throwing up constantly. And each time the poison did more and more damage to my nerve endings. At first, the symptoms were relatively mild: some tingling in my hands and feet which the good doctor assured me would gradually go away after the treatments were done. Then the tingling gradually turned into an ache. The ache turned into pain, and the pain turned into agony. What was worst about the whole ordeal was what would happen at night. About 8:30, like clockwork, the pain would begin creeping up my arms until both arms were ablaze with pain. Then the pain would spread into my chest, and then finally up my neck until it was all over my face. It was like being stung by a thousand bees all at the same time. In addition, the pain would creep up my legs, particularly my left leg for reasons that still elude me, and gradually all the way up to my hip. The songwriter Shel Silverstein has a silly children's song entitled, *"I'm Being Swallowed By A Boa Constrictor"*, with lyrics like *"Oh gee, it's up to my knee", "Oh my, it's up to my thigh", "Oh heck, it's up to my neck", "Mffghgh-acccccck..."*.

That's how it felt to me. I was being swallowed by a boa constrictor of pain, and the event occurred each evening, lasting till the early hours of the morning. The pain was so severe that I would try to sit in a hot tub of water in order to relieve the pain, only to have to jump out of the water because of the pain. I would walk back and forth in the house, literally screaming because of the intensity of the pain, with my precious wife walking behind me like the caboose on a train, laying hands on me and praying in the Spirit. This nightmarish scenario would play out every evening. The pain would increase in intensity and scope until about 4:00 in the morning, when I would finally fall asleep in a fetal position upside down on the bed, with my hand resting on my wife's leg for some tiny shred of comfort. I stopped praying **not to die** from the cancer, and started praying fervently **to die** so that I could finally escape the unbearable pain. Eventually, the doctors settled on a combination of three separate nerve pain medications which I still have to take three times a day in order to keep my sanity. I am somewhat better, but I really don't know how much of that is the medication and how much of it is actually healing since I am truly afraid to quit the medications long enough to see how much healing has occurred. After three years, I still have to blast the soles of both feet with scalding water each morning in the shower, and the numbness and tingling are still present in both feet, and up to mid-calf on my left leg.

Now why on earth did I tell you all of that? Bring into remembrance, if you will, the single greatest moment of physical pain you have ever experienced. Now, try to imagine what it would be like if that pain had been **non-stop and constant for five months on end???** Would you have retained your sanity? Would you have been able to eat? To walk? To think? To act? And how long would it have been before you would have begun to entertain thoughts of suicide? Don't bother to lecture me about official church doctrine on the matter. I am very well aware of the standard line of teaching. Be strong. Be noble. What will others think? But the simple truth is that there are points in every person's life where they reach a breaking point, and, having been stretched beyond that point, lose their will to live. But in the 1st Woe, there will be a nasty side-effect of this demonic neurotoxin. **You won't be able to die, even when you want to!** Look again carefully at Verse 6 in the passage at the top of this article. **Men will seek death and not find it. They will desire to die and death will flee from them.** Many people fear death. But in those days, **men will fear living, so great will be the torment in this life if they are stung.** Knowing that the neurotoxin will wear off will give scant relief to anyone. By that time, the unwilling survivors will be shattered wrecks, mere shadows of the individuals they used to be, gaunt skeletons of shaking, quivering bones held together with tendons and ligaments, but with very little left in them that resembles humanity. Take Auschwitz and multiply it by 100 and perhaps you can get a picture of what these individuals will look like.

I am so sorry, dear friends, to make you have to look deeply into such things and to have to think about them and their logical consequences. But I must, if only to make you understand how vital and critical it is for you and your loved ones **not** to be present when all these events come to pass. Remember, half of the individuals who called themselves Christians will still be present for all of these things, along with all of the Jewish people and the rest of the unbelieving, rebellious world.

One would think that this would represent the maximum amount of agony the planet could endure, but in fact, it is only beginning. Things will get much worse from here. One of the things to remember about the Seals, as well as the Trumpets and later on the Bowls is that they are **incremental and overlapping**. What do I mean by that? At the very beginning, Christ breaks open the **First Seal** and **War in the Northern Hemisphere** begins to occur. That would mark **World War I** as the probable starting point for the opening of the Seals. Then, Christ breaks open the **Second Seal** and **Ethnic Genocide in the 10/40 Window** begins to occur, **concurrent with the events of the First Seal, which continue to happen right along with events of the Second Seal**. I hope you understand what I am saying. When each Seal, Trumpet or Bowl occurs, it **overlays on top of all of the other, previous events which are already happening**. It's kind of like a man who begins to bounce a ball. Then, at the same time as he is bouncing the first ball, he begins to bounce a **second** ball. Now there are **two** balls bouncing. Then he begins to bounce a **third** ball. Now all **three** balls are bouncing at the same time. Ball number one doesn't stop bouncing just because ball number two started bouncing. Eventually you have so many things happening at one time that you can scarcely keep track. To give you a truly clear picture of the condition of the world at this time, here's what is going on, **all at the same time:**

Global War originating in the Northern Hemisphere is occurring at the same time that **Ethnic Genocide in the 10/40 Window** is occurring at the same time that **Crop Failure of Wheat and Barley in the Northern Hemisphere** is occurring at the same time that **Plague and Famine and Animal Attacks** are occurring in the Southern Hemisphere at the same time that **Global Earthquakes** are ripping the planet stem to stern at the same time that **Global Blackouts** are occurring at the same time that a **Massive Revival in Israel** is occurring at the same time that a **Huge Number of Radical Christians Suddenly Disappear** at the same time that **Demonic Activity** dramatically increases on the planet at the same time that **Demonic Locust/Scorpion/Horses** appear, stinging everyone with a neurotoxin that causes agonizing pain for five months.

Whew! That's a lot of stuff to be happening all at one time. To be sure, there are a few of those things that are single events, such as the Rapture, but the vast majority of these as well as many of the upcoming events are **incremental in nature**. The only way I can accurately capture what is going on in the mind of God at that time comes from a classic Christmas movie called *A Christmas Story*. In it, little Ralphie, finally pushed beyond his ability to tolerate the abuse, turns on a red-headed bully who has been tormenting him, knocks him down in the snow, sits on top of him and begins to pound him unmercifully, harder and harder with each blow. We'll ignore the language that came pouring out of Ralphie for the moment and concentrate on the increasing fury of his blows. It is the best analogy I have ever seen for what the opening of the Seals represents. Each Seal that opens increases the fury of the Scroll. Each Trumpet that sounds increases the fury of the 7th Seal. Each Bowl that is poured out increases the fury of the 7th Trumpet, and we haven't even gotten to that part yet!

These demonic creatures are an amalgam of various species found across the earth. First, they are **locusts**, which means that they have wings and can fly. Second, they are **scorpions**, which means that they have flexible tails with stingers on the ends of them. Third, they are shaped like **horses**, prepared for battle, which would mean that they are all adorned with various battle gear. Since horses were the armored car of the ancient world, and horses with iron chariots were the equivalent of tanks, it was common to adorn the horse with the colors of banner of the army to which they belonged, along with various types of armor, just as the rider himself would be clothed in armor to protect him during battle. Their heads are covered with something like gold, obviously referring to the color or the sheathing, not the durability, since gold is one of the softest of the metals. Their faces were like the faces of men, interestingly enough, and they had hair like a woman's hair and teeth like a lion's teeth. Some Biblical expositors have attempted to liken them to Apache helicopters, but, with all due respects, I have never seen any helicopter that looked like that in all of my days, and I am absolutely sure that John wasn't **that** blind! In addition to that, these creatures had breastplates of iron, and they made a tremendously loud sound when they flew. But if you take the sound that a typical locust makes when it flies, and then extrapolate it into a creature the size of a horse, it's going to make the wings huge and the sound they make being moved at tremendous speed deafening. There is simply no creature alive or piece of military equipment that even remotely resembles these things. They are distinctly supernatural, just as all of the subsequent manifestations of various creatures will be.

Over all of these beings is one supremely strong entity, one called **Abbadon** or **Apollyon**. Abbadon is his Hebrew name, Apollyon his Greek one. Either way, his name means **Destroyer**. In researching this extremely powerful demon, I was amazed and appalled at the way that Scripture has been twisted and distorted down through time. In some places, he is viewed as Satan himself, which is absolutely not correct. Satan was not imprisoned in the Abyss for sexual misconduct. He is personally active in the atmosphere of the planet, else he could not have personally have enter Judas in the Upper Room. In other places, he is thought to be on the side of heaven, which is equally ludicrous. In yet other places, he is shown as being in charge of Hell or Gehenna, an equally wrong view. For some obscure reason, many theologians seem to think that the Abyss is the same thing as Hell. Wrong! From an eternal perspective, the Abyss is no different than the county jail, a place where you hold wrongdoers until they can properly be brought to trial. Hell actually serves the same purpose, but is incapable of holding demonic beings permanently. The Abyss, however, is totally capable of doing so, till the end of time if necessary. And the Abyss contains only demonic fallen angels, not human souls. Despite all the misinformation, one thing remains very clear. This fallen angel is probably almost as powerful as Satan himself. He probably was one of the leaders of the angelic group who, when assigned to Earth, chose

to disobey God regarding moral matters and human women. We've discussed what happened with that group of rebels, what they did, and why they were incarcerated in the Bottomless Pit.

One very important but very little known fact about The Destroyer is that he personally is the only one who can kill the two Witnesses of Revelation Chapter 11. Their powers are such that no mortal human can touch them. Fire proceeds from their mouths and consumes anyone who tries to get near them. They can call all manner of plagues down on the Earth at will. They are as close to a negative superman as mankind will ever see. And since no **man** can take them out, it falls to a **demon**, the most powerful to come out of the Abyss at that point, to do the dirty work. Yet even Abbadon can't **keep** them dead. Three and a half days later they are resurrected from the dead by the Lord Himself. We will talk a great deal about this topic later, so I don't want to give away all the good stuff here.

There is, however, one issue regarding Abbadon that we need to deal with in this article. We find him referenced in the passage that we are studying, the one in Revelation 11:7, and another passage later on in Revelation 17:8:

*"⁸ The beast that you saw **was**, and **is not**, and **will ascend out of the bottomless pit and go to perdition**. And those who dwell on the earth will marvel, whose names are not written in the Book of Life from the foundation of the world, when they see the beast that was, and is not, and yet is." – Revelation 17:8*

The real question about this passage is whether it is talking about Abbadon or some other demonic being **also** coming out of the pit. The trick to deciphering this passage is figuring out what in the world John meant by **was**, **is not** and **will ascend**. If I were to convert this passage into plain English, it would probably read something like this:

*"This beast that you saw **used to exist on the earth, isn't here right now, but will come out of the Abyss making a second appearance on the earth, and then finally end up in a place and condition of complete destruction and annihilation.**"*

In looking at the original Greek in this troublesome passage, I think I've captured what John was really saying. Given what we already know about **who** is currently in the Abyss, and **why** they are there, this passage now finally begins to make some sense. Was Abbadon one of the original angels assigned to this earth, probably as one of the original Watchers? Yes, he was. Was he also one of the angels who fell from grace by sinning against God and marrying human women, thus creating a hybrid race which would have eventually destroyed what God created? No doubt about it. Was he, like his cohorts, hurled into the Bottomless Pit until they could be brought to trial? Absolutely. So, in other words, **he used to exist on the earth**, and some narratives put him in charge of Ancient Egypt and Palestine. He **isn't here right now**, because he is trapped in infinity inside the black hole. He **will be coming back after the Abyss is opened** and will play a major role in the end times. And, finally, he will meet his end and find himself in "perdition", which almost always translates out as a **condition, not a place**. In this case, however, given that he will end up in the **Lake of Fire**, we can safely say that it is actually **both**.

At this point, it would seem that the evidence is pointing to Abbadon as the guilty party. However, there is another problem that knocks him out of contention. If you place this event properly in the timeline, it means that **this "beast"** can't be Abbadon, because **he doesn't come out of the Abyss** until either **Revelation Chapter 17** or **Revelation Chapter 13**, and Abbadon already made his guest appearance in **Revelation Chapter 9**. I know, I know. This gets terribly confusing. Even **I** get confused sometimes, so don't feel bad! And, no, I don't have it all figured out yet either! I would dare to say that **nobody**, not even **yours truly**, has all of this stuff **completely** right. **However...**

Using the three major rules of interpretation; that Revelation as well as all other Scripture is **literal, logical and chronological**, Abbadon must be ruled out as the demon spoken about in Revelation Chapter 17. Why? Because the passage clearly says that he **will** ascend out of the pit. Abbadon already **has** ascended out of the Abyss much, much earlier, in Revelation Chapter 9. Now, 8 Chapters

later, if **another** demon ascends out of the pit, it can't be him, because he is **already here**. And heaven only knows how many of these unholy creatures have been jammed down there all this time.

No sooner than we get **that** problem solved than **another** problem rears its ugly head. This "beast", demon or empire behind this demon is described as having **seven heads and ten horns**. Remember that one of the other rules of Biblical interpretation that we use is that when you link Scripture to Scripture, you do so by using common **symbols, words or phrases**. That means that this reference to seven heads and ten horns must be cross referenced to other places in the Bible where an identical image can be found. Are there such references? Would I bring it up if there weren't? (Go on ahead and slap me. I've got it coming for being such a smart-aleck!) Yes, Virginia, there is a Santa Claus! In fact, this same symbol can be found in several places in Scripture in addition to this reference. The closest reference is also found in Revelation:

*"¹ Then I stood on the sand of the sea. And I saw **a beast rising up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns**, and on his horns ten crowns, and on his heads a blasphemous name. ² Now the beast which I saw was like a leopard, his feet were like the feet of a bear, and his mouth like the mouth of a lion. The dragon gave him his power, his throne, and great authority. ³ And I saw one of his heads as if it had been mortally wounded, and his deadly wound was healed. And all the world marveled and followed the beast. ⁴ So they worshiped the dragon who gave authority to the beast; and they worshiped the beast, saying, 'Who is like the beast? Who is able to make war with him?' "*

- Revelation 13:1-4

OK. Now we've got a problem. Using correct rules of **hermeneutics** (interpreting the Bible), we have to link **symbol to symbol**. That means that the Beast listed in Revelation 17 should, by all reasonable definition, be the same as the Beast listed in Revelation 13. But that immediately causes a problem. The Beast in Revelation 17 comes out of the **Abyss**, while the Beast in Revelation 13 comes out of the **sea**. Hmm... What to do???

To further complicate the matter, this same symbol of **seven heads and ten horns** appears elsewhere in the Bible, in the writings of the prophet Daniel:

*"⁷ 'After this I saw in the night visions, and behold, a **fourth beast, dreadful and terrible, exceedingly strong**. It had huge iron teeth; it was devouring, breaking in pieces, and trampling the residue with its feet. It was different from all the beasts that were before it, and it had **ten horns**. ⁸ I was considering the horns, and there was another horn, a little one, coming up among them, before whom three of the first horns were plucked out by the roots. And there, in this horn, were eyes like the eyes of a man, and a mouth speaking pompous words.' "* -- Daniel 7:7-8

Well, we've got another match, kinda. There is no reference to the **seven heads**, but there is a reference to the **ten horns**. So it's possible that the beast of Daniel 7 is the same as the Beast of Revelation 13 and the Beast of Revelation 17. All of that sounds like it puts itself in a gift box, neatly ties itself up in a little pink bow and sits itself at our feet. But there's a problem. A **huge** problem. Most Biblical expositors link all three passages with the Anti-Christ. And that can't be right. Why? Because of each respective creature's **point of origin**. Daniel's Beast comes **out of the sea**, or Mediterranean Ocean. The sea is generally symbolic of the peoples of the earth. The Revelation Chapter 13 Beast also comes **out of the sea**, so there would appear to be a very high probability of a match between the two passages. But the Revelation 17 Beast comes **out of the Abyss**, and the two places are **clearly** not the same place. One possible explanation might be that one of the beasts is representative of the **demon itself**, while the other reference is to the **empire which he controls**. In Daniel Chapter 7, that is the clearly given explanation for that beast symbol. In Revelation Chapter 13 it strongly appears that that beast also refers to a world empire, for reasons which we will get into in great detail when we finally get to Chapter 13, the actual **Time of the Beast** itself. And Revelation 17? Well, guess what, boys and girls? That beast **also seems to refer to an empire!** Remember, the Great Whore of Babylon sits upon it. And later on in the chapter, more and more details are given which clearly point to it being an empire. Let's take just a moment and look at some of the references.

"⁹ Here is the mind which has wisdom: The **seven heads** are **seven mountains on which the woman sits**.¹⁰ There are also **seven kings**. Five have fallen, one is, and the other has not yet come. And when he comes, he must continue a short time.¹¹ **The beast that was, and is not, is himself also the eighth, and is of the seven, and is going to perdition.**" – Revelation 17:9-11

And there's more...

"¹² The **ten horns** which you saw are **ten kings** who have received no kingdom as yet, but they receive authority for one hour **as kings with the beast**.¹³ These are of one mind, and they **will give their power and authority to the beast**.¹⁴ These will make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb will overcome them, for He is Lord of lords and King of kings; and those who are with Him are called, chosen, and faithful." – Revelation 17:12-14

And even more...

"¹⁵ Then he said to me, '**The waters which you saw, where the harlot sits, are peoples, multitudes, nations, and tongues**.¹⁶ And **the ten horns which you saw on the beast**, these will **hate the harlot, make her desolate and naked, eat her flesh and burn her with fire**.¹⁷ For God has put it into their hearts to fulfill His purpose, to be of one mind, and to give their kingdom to the beast, until the words of God are fulfilled.¹⁸ And **the woman whom you saw is that great city which reigns over the kings of the earth.**'" – Revelation 17:15-17

Got all of that? Good. Now **explain it to me**. Because even to me it doesn't make complete sense. The **woman must be the city of Rome and the Beast the Roman Empire**, because, other than Cincinnati, OH, near which we live, it is the only significant city in the world built on 7 hills or mountains. But it is also **seven kings**, which could either represent seven **concurrent kings or countries** (they are all in existence at the same time) or **seven linear historical kings** (they happened at different places in history). Plus, the beast that was, and is not, and will be (remember him?) just happens to be an **eighth** king, but is one of the seven.

Sheesh! There is no way we are going to resolve the ultimate identity of Abaddon in just a few short pages. We haven't even scratched the surface of the research I did on this article. A great deal of this will have to wait until we discuss Chapters 13 and 17. What's the bottom line, then? That Abaddon is clearly an extremely powerful demon, perhaps one of the leaders or princes. That he, along with the others, sinned against God back in Genesis regarding human women and got themselves locked up in jail. That in the Book of Revelation there is finally a jailbreak, during which he comes out. His primary role is to kill the two Witnesses or super-prophets, but even then they don't stay dead. He is not Satan himself, nor is he the Anti-Christ. For right now, let's allow that synopsis to stand. We'll dig in this hole until your little knuckles are raw later on, but for right now, it's time to move on, because tomorrow we have to figure out what it takes to be a **Math Whiz!**

Day 15 ~ Math Whiz!



“¹³ Then the sixth angel sounded: And I heard a voice from the four horns of the golden altar which is before God,¹⁴ saying to the sixth angel who had the trumpet, ‘Release the four angels who are bound at the great river Euphrates.’¹⁵ So the four angels, who had been prepared for the hour and day and month and year, were released to kill a third of mankind.¹⁶ Now the number of the army of the horsemen was two hundred million; I heard the number of them.” – Revelation 9:13-16

In yesterday’s *E-Pistle*, we had to take a close gander at some very creepy looking critters. They were part locust, part scorpion and part horse. Boy, aren’t you glad that we don’t have to look at anything like that anymore? From now on, everything is back to normal and just plain hunky-dory – **NOT!!!** We have merely uncovered the tip of the iceberg. It is all downhill from here, folks! Things are going to get weirder and weirder and weirder...

We have now come to the beginning of the **6th Trumpet / 2nd Woe** inside of the **7th Seal**. What do we immediately encounter? **More demonic activity!**

“¹³ Then the **sixth angel** sounded: And I heard a voice from the four horns of the golden altar which is before God,¹⁴ saying to the sixth angel who had the trumpet, ‘**Release the four angels who are bound at the great river Euphrates.**’¹⁵ So the four angels, **who had been prepared for the hour and day and month and year**, were released **to kill a third of mankind**.¹⁶ Now the number of the army of the horsemen was **two hundred million**; I heard the number of them.¹⁷ And thus I saw the horses in the vision: those who sat on them had **breastplates of fiery red, hyacinth blue, and sulfur yellow**; and the **heads of the horses** were like the **heads of lions**; and **out of their mouths came fire, smoke, and brimstone**.¹⁸ By **these three plagues a third of mankind was killed**—by the fire and the smoke and the brimstone which came out of their mouths.¹⁹ For their power is in their mouth and in their tails; for **their tails are like serpents, having heads**; and with them they do harm.²⁰ But **the rest of mankind**, who were not killed by these plagues, **did not repent** of the works of their hands, that they should not **worship demons**, and idols of gold, silver, brass, stone, and wood, which can neither see nor hear nor walk.²¹ And **they did not repent of their murders or their sorceries or their sexual immorality or their thefts.**” – Revelation 9:13-21

More fallen angels! Man, they must be all over the place! The vast majority had been safely tucked away in the Abyss for untold thousands of years, out of sight and out of mind, but these four had been bound near the Euphrates River. It’s interesting to note that they were bound there for the **hour and day and month and year** in which they are to make their grand entrance. There are times when we all, me included, struggle with wondering if God has forgotten about us, our prayers, our hopes and our desires. Frankly, there are times when I get sick of hearing, “*God loves you and has a wonderful plan for your life!*” Wait just a minute! I don’t doubt that God loves me, but what if His plans for me including suffering and dying for the sake of Christ? That’s not exactly a wonderful plan, is it? When people come up to me and mindlessly spout this, I want to grab them and somehow walk them, step after agonizing step, through the last three years of my life, complete with heart attack, malignant, inoperable cancer, betrayal by my junior pastor, the church I was pastoring and the District Superintendent who smiled and told me everything was just fine and that I had nothing to worry about except getting well when he was already meeting and planning to replace me and on and on and on...

You have no way of knowing what a “wonderful plan for my life” He has had for me over these last three years. And I just found out that I may have to undergo heart surgery again. Do I love Him? With all my heart? Yes and yes. Do I struggle with what has happened over the last three years? Yes, also. I would be guilty of lying to you and myself if I put on a happy face and told you how I have

trusted Him without a shadow of a doubt, bless God and Halleluia! There may be some people out there like that, but I am not one of them. I have high expectations of a God who makes the kind of promises that He does in His book. And I get very low when those high expectations are not met. And sometimes very angry, just like the older son in the parable of the Prodigal Son. We all concentrate on the young, foolish son who finally came to his senses and came home. But we forget that the older son had been busting his chops for the old man year after year with no apparent reward. Now, this stupid little snot-nose has finally pulled himself out of the pig sty long enough to realize that the grass that was greener was on the side of the fence belonging to his old man's farm. And everybody was making a big whoop-de-do over the little punk, while the older brother had nothing to show for everything he had done faithfully and without argument or disobedience to their dad. I understand why he got mad. I get mad sometimes, too, when I see God healing people that I pray for whom I know are living lives of compromise and sin while my own hands and feet are still in agony. I feel like that older brother. And when I see the incredible raft of scandals that has broken out in the last few years inside of the whole Word-Faith-Charismatic-Full Gospel-"Spirit-Filled"-Name-it-and-claim-it world, I get mad all over again. I look at Juanita Bynum, so-called prophetess of holiness and sanctification, whom I looked up to and who calmly admitted that to please her moronic "bishop" of a husband and turn him on during sexual foreplay, she would curse and talk like a hooker, and I get mad. I look at Randy and Paula White and their Florida mega-church and Paula's 2.1 million dollar penthouse in New York and Randy's former porn star personal trainer and their sudden divorce and her rapid relocation to Texas to "sit under" another man's ministry, and I get mad. I look at "Archbishop" Earl Paulk and the constant lawsuits and allegations of sexual misconduct and his constant denials and the recent admission, confirmed by DNA testing, that his "nephew" is actually his own son and that he had conducted a 15-year-long dalliance with his brother's wife, and I get mad. I question how God could have such a "wonderful plan" for their sexual escapades and misconduct and yet bless them with fabulous wealth and fame. And I sit at my computer with a left leg that feels partially dead most of the time, and feet that can't feel the floor most of the time and the prospect of yet another trip to the hospital, and I get mad. Frankly, I came very close this week to scrapping the entire project. I commented sarcastically last night, while talking to my wife in bed, *"It seems anymore that in order to be blessed by God you've got to be a pervert, a liar and an adulterer!"* shocked? Or have you, too, struggled with all the things that are going on in the world and the church and wondered where this "wonderful plan" happens to be? Have you, too, tried to work through heartache, pain and suffering and wondered where His "wonderful plan" for you was at that particular moment in time?

Am I going to quit? Nah! You wouldn't be reading this now if I had. What else would I do? I love what Peter said in the Gospel of John. Jesus had frankly gotten really, really tired of the "bread and miracles" crowd who wanted what He could **do**, but had no interest in being like He **was**. So He deliberately decided to thin the crowd out a little bit. Give them a little forearm shiver, if you will. So He told them, *"You can't be any part of Me and what I am doing unless you **drink My blood and eat my flesh!**"* Well..... I'll bet **that** played well with the health, wealth and prosperity crowd! Their response? *"He's talking mean to us! We don't wanna hear it! Bwaaaaaa!!!"* The disciples were nearly choked by the cloud of dust generated by the mooring crowd of departing **former** members of His ministry. When all the smoke cleared, Jesus looked straight at the twelve and said, *"Well, are you going to leave, too?"* It was almost as if He were daring them to leave, testing them to see if their hearts were right. Would they follow Him **regardless** of the circumstances? Had they come to a point, like Paul would later, where they could say, *"...abase or abound, I have learned **in whatever circumstances I find myself, to be content!**"*? Peter looked at Jesus, then looked around at his fellow disciples, **none of whom had made any move for the door**, and said, with incredulity in His voice, *"Lord, **where else would we go? You're the only one who has the Words of life and truth!**"* Sigh. Where else would I go? I've followed Him far too long, now. And, as one old fisherman once said, *"Effen yer out fishin', and ya finds out that the boat yer's in has sprung a leak, jest remember that the shore ya's rowin' terwards is closer than the shore ya's left behind!"*

Somehow, someway, even though I don't have a clue how, God **knows exactly what He is doing**. And He is under no moral, Biblical obligation to explain it all to me, either. When Job demanded a hearing before Him to prove that he hadn't done anything wrong, he got the shock of his life. You would think that when the Lord showed up, He would have comforted Job and told him that it was all right and that He understood and that He had a **wonderful plan for his life**. Instead, from Chapter

38 all the way to Chapter 42, God beats Job up verbally and asks him just exactly who he thinks he is! Of course, when He gets done upbraiding Job, He then turns to Job's three quivering, weasel friends and tells them that they better have Job pray for them, **pronto!** And when Job gets done praying for the very people who had bad-mouthed him for most of the book, God restores everything that Job had lost back to him double, except for his ten kids. Instead of giving him twenty children, God limits the suffering of Job's equally bad-mouthing wife by only making her bear **another** ten to replace the ten they lost.

So it is with these four demonic, fallen angels. Why on earth weren't they pitched into the Abyss at the same time as their wicked brethren? **Only God knows.** Why are they released, of all things, to deliberately be allowed to kill **one third** of all humanity? **Only God knows. But God does know, exactly, specifically what needs to be done to bring ALL THINGS into a matter of complete resolution.** And even though we **don't** know and **can't** see how any of this makes sense and **don't** want to participate in this game of madness any longer, yet He **does** know and **does** care and **does** understand. He just has to allow the game to be played out till the final buzzer sounds and the gun goes off and the fat lady sings. I just recently saw a really cute end-of-the-world cartoon. Two guys are standing and discussing the terrible state of the world today, and one guy comments, "*Well, you know, like they say: 'It ain't over till the Fat Lady sings!'*" His friend gets this terrified look on his face and quickly taps him on the shoulder, pointing for him to turn around and look up. When he does, the sky is full of very hefty operatic sopranos in parachutes, all coming down from the sky, singing as they come. Well, I thought it was cute. No more jokes? Just Bible stuff? Aw, gee! Do I gotta? No, no, don't close the book! We'll get back on course. Sometimes I have to be a little Goofy ("*Gawrsh, Mickey! A'heulk!*") in order to deal with the not-so-goofy things that happen to me.

There is a real, deep theological thought I would like to think, however. And I bet you never think it before. (*Oooooooh!*) Above all else, **God is a mathematician.** Yeah, I know He's the Creator, Redeemer and Savior of the world. He's my Soon and Coming King. He's my Healer, my Deliverer, my Sustainer, the Word, the Lamb slain before the foundation of the world, and all of those other things. I've even got a big poster in my dining room, nattily framed and bordered, that lists 53 of the Names of Jesus found in the Bible. How do I know for sure? Guess! Yeah, I got up, walked to the dining room, and counted them! I told you that I do extensive research for these articles! How do I know that God is a mathematician? Consider the following mathematical thoughts "think" in the Bible. Everything about the Scriptures is mathematical. At the beginning, before there was even time to be before, a Trinitarian Being existed whom we now call God. He/They had **three** dimensions to Him/Them, yet were and still are and have always been and will always be **one**. Yet in the end, They will be **four**. Huh? What do you mean by that, Pastor Ray? Just hang on to your hats, folks. I'm a-gonna take you on a ride you ain't never rode a'fore!

The two base numbers around which the universe is created are the numbers **three** and **four**. What is three **plus** four? **Seven**. What is three **times** four? **Twelve**. Tell me; are three, seven and twelve important numbers in the Bible? Yes? Correct. The Godhead, as I have already mentioned, is Triune. Now think about how many times 3, 3½, 7, and 12 are used. Don't forget **10**, either. 10 is actually a multiple; 3+3+4. Then, of course, there are **40**, which is 4x10, and **70**, which is 7x10. And don't forget **144,000**, which is 12 x 12 x 1,000. The Bible hardly has a significant number in it that isn't either 3 or some derivative of 3 and 4. Well, Pastor Ray, I understand what the **3** is all about, but what's the deal with the number **4**? Hold on for just a second longer, and I will tell you. I want to do some higher math for just a second.

Hopefully, you have heard of the mathematical value, **pi**. Pi is the ratio of the circumference of a circle to its diameter. Pi is always the same number, no matter which circle you use to compute it. And the area of a circle is pi times the square of the length of the radius, or "pi r squared". Typically, we represent **pi** as 3.14, or, if you are mathematically inclined, 3.14159, or, if you are **really** mathematically inclined, 3.14159265358979323846. If you are fanatically mathematically inclined, scientists using high speed computers have calculated it all the way out to the 400th **billion** power. The maddening thing about **pi** in a base 10 system is that it will **never** resolve out. It is like 1/3rd or 2/3rd's, it's an **infinite decimal**. But here's a fascinating little scenario: In a **base 12** system, all three values resolve out within something like four digits. Now, what the heck am I talking about when

I say **base 10** and **base 12**? Unfortunately for you, we have just turned the programmer in me loose. Run for cover! In any numbering system, certain things are always true: **first of all, the highest possible value of a single digit is always one less than the base value. Second of all, the value of each successive digit is always the next power of the base.** What on earth am I talking about? Let me explain. In our normal base 10 numbering system, the highest possible value for a single digit is the number **9**. To represent the **next highest value**, we have to go to **two digits**, or **1-0**, or **ten**. Now you may say that this is obvious, but that's only because all you've ever been trained in is using a base ten system. The ancient Mayans used a **base 64** system. That's why they were conquered by the Spanish conquistadors. When Cortez said he would count to ten before shooting, the Mayans thought he meant to 64, and when the Spanish muskets went off, the Mayans were still counting. Please don't cry like that. I'll stop telling bad jokes just as soon as I count to 64, er ah, 10! Here's how other systems look, using the same rule:

Base 2 (Binary)	Base 8 (Octal)	Base 10 (Decimal)	Base 12 (Duodecimal)	Base 16 (Hexadecimal)
1	7	9	11 (C)	15(F)

So, when you count in Binary, or Base 2, you count **0, 1, 1-0, 1-1, 1-0-0, 1-0-1, 1-1-0, 1-1-1**. Now, I have no doubt that for 99% of you, when I just said that, you went "*Huh? What?*", and I understand that you **don't** understand. To help you understand a little better, a **0** is just that, **zero**. A **1** is just that, a **one**. But in binary, the fundamental language of all computer systems, something can only either be **on** or **off**. An **on** condition is a **one**. An **off** condition is a **zero**. Computers are really, really dumb. They can only count to one. But they can count to one really, really, really, really fast. Everything you see on your TV, your stereo, your VCR, your cell phone, your computer, and anything else electronic you own or interact with all resolves back down to dumb little ones and zeroes. Since there is no number **two** in binary, you have to use **two digits** to represent it, or **1-0**. A **three** has to turn on the **two digit** and the **one digit**, or **1-1**. a **four** has to move to using **three digits**, turning on the **four digit**, and leaving the **two digit** and the **one digit** off, for a value of **1-0-0**.

Doubtless by now your head is spinning. To further confuse the issue, here's how the **powers** work in various numeric systems:

Binary:	1 ; 2 ; 4 ; 8 ; 16 ; 32 ; 64 ; 128 ; 256 ; 512 ; 1,024 ; 2,048 ; 4,096...
Octal:	1 ; 8 ; 64 ; 512 ; 4,096...
Decimal:	1 ; 10 ; 100 ; 1,000 ; 10,000 ; 100,000 ; 1,000,000 ; 10,000,000...
Duodecimal:	1 ; 12 ; 144 ; 1,728 ; 20,736...
Hexadecimal:	1 ; 16 ; 256 ; 4,096 ; 65,536...

Notice how each successive number is a **multiple of the previous digit?** Except for the number one, which is where all numbering systems have to start, each successive digit out is the previous value multiplied by the base value, be it two or eight or ten or twelve or sixteen. When I say that a number in base 10 is **256**, I am actually saying that I have **2 hundreds, 5 tens and 6 ones**. The same number in base 8 would be **400**, or **4 sixty-fours, 0 eights and 0 ones**. In Binary or Base Two, the number becomes a nightmare. It is **1-0-0-0-0-0-0-0-0-0**, or **1 256's, 0 128's, 0 64's, 0 32's, 0 16's, 0 8's, 0 4's, 0 2's and 0 ones**. On the other hand, if I use **Hexadecimal**, which is what most computers use as shorthand when talking to us dumb humans, it comes out as **1-0-0**. If you look at the list above, I'm sure you can figure that one out yourself.

Why did I just torment you like that? Because God is a pure mathematician who works **exclusively in base 12**. Why, then, do we use base 10? Gee, I don't know. I guess you could always count your blessings that you don't have to know why, but then you might have to use your **fingers and toes!** Duh! Why does God use base 12? Well, remember that nasty little problem with $1/3^{\text{rd}}$ and $2/3^{\text{rd}}$ s? It doesn't happen in base 12. What about the value of **pi**? Same thing. Almost all geometric fractions that are infinite in base 10 resolve out in about 4 digits or less in base 12. In fact, while I was researching this little vignette, I stumbled across a nifty little web site called base12.org. It is

subtitled, "Why God really should've given us six fingers!" and spends a lot more time extolling base 12 thinking than we are going to spend today.

Now, all of that is well and good, but we still haven't gotten to the part about the **number 4!** OK. I've tormented you enough. Here's the deal. Here's why God absolutely insists on using **3 and 4**. And now, we have finally returned, at long last, to theology! Hooray! At the beginning, and in eternity **before the beginning, there were Three that were One**. They consisted of **the Lord**, who would eventually become known to us as **the Father; the Word**, who would eventually become known to us as **the Only Begotten or Naturally Born Son**; and **the Spirit**. Just remember, **the Lord** doesn't become **the Father** until He **becomes** an actual father in the time stream. When does He become an actual father in the time stream? When Jesus is born of Mary via the Virgin Birth, changing the relationship of **the Word** with the Lord to the relationship of being **the Son**. Did you just follow that? Or do you think you're still doing binary math? Actually, I have just dumped one of the most profound theological statements on you that I ever could. Understanding that their relationship **changed forever** when Christ was born of Mary is the key to understanding that **your relationship** with God can **change forever** in the same way via the **New Birth**, or being **born again**, the birth from above, the birth of the Spirit. If The Lord had not first established that **a fundamental relationship was capable of changing** in this new space-time-continuum universe that He had established by **personally changing His relationship with the Word to that of a Father with a Son, then no other changes are possible regarding the Spirit realm**. Man, I just took you deep! I am teaching under the anointing right now. I am showing you things that transcend time and space and little foolish things like what we eat or drink or how we dress or how we sing. None of that is of any significance whatsoever. If God can **change His own internal relationship**, then He can change **His relationship with His procreated beings called men**. Otherwise, just forget about redeeming us from the curse. God had to be able to **redefine the relationship from Creator and creation to Father and son**. Are you getting this? See, it was worth the torment of walking through binary math. Gag! Ah, well! We all have to suffer a little before the glory comes! Once He had **an only begotten Son**, one that was naturally born into humanity as a man and yet retained His purity while divesting Himself of His Divinity temporarily, then and only then would it be possible, **using the only naturally begotten or born Son of God as a prototype or first fruit to now incorporate fallen humanity back into the Godhead through the process of adoption through regeneration using the New Birth!**

Now, here's what I want you to do: (1) Stop for just a second. (2) Go back and re-read that last paragraph **very carefully** until you **fully** understand it. I really don't care if you **ever** get the stuff about numbering systems. I **do care very much** that you get what I just said about changing the fundamental nature of a relationship for all eternity, and get it completely.

Now, get ready. Here comes the final bomb on this subject: **Why the number 4**. Right now, through the process of the New Birth, God is busy assembling a **composite being just like Himself**. He is, after all, a composite being, consisting of three components which are also actually one. Remember, in the multiverse in which He has his base of existence, **something may be more than one thing at one time**. In our universe, something may only **be one thing at a time**. I can be **here** or I can be **there**. But I can't be both **here and there**. A switch can be **on** or it can be **off**. But it can't be both **on and off** at the same time. Not so where God lives. In His multiverse (notice, **multi**-verse, not **uni**-verse! Get the hint?), **something may be many things simultaneously and yet retain their individual characteristics**. Somebody congratulate me. I just solved the mystery of the Trinity that has bugged all our **uni**-verse oriented philosophers and theologians for all of history. I have just ended all the stupid squabbled between the Trinity and Oneness folks. Guess what? **You're both right!!!**

God is busy creating a new composite Spirit-based being using a universe in which things are capable of changing. That new entity is not called the Church. It is called **the Bride**. Remember how in Episode Four we clearly established that the church is a testing ground out of which will be brought a Bride, and it is that Bride which will be raptured, because **her** garments will be pure and spotless, and **her** gown will be without blemish or wrinkle, unlike the trashy, dirty, carnal, unclean, ungodly, sexually immoral, impure, cursing, incestuous church referred to earlier in this article. Trust me, dear friends,

nothing unclean or impure is going into heaven alive. There are two ways to solve that problem. The first solution is **to die!** When you die, your ugly, nasty flesh finally separates from your Spirit and it can return to heaven. The second solution, and the one which must be used by all of us who hope to be raptured, is that **our flesh is going to have to be totally crucified before it is mutated or translated in a resurrection body capable of being carried up into Heaven.** It is an absolutely horrifying thought to imagine what an **unclean, impure resurrection body could do in the way of damage in heaven.** Jesus had to purify the Temple not made with hands up there anyway with His own blood **once.** Ain't gonna happen **twice!** That's why, in the Second Resurrection, all unclean, impure, ungodly people end up with resurrection bodies, but in the Lake of Fire!

We're still trying to get to that **number 4 thing.** As He has been going along, He has been constructing this **new composite Spirit entity called the Bride.** At the end of time, when this space-time continuum which we know as the universe is destroyed, there will eventually be a **merger of composite beings.** The **Triune Being** which we know as **the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit** will add a **4th Eternal Being** into the Godhead. That 4th Eternal Being is **the Bride!** Now the Godhead will consist of **4 Beings: the Father, the Son, the Spirit and the Bride.** In the eternity and infinity that existed **before time** there were **THREE.** Now, in the eternity and infinity that will exist **after time** there will be **FOUR!** And so, being the perfect mathematician that He/They is, He/They designed a universe in which all mathematics, geometry, physics and the material universe that would flow from those equations would be based on the number **THREE** and the number **FOUR.** And you think God doesn't know what He is doing? Not sure if He has a handle on your life? Heck, I just typed myself right back into faith just expounding to you how deep, wonderful and mysterious He really is! I'm still mad as you-know-what at these people who have claimed to be our spiritual leaders yet have betrayed us, soiled their garments and the garments of Christ and brought the Gospel and the Cross into reproach, crucifying Christ all over again by their iniquity, but if they want to miss out on the Rapture and take their chances at the Great White Throne Judgment based on **their works,** all I can say is, "*God bless you and happy landing, Buddy!*" I certainly wouldn't want to take that kind of chance with **my** immortal soul. James said that **we who teach shall be judged with greater strictness.** Forget that **all grace** junk, particularly for those who taught it and calmly abused it, year after perverted year.

At the very best, they will have to stand before a **righteous judge** and watch **everything they have ever done burn up in the fire as their works are held out over the Lake of Fire to test them and see what manner of substance they are made of.** All of their ministries will burn up. Untold thousands, perhaps millions, who trusted them and looked to them and fell away when their secret sins were revealed will now end up in the Lake of Fire **because of them. To whom much is given, even more is required!** And **much** will be required of those who have been granted the **privilege and responsibility of leading God's people from Earth to Heaven.** "**Woe!**" said Jesus in referring to the Pharisees who **talked of heaven but lived like hell.** That statement still applies today to the leaders who have betrayed the church by their personal conduct. Ted Haggard, "**Woe!**" Paul Cain, "**Woe!**" Earl Paulk, "**Woe!**" Juanita Bynum, "**Woe!**" Roberts Leardon, "**Woe!**" Randy White, "**Woe!**" Paula White, "**Woe!**" And every other Christian leader to whom others look for spiritual guidance and leadership, who enjoy national and even global platforms from which to preach, teach and guide the church of Jesus Christ, yet have secret sin, unconfessed and unrepented, in their lives, "**Woe!**" If you do not repent, and do so quickly! And even so, "**Woe!**" on everything you have done while living this lie. **Nothing** hidden that will not be revealed. Nothing. **Nothing...**

I hate to end an article on such a strong note, but the prophetic anointing came on me as I wrote these last few paragraphs, and I had to pronounce what God told me to say, else I, too, would be held up over the Fires for my own disobedience. This is why, dear friends, even through I may grumble, grouse and *kvetch* from time to time, yet I am always the son who, even though he says he **won't** do the work, finally gets up and **takes care of business for his father.** And that's how the Father knows who His **real** children are, after all. Jesus said it best: "**If you love Me, you will obey My commandments**". Amen! Even so, Lord Jesus come, and come quickly, **to catch away your Bride!**

Day 16 – 200 Million Man Army



“¹⁶ Now the number of the army of the horsemen was two hundred million; I heard the number of them. ¹⁷ And thus I saw the horses in the vision: those who sat on them had breastplates of fiery red, hyacinth blue, and sulfur yellow; and the heads of the horses were like the heads of lions; and out of their mouths came fire, smoke, and brimstone. ¹⁸ By these three plagues a third of mankind was killed—by the fire and the smoke and the brimstone which came out of their mouths. ¹⁹ For their power is in their mouth and in their tails; for their tails are like serpents, having heads; and with them they do harm.” – Revelation 9:16-19

200 million men! Even today, the concept of an army that large is staggering. It's almost impossible for the average person to conceive of even a one million man army. The logistics to support and move such a force would be incomprehensible. To give you a basis for comparison, a few years ago an astute believer did some statistical analysis on what it would have taken to support the children of Israel while they were in the wilderness those 40 years. In contrast to what movie makers have often portrayed, it was no small band of refugees that fled Egypt on that fateful day. The book of Numbers gives us an accurate census of the people shortly after they had left Egypt, and once again before they entered into the Promised Land. That is, in fact, what the term *Numbers* is all about. It is the **numbering or taking census** of the people. How large was the group that fled Egypt? Well, let's take a quick look to see what the statistics say. In that first census, found in Numbers 1:1-54, the tallies for each tribe are listed, but nowhere are the numbers compiled into a total. That's where a little bit of work is required to see what is actually going on. All it takes is a sheet of lined paper (lines optional), a pencil and a calculator. Once you add up the tribal totals, you find that the total number of **men 20 years of age or older** was 603,550. If you add in the tribe of Levi, always excluded from military tallies because they belong exclusively to the Lord, you get a grand total of 625,823 men. Now, some supplemental math is required to estimate the full population. First of all, if there are 625,823 **men**, it only stands to reason that there must also be about 625,000 **women**, give or take a few. If we add 625,000 women to 625,000 men, we get a total of **1,250,000** adults over the age of 20. We are already over the one million marker, but we aren't done just yet. We have not accounted for all the children. We are used to the concept of 2½ children in a family, one for each car, plus a scooter. But in the rest of the world, such a ridiculously small number is a fantasy. In Haiti, it is not uncommon for a man to have as many as ten children by his wife, and a number of others by his "friends". Even in early America, the more children you had, the more workers you had to tend the fields of your farm. When I taught at Vincennes University Junior College, I had a co-worker, Ruth Kempf, who was one of 17 children. Her mother, a tiny, wiry woman, worked on the janitorial staff of the university. Even in her 70's she could work any of us into the ground. My own son-in-law, also from that same traditional, German Catholic, hard-working community, was one of 10. Given that, what does it say for our estimated census? We know that the longevity and vitality of our ancient ancestors far exceeded our own. Father Abraham only had two children up until the death of Sarah. But after she passed away at the age of 127, he remarried after a period of time to a woman named Keturah. She had none of the fertility problems of Sarah, and bore six more children to a man who lived to the ripe old age of 175. What should our estimate on the kids be? How about **ten kids per family**? That's not unreasonable, considering what Exodus says:

¹⁷ **But the children of Israel were fruitful and increased abundantly, multiplied and grew exceedingly mighty; and the land was filled with them.** ⁸ Now there arose a new king over Egypt, who did not know Joseph. ⁹ And he said to his people, 'Look, the people of the children of Israel are more and mightier than we; ¹⁰ come, let us deal shrewdly with them, lest they multiply, and it happen, in the event of war, that they also join our enemies and fight against us, and so go up out of the land.'

¹¹ Therefore they set taskmasters over them to afflict them with their burdens. And they built for Pharaoh supply cities, Pithom and Raamses. ¹² **But the more they afflicted them, the more they multiplied and grew. And they were in dread of the children of Israel.**" -- Exodus 1:7-12

As I have studied history, I have discovered an amazing fact: any people who become an **oppressor** see their fertility wane and their number of children **decrease**. Conversely, any people who become **oppressed** see their fertility and their number of children **increase**. Why is this so? I think that there are probably physical, economic and spiritual issues involved. Physically, an oppressor people tend to become soft and lazy, relying on the oppressed population for their physical labor. That means that the women of the oppressor tend to be weaker, less physically vital, and more vulnerable to problems during childbirth. It is also a cruel fact that the slave drivers often breed their slaves as if they were cattle, seeking greater fertility, strength and vitality. That's exactly what the White slave owners in the South did with their Negro slaves. We have the records of auctions and the writings of various individuals including such men as our own George Washington and Thomas Jefferson, both of whom owned slaves and had plantations. In fact, once Jefferson's wife died, a slave woman named Sally Hemmings became his de-facto wife, and, much like the largely unknown Keturah of Abraham's day, produced several children by Jefferson. When Hemmings' descendants rightfully demanded that they be included in the family reunions of the Jefferson family, a legal battle ensued, resulting in the exhuming of Jefferson's skeleton in order to make DNA determinations to see if the Hemmings family's claims were legitimate. As a result of this deliberate genetic manipulation by the slave owners, it created a subservient race which was physically superior in every way to their masters. I know that this is not politically correct, but it is nonetheless true. The dominance exhibited by Black and Black-Hispanic athletes in most sports is the genetic inheritance of the oppression of the forefathers by their White owners. The simple truth remains: White men can't jump. And now you know the reason why. If that previous statement hasn't offended you so much that you have throw the book into the trash can, let me give you the spiritual principle woven into all of this. Jesus clears says that the **first will be last and the last will be first**. God had a tendency to look down on all of the oppressed down through the ages and bless them. Eventually, the tide turns, and those on top end up on the bottom and vice versa. Prosperity means a relaxation of diligence. That produces slovenliness, which in turn produces inferior results, which in turn eventually put the individual back at the bottom of the heap.

Now, let's do the math a second time, factoring in the children. If we take **1.25 million people** and divide that number by **two** (one man for each woman), we get **625,000 couples**. If we exclude the very old, that number reduces perhaps down to about 500,000. If we then assume ten children per active couple, we end with the staggering number of another **5 million kids!** Too big for you to handle? OK, let's pare it down by half, to a mere **2.5 million children**. You have to admit that, using the statistics given us by the Bible, this has to be an extremely conservative number. Now we add those 2.5 million children to the 1.25 million adults and we get a total of **3.75 million people** who came out of Egypt. But we are not done yet.

If you were a slave back in those times, and suddenly the pronouncement went forth, "*All of you Hebrews, who worship the God Yahweh, get out of here! We no longer want you as slaves! We no longer want you in our country! You are free! Now get out of here and never let us see you again!*", how long would it take for you to realize that even if you **weren't** Hebrew, now would be a great time to convert? If I opened the doors of any prison in America and said, "*Everyone who is a Christian is free to go!*" how many of those prisoners would suddenly find religion? So it was at the time of the Exodus.

" ³⁷ Then the children of Israel journeyed from Rameses to Succoth, about **six hundred thousand men** on foot, besides children. ³⁸ **A mixed multitude went up with them also**, and flocks and herds—a great deal of livestock." -- Exodus 12:37-38

In case you wanted to quibble with me over my original number of around 625,000 men, there is supplemental confirmation of the figure. However, it also says that a **mixed multitude** went out with them when they left. We've already explained why this would be so. This is, incidentally, where Moses met the little Black Cushite girl that he married after he divorced Zipporah, the mother of his two sons. When Miriam, his sister, gave him grief about the **Black** girl he had married, God punished her by

making her own skin ashen **white** by giving her leprosy for seven days. Don't believe me? Check it out in Numbers 12:1-15. And remember that this is a **White boy** telling you about it. God can't **stand** racism. In Revelation 7:9, it says that the Bride will be made up of **every nation, kindred, tribe and tongue**. Better get used to it, folks! Your next door neighbor in the New Jerusalem will probably be of a skin color not like yours. If there are any vestiges of racism left inside of you, better get rid of them in a hurry (at least before you are raptured!).

How many people were in the **mixed multitude**? Hard to say, but it is reasonable to assume that perhaps as many as a **million more** people left Egypt with the children of Israel when they hurried out of town the morning after that first Passover. That would push our logistics total to **4.75 million**, and we are estimating conservatively at every turn! This is also why, by the way, God had to hold the Egyptian army at bay **all night long** (Exodus 14:19-24) while the people crossed over **Yam Suph** or the **Sea of Land's End**. Not **Yam Suph** or the **Sea of Reeds**. Remember, there are **no vowels in Hebrew**. If there had been a Hebrew equivalent of *Wheel of Fortune* back then, they would forever be buying a vowel! I've talked about the difference in the translation in *Episode One – The Revelation of Jesus Christ*. The underwater land bridge at the southernmost point in the Gulf of Aquabah is still there, albeit a little bit damaged after British demolitions experts blew a hole in it in the 1920's because their massive oil tankers couldn't get through.

Finally, we have a number! And what a number it is. It is not unrealistic to think that **five million people** came out of Egypt on that fateful day. How amazing! But in solving one problem, we have once again successfully created a second problem: how on earth do we **feed** all these people? Using an estimate of two to three million people, the Quartermaster General of the Army once estimated that it would take **1,500 tons of food each day** to feed the people. It would also have taken two freight trains, each a mile long, to carry all that food. It would have taken an additional **4,000 tons of wood** to cook the food. And if they had also wanted enough water to drink, cook and wash a few dishes, it would have taken **11 million gallons of water**, carried by a freight train with tank cars, three miles long. At night, when they camped, they would have occupied a space the size of the state of Rhode Island to pitch their tents. But that's for **only** two or three million. Now that we have a more accurate figure, we have to **double** the numbers we just went through. Imagine!

Why do I tell you all this? **To help you to understand the logistical problems associated with moving an army consisting of 200 million men!** Even if their steeds are demons, the riders are still human, and, as such, have all the physical needs of food, clothing and shelter required by all men. Clearly, it will take quite some time for this army to move from the East to a point just south of Jerusalem for what will become known as the Battle of Jehoshaphat. We'll discuss the actual battle in a later in *Episode Six – Invasion from Outer Space*. But there is one additional question that we can address today: **where is this human/demon army going to come from?**

In order to answer that question, we must ask yet another question: what nations in the world would be capable of supporting an army of such magnitude? In researching this question, I happened upon yet another fascinating set of facts. It seems that the Earth of Jesus' time only had a **total** population of about **150 million**, largely centered in China. It would not be until the 1300's that the world population would double to 300 million. By 1700, the population had doubled again, to 600 million, concentrated in Europe, India and China. By 1800, the population had skyrocketed to 900 million, and only 100 years after that, it had grown to 1.6 billion. Only 50 years later, the population was at 2.4 billion, and only 35 years after that, it had exploded to the staggering total of 5 billion. The current world population as I write this in 2007 is sitting at about 6.6 billion, and we expect to break the 8 billion barrier sometime between 2020 and 2050, depending on whose estimates you take.

It is hard for us to imagine a 200 million man army today. How much more fantastic and literally impossible would it have been for Satan to have mustered a 200 million man army during an era when there were only 150 million souls total in the whole world? If we take the Word of God as **literal, logical and chronological**, any interpretation of the events of Revelation placing their fulfillment during the first Century are quite impossible. There simply weren't enough people alive to carry the project off.

This places us clearly in today's world, poised for and, in the case of the Muslim world, ready, eager and attempting to bring about Armageddon, the end of the world. Our question, however, is not concerning **when**, it is concerning **where**.

To understand what nation or nations must be the source from which this army comes, we must once again go back to the **original language** of the New Testament, *Koine Greek*. If we turn to the passages in question, we have to do some connecting of dots, passage to passage, in order to figure things out. Let's go to our starting Scripture.

"¹³ Then the sixth angel sounded: And I heard a voice from the four horns of the golden altar which is before God, ¹⁴ saying to the sixth angel who had the trumpet, 'Release the **four angels** who are bound **at the great river Euphrates**.' ¹⁵ So the four angels, who had been prepared for the hour and day and month and year, were released **to kill a third of mankind**. ¹⁶ Now **the number of the army of the horsemen was two hundred million**; I heard the number of them." -- Revelation 9:13-16

If we were to condense this passage down, it would read something like this: **four angels or demons are currently bound near the Euphrates River. They will be released. Their job is to kill 1/3rd of all mankind by assembling a 200 million man army.**

Remember that even the most powerful demons are somewhat limited in their power. Granted, a single angel of the Lord could kill 185,000 Assyrian officers overnight as that mighty army besieged Jerusalem. But even individual angels, un-fallen and thus still retaining all the glory and might of their office, still have boundaries. It would be impossible for these four demons to kill 1/3rd of mankind unless they enlisted some help. That is, after all, how the devil operates even today. There is very little he can do without the assistance of humanity. The unenviable jobs of murdering, lying and stealing belong largely to the domain of men. Even though demons do kill through sickness, it would be interesting to compare the number of deaths globally which occur by "natural" causes versus those caused by the hand of man. If we then adjust the figures to reflect the number of deaths that occur by reason of starvation, bad sanitation, STD's and other human-related factors, I rather suspect that men make Satan's work far easier than it should be.

Having been released at the Euphrates, these demons then have to travel to the place where they will do their recruiting. In order to find out where **that** is, we must move forward in Revelation seven chapters.

"¹² Then the sixth angel poured out his bowl on the great river **Euphrates**, and **its water was dried up**, so **that the way of the kings from the east might be prepared**." -- Revelation 16:12

Remember that the four demons were originally bound **at** the Euphrates. Also remember that in linking passages throughout Scripture, we link by **symbol** or by **phrase**. In this case, it is a **place**, the Euphrates River itself. Having originated **from** the region of the Euphrates, they now return **to** the Euphrates. I can honestly say, knowing what I know about demons, that they do tend to be territorial in nature. In order of preference, demons seem to prefer **people, animals, places and things**, in that order. Not all demons dwell inside humans. Many travel with humans. Some, on the other hand, seem to prefer a "haunt", a place which often had significance to their most recent host. Perhaps some day I will be able to write yet another book about what I have learned about them during my 30-odd years of ministry. I've had some very interesting and really strange experiences in that respect.

Once they return, we see that they are associated with the kings or rulers **from the east**. If we look that phrase up in the **Blue Letter Bible**, we find that original *Koine Greek* for that expression is **apo anatole**, or literally, **from the rising of the sun**. This helps some, but only a little. Remember, that this is being written by a man living in 1st Century Asia Minor, to whom all the lands of the Middle East and the Far East would have been considered as **anatole**. It is a fascinating observation that there is actually an **Anatolia**, which is the eastern part of Turkey or Asia Minor. No doubt there is a common root word involved there, but Turkey is **clearly** not the candidate of the hour. Any nation of coalition of nations must be large enough to **still** have 200 million men of military age **after** all of the destruction that has already taken place. Remember, we've already gone through the first six Seals and are into

the 7th Seal at this point in time, and a staggering number of humans have already lost their lives. Some authors point to the Middle East and the Arab/Muslim nations as the source for this army. I disagree, for the following reason. Remember that the four demons have been bound near the Euphrates River. Since they are going to recruit the Kings of the Rising of the Sun that must mean that they are going to have to travel **to the east** in order to do the recruiting. In studying a map of the Euphrates River, it seems logical to me that they must currently be bound on the **western shore** of the Euphrates River, in the region historically known as Mesopotamia, the cradle of civilization, and a place where the worship of various gods flourished for many thousands of years. If these demons were recruiting among the nations of the Middle East, they would have to neglect the Muslim nations to the west of them. In Revelation Chapter 16 they return with the full army in tow. With that in mind, only two nations present themselves as legitimate contenders: **India** and **China**. India and China were two of the first three locations where human populations began to increase. India has a current population slightly over **one billion**, while China leads the world, just ahead of India, with **1.3 billion** people. Clearly, both nations have over 500 million men, out of which a military force of 200 million could easily be drafted. But neither nation has to carry the full burden of mounting this massive military force. Remember that the Scriptures say the **kings** of the rising of the sun. The Greek words for **king** and **country** come from the same root word, not surprisingly. After all, other than the Greek city-states and Rome prior to its imperial period, almost all nations have been ruled by a king or queen. So to say that the 200 million man army comes from the kings of the east clearly implies that more than one nation is contributing to the task. With that thought, we have to exclude India as the leader of the pack. Although India has a common border with China, and may well contribute soldiers to the army, I don't see it as a likely candidate. I have been to India, and, frankly, the Indian people are not by nature a warlike people. Yes, there have been many wars in her history. And yes, many conflicts still exist between the Hindu and Muslim populations there. But you have to ask yourself, "*Who is her hero?*" Then answer, if course, is **Mahatma Gandhi**, the greatest proponent of **peaceful civil disobedience** in the history of the world. Basing his strategy on the writing of our very own Jesus, he formulated a plan of attack which involved attacking no one at all. In fact, he frequently quoted the sayings of Christ and is reputed to have once said that he would have at one time become a Christian, had he been able to find one! A picture of Christ also adorned the walls of his office. Once again, our inability to separate culture from Gospel cost us the greatest conversion in history, and British racism and arrogance drove him from the true Gospel of Christ, just as American evangelical arrogance does the same thing today in the 3rd World. If we would just respect the religions of others, as Paul did in Athens, we would have even better conversion rates than we do. If India is excluded based on heroes, China must be included and assigned the role of leading candidate for the very same reason. Who is the current hero of this largest Communist country in the world? **Mao Tse-tung** (or Zedong if you are a revisionist). While Gandhi was busy winning his war with peaceful non-violence, Mao was busy winning his at the point of a gun. Not only did he gain control of China by means of violence and bloodshed, but every single one of his "reforms" involved the wholesale butchery of those individuals who either disagreed with him or who potentially posed a threat to his ideas. His personal life was one of debauchery. He had multiple mistresses, and his personal hygiene was appalling. As a human being, he was the absolute antithesis of Gandhi. China, therefore, becomes a primary candidate to help supply the manpower needs of this horrible army. Japan will probably be right there with them, as will all the Muslims of the Far East, particularly in Indonesia, the largest Muslim nation in the world. Particularly since we are dealing with a group of nations rather than a single nation, I see no problems generating the 200 million man army from the Far East, truly the "land of the rising sun". In fact, to completely tie down the identification, the name of Japan in their own language means **sun-origin**, and Japan has historically been referred to as "The Land of the Rising Sun".

In the final analysis, what are we looking at here? In all probability, a coalition of Asia nations comprised of soldiers from China, Japan, North Korea, Indonesia, and a smattering of entrants from other countries in the Far East and perhaps along the way. Their standard battle garb will be in three colors: **fiery red, hyacinth blue** and **sulfur yellow**. Many of the nations of the Far East already have flags with yellow and red as their dominant color. Hint: Be on guard for any sort of political union that sports that particular color combination. By the way, Hyacinth Blue is sometimes shown as a pure blue, slightly lighter than a Royal Blue, for example, and is on other occasions shown with a slightly purple tint, just so you know.

So much for the soldiers. Now we come to the "ponies". I have heard Biblical expositors talk about these being actual horses, and, for a while, I did, too. But when I went back and carefully examined the Scripture, it became obvious that these were not mortal horses.

"¹⁷ *And thus I saw the horses in the vision: those who sat on them had breastplates of fiery red, hyacinth blue, and sulfur yellow; and the **heads of the horses** were like the **heads of lions**; and **out of their mouths came fire, smoke, and brimstone.*** ¹⁸ *By **these three plagues** a **third of mankind** was killed—by the fire and the smoke and the brimstone which came out of their mouths.* ¹⁹ *For **their power is in their mouth and in their tails**; for **their tails are like serpents, having heads**; and with them they do harm.*" – Revelation 9:17-19

I know that there is a strong tendency to say that these "horses" are really some kind of military vehicle, and I suppose that there is the possibility that they really are, but I am going to stick with the three rules of **literal, logical and chronological**. The Far East has demons and alliances with dragons, the symbol of Satan himself, all through their history, so an alliance between mortal men and immortal demons wouldn't be too far of a leap in their way of thinking. For that matter, it's not even a leap for us in the Western world any more. Consider the *Lord of the Rings* trilogy, with an alliance involving humans, elves, dwarves and hobbits fighting against another alliance of humans, orcs, nazgul and the like. Also consider the newest abomination to God, a trilogy entitled *His Dark Materials*, out of which one of the three books, *The Golden Compass*, has been made into a movie. In the movie, a coalition of human and "daemons" fight against the evil lord, named, as you ready for this? **Yahweh!** In this trilogy, a human/demon alliance actually **kills God!** This is **precisely** what these men will believe as they march toward the Euphrates. They will be riding on something that has the **body of a horse**, the **head of a lion**, and **tails like snakes**. There is also another possibility about these bizarre steeds. Given the dramatic progress which humanity has made in understanding how genetic structures are constructed, these creatures may not be demons at all, but rather **genetic mutations grown in labs by the untold millions**. We don't know how far the Chinese are in their research, but we do know that the Japanese pretty much lead the world in this kind of stuff. Just imagine if Japan's technology were merged with China's immense manufacturing power. This kind of beast-to-beast mutation apparently also happened during the period of time after the fall but before the Flood. The apocryphal *Book of Jashur*, referred to in Joshua and II Samuel, speaks of this very thing.

"¹⁸ *And their judges and rulers went to the daughters of men and took their wives by force from their husbands according to their choice, and the sons of men in those days **took from the cattle of the earth, the beasts of the field and the fowls of the air, and taught the mixture of animals of one species with the other**, in order therewith to provoke the Lord; and God saw the whole earth and it was corrupt, for all flesh had corrupted its ways upon earth, all men and all animals.*"
-- Jashur 4:18

Now, I'm not saying that the Book of Jashur as we currently have it is totally accurate and certainly is not authoritative in any sense like the Holy Scriptures. But I do find it fascinating that it should even mention such a thing. It is probably one of the major reasons, other than the re-propagation of all the land animal species, that Moses was required to take two of each animal into the ark. Genetic mutations could not be allowed to survive on the planet. Perhaps the unicorn and other such "fanciful" animals actually had a basis in fact on the pre-Flood Earth. If that is the case, then the technology levels of that society must have been not only equal but actually superior to our own today. That being true, then perhaps the stories of Atlantis that were told to Plato were also based in truth. A society that advanced and also totally evil would also be a genuine threat to spread its sinfulness outside the boundaries of this planet and into outer space to other planets and, perhaps, even other intelligent species. As I have studied the Bible, I have come to several conclusions, one of which is that **the same sins and aberrations that occurred before the first near-destruction of planet Earth will happen again before the second near-destruction of Earth**. Mankind has been stopped twice before in its quest for domination without submission to divine rule. First, in the Flood itself, and second, at the Tower of Babel. Peter warns us of a day in which this destruction will occur all over again.

"¹ Beloved, I now write to you this second epistle (in both of which I stir up your pure minds by way of reminder), ² that you may be mindful of the words which were spoken before by the holy prophets, and of the commandment of us, the apostles of the Lord and Savior, ³ knowing this first: **that scoffers will come in the last days**, walking according to their own lusts, ⁴ and saying, **'Where is the promise of His coming? For since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of creation.'** ⁵ For this they willfully forget: that by the word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of water and in the water, ⁶ **by which the world that then existed perished, being flooded with water.** ⁷ But the heavens and the earth which are now preserved by the same word, **are reserved for fire until the day of judgment and perdition of ungodly men."**

– II Peter 3:1-7

A near-total destruction is exactly what we are looking at. This army, all by itself, will destroy **1/3rd of all mankind**. Fire, smoke and brimstone will come out of the mouths of the lion's heads, as well as the serpent's heads which are actually tails. How is that going to happen? Frankly, I'm not sure. I've done some thinking on this topic, and, as they say, *"I got nothing!"*

There is, however, one final, rather grim topic that we must discuss. It deals with the fact that **all salvation in the Gentile world will cease with the Rapture of the Bride**. I have made mention of this on several occasions in the past, but we have finally reached one of the foundational Scriptures which tell me that this is true.

"²⁰ But **the rest of mankind**, who were not killed by these plagues, **did not repent** of the works of their hands, that they should not worship demons, and idols of gold, silver, brass, stone, and wood, which can neither see nor hear nor walk. ²¹ And **they did not repent** of their murders or their sorceries or their sexual immorality or their thefts." -- Revelation 9:20-21

This is perhaps the grimmest scenario in all of mankind's history. Genesis tells us that at the time of the Flood, regarding the moral condition of man, **"that every intent of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually"** (Genesis 6:5). How could this possibly happen? Actually, it's quite simple. Paul outlines the whole matter in his letter to the church at Rome. He points out that God actually brought salvation to the Gentiles **to make Israel jealous of us!** (Romans 11:11). He then goes on to say that there will come a time when **"...the fullness of the Gentiles has come in."** (Romans 11:25). Once the full **number, census or quota of Gentiles has come in, the times of the Gentiles are at an end**. No further Gentiles need inquire regarding eternal life. Sorry! I know that sounds tough, but these are God's rules and not mine! I'm just glad I'm in. You **are** in, aren't you? And all your relatives, children and friends are saved, right? No??? **Then why haven't you come forcibly to them with the Gospel of Jesus Christ until you drive them nuts or they finally repent? Why are you watching TV instead of getting on your knees and praying and fasting so that they will come in through the open door? Because, dear friends, there will come a time when the door will finally close.** Please read Matthew 25:1-13 again, this time very carefully. Once the time of the Church is finally at an end and the times of the Gentiles are at an end, it once again becomes Israel's turn. The Holy Spirit, without Whom conversion is impossible, will be pulled permanently from the Gentile world and placed squarely and solely upon Israel so that **"...all Israel shall be saved."** (Romans 11:26). Sparked by the 144,000 Jewish, male evangelist-prophets, the greatest revival in the history of God's chosen people will occur. Amazingly, **every single living descendant of Jacob will be brought into a living, saving relation with Messiah Jeshua**. Many of them will pay for their new-found faith with martyrdom, but what else is new? Become a convert to Christ, get killed! Isn't that how it was in the 1st Century? Dear friends, **it will be the same at the end as it was in the beginning. You can live for Him now, or you can die for Him later. The choice is yours.**

What about the stunned half of the Church left behind after the Rapture? Is there no hope for them? I will discuss this topic later in **much** greater detail, but my study of Revelation leads me to believe that if they do not become apostate and fall away, they will repent and come to their senses. Doing that, however, will cost them their lives, probably at about the same time that their Jewish compatriots are also giving themselves up for the sake of the Gospel. At least they will be in good company. **What company will you be in, dear friends?** I hope to see you there, amidst the clouds, filled with His

glory, receiving your very own resurrection bodies at the same time I receive mine. What a glorious day it will be! Even so, come, Lord Jesus!

We are not even remotely done with the 6th Trumpet / 2nd Woe. There is still much suffering and trouble yet to come. But before we go to even more calamity, we must first meet a giant angel and hear what the **Seven Thunders** have to say. Until tomorrow, may God richly bless you as you walk in faith and obedience to Him. Amen and Amen!

Day 17 ~ The Seven Thunders



“¹ I saw still another mighty angel coming down from heaven, clothed with a cloud. And a rainbow *was* on his head, his face *was* like the sun, and his feet like pillars of fire. ² He had a little book open in his hand. And he set his right foot on the sea and *his* left *foot* on the land, ³ and cried with a loud voice, as *when* a lion roars. When he cried out, seven thunders uttered their voices. ⁴ Now when the seven thunders uttered their voices, I was about to write; but I heard a voice from heaven saying to me, ‘Seal up the things which the seven thunders uttered, and do not write them.’” – Revelation 10:1-4

“Seal up the things which the seven thunders have uttered, and do not write them.” Why on earth would God **say something** and then not want us to **know about it**? Is there any precedent for this anywhere in the Scriptures? Interestingly enough, yes, there is. If we track the life and writings of the Apostle Paul, we find some little known facts. Almost everyone is familiar with the beginning of Paul’s ministry. He was from Tarsus, a fairly active merchant community located on the southern edge of what we know today as Turkey, and what was known back then as Asia Minor. He had been zealous for the Law all his life, and must have entered the school of Gamaliel, a renowned Rabbi of the time, at a fairly early age. Because of his zeal, he was convinced that this new sect called The Way posed a serious threat to Orthodox Judaism, and so managed to procure standing orders from the powers that were at that time to arrest and jail anyone belonging to the cult. It was on his way to Damascus to do just that when he experienced a major attitude adjustment regarding the Christian believers. Knocked off his horse and blinded by an intense bright light, he found himself in the presence of Christ Himself, who calmly informed him that he was persecuting Jesus personally when he persecuted the church. That got his attention. With his corneas scarred by the searing light, he had to be helped to his feet as a blind man and led into the city, where he fasted and prayed for three days. During that time, he was shown by God that a man named Ananias would be coming to visit him and to pray for his healing. Ananias was equally surprised by the request from the Lord, but went, prophesied over Paul, prayed, and saw the scarred corneas drop out of Paul’s eyes as new ones were spontaneously formed. He also saw Paul baptized in the Holy Spirit at the same time. All of this we know for sure. But it is after Paul’s baptism that the order of events is somewhat scrambled. Luke records that Paul spent some time with the disciples at Damascus and immediately began preaching that Jesus was indeed the Christ. So powerful was his testimony and teaching that it caused a stir among the Jewish community there so intense that a plan was laid out to take his life. Paul had to be lowered over the side of the wall of the city in a basket. From there Barnabas, who had befriended him, took him to the Apostles in Jerusalem. He preached so powerfully there that another attempt was made on his life. From there, the believers moved him to Caesarea and then to Tarsus, where he would sit unnoticed and unused until Barnabas sought him out in order to ask him to come and co-pastor a unique new church in Antioch made up almost entirely of Gentiles. This is the Acts account. But there is more to the story than first meets the eye. Remember, the Bible says of itself that the **sum of Thy Word is truth**. That means that in order to find out the complete story on any event or person, you need to study **all** of the Scriptures that apply to the subject. Then you will have the complete story and reasonable balance in your doctrine and practice. Most people get into trouble, not because they know **no** truth, but because they know a **little** truth, enough to get them **into** trouble, but not enough to get them **out**.

If there is more to this story, then where is it to be found? In the first person narratives of Paul’s own life, as found in the Epistles that he wrote. As I have written these articles and the books that contain them, I have found that it is impossible to teach the Word of God without interjecting personal

testimonies. They add flesh and blood to otherwise dry doctrine. I am old enough so that I have life experiences that match and support most of the key doctrines of the Bible. And, frankly, most of those stories are strange enough to add quite a bit of color to these black and white pages. So it was with the Apostle Paul. There was more to his story that Luke knew, and Paul was kind enough to share it with us in two of his letters, Galatians and II Corinthians. As Paul Harvey was fond of saying, let's hear the **rest of the story...**

" ¹¹ *But I make known to you, brethren, that the gospel which was preached by me is not according to man.* ¹² *For I neither received it from man, nor was I taught it, but **it came through the revelation of Jesus Christ.*** ¹³ *For you have heard of my former conduct in Judaism, how I persecuted the church of God beyond measure and tried to destroy it.* ¹⁴ *And I advanced in Judaism beyond many of my contemporaries in my own nation, being more exceedingly zealous for the traditions of my fathers.* ¹⁵ *But when it pleased God, who separated me from my mother's womb and called me through His grace,* ¹⁶ *to reveal His Son in me, that I might preach Him among the Gentiles, **I did not immediately confer with flesh and blood,*** ¹⁷ ***nor did I go up to Jerusalem to those who were apostles before me; but I went to Arabia, and returned again to Damascus.***" -- Galatians 1:11-17

Hmmm... What do we have here? Luke has Paul going to Damascus, being converted on the road there, preaching Christ until people try to kill him, then going straightaway to Jerusalem. But that's not the story as Paul tells it. Paul makes it very clear that the Gospel of Jesus Christ was not **taught to him by human agents.** He makes it very clear that **his** version of the Gospel came by **revelation directly from Jesus Himself.** OK. Let's assume that Paul is telling us the truth and that this is so. If it is so, **then when did this supernatural teaching session happen?** Paul gives us the answer immediately. As soon as he was converted, and knew that Jesus was indeed the long-awaited Messiah, he headed straight for **Arabia.** Why Arabia? What on earth could possibly be there that would attract a devout Jew? Paul provides the answer to that question later on in his letter, in Chapter 4.

" ²¹ *Tell me, you who desire to be under the law, do you not hear the law?* ²² *For it is written that Abraham had two sons: the one by a bondwoman, the other by a freewoman.* ²³ *But he who was of the bondwoman was born according to the flesh, and he of the freewoman through promise,* ²⁴ *which things are symbolic. For these are the two covenants: the one from Mount Sinai which gives birth to bondage, which is Hagar—* ²⁵ *for this Hagar is **Mount Sinai in Arabia,** and corresponds to Jerusalem which now is, and is in bondage with her children—* ²⁶ *but the Jerusalem above is free, which is the mother of us all."* -- Galatians 4:21-26

In one simple phrase, Paul had given us the clue we need to find the **true** Mount Sinai, not the illegitimate one found in the Sinai Peninsula. I've touched on this subject before, so I won't go into it in detail here. Suffice it to say that the Sinai Peninsula is called the Sinai Peninsula because it was believed that Mount Sinai was located there. Mount Sinai was believed to be located there because (are you ready for this?) a **fortune teller/psychic** told Constantine's mother that it was located there. Despite myriad excavations, no archeological evidence has **ever** been uncovered to support the presence of anywhere from 3 to 6 million people at any point in history. **However...** If you are looking down on the planet from outer space and you shift your gaze slightly to your right you will find yourself looking at the **Arabian Peninsula.** On that Peninsula there is an ancient land which we call Midian. It is the place where Moses lived for 40 years of his life. It is also the place where a bush burned and the God of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob sent *Musa* or Moses back into the land of his birth to deliver his people. Not too far from Midian, there is a very strange mountain. It is not volcanic in origin, yet the top third of this granite mountain is burned black, as if some unearthly fire burned the very rock itself. Around it are found twelve markers with ancient Hebrew markings on them. Near it is an altar with Egyptian petroglyphs of bulls carved on it. Also nearby is a huge rock which close examination shows was split in two by billions of gallons of water flowing out from it, forming a large lake, large enough to provide water for untold millions of people and their animals. It is called *Jabal al Lawz* or *Jabal al Musa*, the Mountain of Moses, by the natives there. Although there is absolutely no military significance to the mountain, it is surrounded by a barbed wire fence erected by the Saudi military, and it is guarded heavily night and day. It has also been known as **Mount Horeb**, the place where Elijah fled after his great victory over the prophets of Baal and his subsequent crumbling before a mere woman, Jezebel. Now, consider if you were a devout Jew, one well versed in the ancient

writings of Israel. If you knew that you were to receive a special revelation from the God of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob, where would **you** go to receive it? Correct. You would travel to Mount Sinai in Arabia, the place where Moses, Elijah and possibly even Jesus Himself went to receive their revelation from God. Even Jesus? Yes, even Jesus. It says, after all, that the Holy Spirit drove or compelled him **into the wilderness** to be tempted by the devil. Notice that the Bible does not say **where** in the wilderness He went. I am strongly convinced by circumstantial evidence that it is the very same mountain. Small wonder, then, that the Muslim, Arab world does not want the physical and spiritual children of Abraham to have access to it or even know it is there. Paul does not say how long he was at Mount Sinai, but my guess would be 40 days. It would again be totally consistent with his predecessors. What happened on that mountain for the Apostle Paul? He tells us exactly what happened in II Corinthians Chapter 12:

*"¹ It is doubtless not profitable for me to boast. I will come to **visions and revelations of the Lord:** ² I know a man in Christ who **fourteen years ago**—whether in the body I do not know, or whether out of the body I do not know, God knows—**such a one was caught up to the third heaven.** ³ And I know such a man—whether in the body or out of the body I do not know, God knows—⁴ how he **was caught up into Paradise and heard inexpressible words, which it is not lawful for a man to utter.** ⁵ Of such a one I will boast; yet of myself I will not boast, except in my infirmities. ⁶ For though I might desire to boast, I will not be a fool; for I will speak the truth. But I refrain, lest anyone should think of me above what he sees me to be or hears from me."* – II Corinthians 12:1-6

Fourteen years before Paul wrote the second letter to the church at Corinth, he stood on the sides of the most important mountain in the world, awaiting a visitation from the Most High. He was not disappointed. In a flash, his spirit was transported out of his body and up into the 3rd Heaven. While he was there, he was given an incredible amount of revelation; his world-changing **Gospel to the Gentiles**. The revelation was so overwhelming that a messenger of Satan was permitted to attack and afflict him, lest he become too prideful at what God had revealed to him. And yet he was **forbidden to speak of it to anyone when he returned, for the time was not yet right**. Yes, he could proclaim that Jesus was the Messiah to the Jews, but only with limited success. Every single time that he boldly and effectively proclaimed that fact and argued persuasively from the Holy Scriptures that Jesus was indeed Lord it triggered a firestorm among the Jews. Time and time again his life was threatened. Finally, he ended up back at Tarsus, frustrated, out of the ministry, and wondering what possible good all of that revelation had been. Yes, he had been given extraordinary revelation. Yes, he now suffered battles inside his body and temptations that had never had any power over him before. No, he did not understand in the least **why** all of this had happened if he would never be permitted to speak of it to anyone. What on earth did God have in mind for him? He sat alone in Tarsus, unable to speak or write about this marvelous thing: that God would extend eternal salvation to the Gentiles, along with the myriad details which he had been shown through the Holy Spirit at that same time. Then, one day, his good friend Barnabas came to his door. How was he? How were things going in Jerusalem? There had been persecution? That was to be expected. James was dead? How terrible? A revival had broken out in Samaria? Remarkable! **Would he come with Barnabas to Antioch to help him pastor a church made up almost entirely of Gentiles? GENTILES??? DID YOU SAY GENTILES???** I can just see Paul excitedly grasping Barnabas' cloak and hanging for dear life. Would it be all right with Barnabas if he shared with these Gentiles some of the revelations that God had given him on Mt. Sinai? It was? Oh, joy!!!

It was there at Antioch, speaking exclusively to Gentiles, that Paul was finally permitted to start to unroll all of the mystery that makes up what we know today as 3/4ths of the New Testament. Today, we take it for granted. But it was **so controversial and new in that day that God knew that the Jews would never be able to accept it**. Peter had a terrible time explaining himself when he returned from Joppa, even though the Holy Spirit had been poured out on the entire household of Cornelius with the evidence of speaking in tongues. That is how the Jews in Jerusalem knew that it was real. The Gentiles had received the Holy Spirit in the same way as they had. But their minds were still bound by the Law. If a Gentile wanted to believe in the Jewish Messiah, well and good. But he would also have to be circumcised and dress, eat and act in accordance with the Law of Moses, just as any good Jew would have to. For the Gentiles to be justified by faith and faith alone, minus all the legal trappings of Judaism, was unthinkable to the Jewish believers who dominated the church during

its early days. Even the early council had troubles with it until Paul and Barnabas began to relate all the signs, wonders and miracles that the Lord had performed to **confirm the Word by the signs that attended it**. But that Gospel which we Gentiles today take for granted would have **never** gotten off the ground if Paul had tried to take it exclusively to the Jews. Instead, God had to **silence Paul and forbid him to speak of these matters until it was time and the first truly Gentile church was ready, in place, and he, Paul, was an integral part of the leadership**.

So much revelation was poured into Paul that it took the rest of his ministry to pour it back out into the lives of the Gentile believers that he ministered to. Paul would make references to the **mystery** of the Gospel of the Gentiles in his letters to Rome, Corinth, Ephesus, the Colossians, the Thessalonians and his young apprentice, Timothy. In his letter to the church at Rome, Paul is permitted to reveal one part of this great mystery:

"²⁵ For I do not desire, brethren, that you should be ignorant of this **mystery**, lest you should be wise in your own opinion, that **blindness in part has happened to Israel until the fullness of the Gentiles has come in**.²⁶ And so **all Israel will be saved**, as it is written:" -- Romans 11:25-26a

Mystery #1: A hardening will come upon all Israel until the full number, census or quota of the Gentiles comes in. After that has been accomplished, all Israel will be saved. I have already spoken at great length on this subject. Can you see how this mystery could **never** have been accepted by the Jews?

Later on, while writing to the church at Corinth, Paul was given permission by the Holy Spirit to discuss another component of this great mystery, the nature and sequence of the Rapture and Resurrection:

"⁵⁰ Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God; nor does corruption inherit incorruption.⁵¹ Behold, **I tell you a mystery: We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed** — ⁵² in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trumpet. For the trumpet will sound, and **the dead will be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed**.⁵³ For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality." -- I Corinthians 15:50-53

Mystery #2: Not all of us will die before we enter heaven. Some of us will be resurrected. Others will be changed right where they stand. We shall all be changed, but not exactly in the same way.

Based on some preliminary research, I suspect that God may have give Paul a total of **seven mysteries**, including the Gospel to the Gentiles itself. God willing, someday I will write a somewhat scholarly book about it (Pastor Ray! You? Scholarly? Well...maybe **somewhat** scholarly, then!). The bottom line for us today is that **when Paul was given this information, it was so controversial that he was forbidden to talk about it, just as John was forbidden to speak about what the Seven Thunders had uttered in his day**. So controversial must these seven revelations have been that they have remained hidden for almost 2,000 years. I will tell you this: **It is time for God to reveal what the Seven Thunders said**. We have finally come to the end of the age. What could not be accepted then and could not be accepted for the last two millennia is now finally acceptable. God is about to make one great move to save the souls of men, and the Seven Thunders have to deal with the salvation of men, just as the mysteries given to Paul in his day involved bringing salvation to the Gentiles.

When will what the Seven Thunders said be revealed? Soon, I hope. Frankly, my personal hope and prayer is that the Lord will show me what the Seven Thunders said, and I can add that prophetic revelation to this article. If not me, then at least to someone I can hear about and trust. I want this article and this book to contain the full context of the message that was hushed up so many years ago.

So for right now, this *E-Pistle* will be a short one. Perhaps some day, God willing, it will be much, much longer, and carry the overwhelming anointing of the Holy Spirit on it to convict and convince rebellious mankind of his sins and turn him back to the Christ who bled and died for them. Carrying the prophet

anointing can be a wonderful blessing, but it is always a terrible burden as well as we will learn tomorrow, when we take a good look at ***The Little Book.***

Day 18 – The Little Book



“⁸ Then the voice which I heard from heaven spoke to me again and said, ‘Go, take the little book which is open in the hand of the angel who stands on the sea and on the earth.’⁹ So I went to the angel and said to him, ‘Give me the little book.’ And he said to me, ‘Take and eat it; and it will make your stomach bitter, but it will be as sweet as honey in your mouth.’¹⁰ Then I took the little book out of the angel’s hand and ate it, and it was as sweet as honey in my mouth. But when I had eaten it, my stomach became bitter.” – Revelation 10:8-10

What an odd scenario! One would think that taking something from God and eating it would make you feel good, not bad, and that it would sit well on your stomach, not make you sick. Yet when John is instructed to take the little book from the hand of the big angel and eat it, even though it is sweet as honey to his taste, it makes him sick to his stomach when he tries to digest it. What on earth is God trying to say here? Interestingly enough, this is not the first time that such a thing has happened. The Prophet Jeremiah was also instructed to eat God’s Words, and with a similar outcome.

“¹⁵ O LORD, You know; remember me and visit me, and take vengeance for me on my persecutors. In Your enduring patience, do not take me away. Know that for Your sake I have suffered rebuke.¹⁶ **Your words were found, and I ate them, and Your word was to me the joy and rejoicing of my heart; for I am called by Your name, O LORD God of hosts.**¹⁷ I did not sit in the assembly of the mockers, nor did I rejoice; I sat alone because of Your hand, for You have filled me with indignation.¹⁸ **Why is my pain perpetual and my wound incurable, which refuses to be healed? Will You surely be to me like an unreliable stream, as waters that fail?**” – Jeremiah 15:15-18

Not only did Jeremiah experience the “eating” of the Word of God, so also did the prophet Ezekiel. Listen to his experience:

“⁷ You shall speak My words to them, whether they hear or whether they refuse, for they are rebellious.⁸ But you, son of man, hear what I say to you. Do not be rebellious like that rebellious house; **open your mouth and eat what I give you.**⁹ Now when I looked, **there was a hand stretched out to me; and behold, a scroll of a book was in it.**¹⁰ Then He spread it before me; and there was writing on the inside and on the outside, and **written on it were lamentations and mourning and woe.**¹ Moreover He said to me, ‘**Son of man, eat what you find; eat this scroll, and go, speak to the house of Israel.**’² So I opened my mouth, and **He caused me to eat that scroll.**³ And He said to me, ‘**Son of man, feed your belly, and fill your stomach with this scroll that I give you.**’ So I ate, and it was in my mouth like honey in sweetness.” -- Ezekiel 2:7-3:3

Just as with the Apostle John, the initial “eating” of the Word that came from the Lord was a positive, wonderful thing. To any true saint of God, the Word of God is a good thing, a sweet thing. We love to read the Word, to meditate on it and to share it with others. That part, the **ingesting** of the Word, is always a sweet experience, often because it is typically associated with the Presence and the Glory of God. When either or both of those things are involved in receiving a prophetic word, it is what is commonly referred to as an **ecstatic** experience. You become caught up in the presence of God and you are literally changed into a different man. All the doubts and uncertainties flee away. Suddenly your weak, limited humanity is no longer an issue. Suddenly, the Words of the Almighty flow out of your lips, straight from your belly like a mighty river. Everything is clear. Everything is certain. Nothing is in doubt. During those moments, no matter if you are bringing the Word **in** or bringing the

Word **forth**, it is a glorious moment. Frankly, if God didn't do it that way, there would never be any prophets or prophecy. Since some 70% of the Bible is prophecy, there wouldn't be much of the Sacred Scriptures except for the historical accounts of the Old Testament, along with the Wisdom Literature of Proverbs and Ecclesiastes. Other than that, the Bible would be a much more slender document. You see, it's not the **ingesting** of the Word of God that causes problems for the prophet. It is rather in the **digesting** of that Word that troubles begin. Once you sit down and realize exactly what God is saying, you suddenly realize that He is not particularly happy with His people, and that some serious **correction** may have come out of your mouth, correction which is almost universally **rejected** by His people. And it is in the **expressing** of the Word of God to the people of God that what was up until now a sweet experience suddenly begins to turn sour. For those of you who have been raised up in the Charismatic experience, you may have absolutely no idea what I am talking about. A teaching has arisen over the years in the Full Gospel movement about prophecy and its place and nature within the local congregation. As a rule, most Full Gospel churches teach that when a prophecy comes forth inside of a local congregation, it must always **exhort** and **edify** the body. No **bad news**. Only **good news**. This doctrine stems from an incomplete reading of Scripture regarding prophecy and the prophetic gift. This slanted view comes from Paul's discussion of the Gifts of the Holy Spirit in his first letter to the church at Corinth.

"¹ Pursue love, and desire spiritual gifts, **but especially that you may prophesy**. ² For he who speaks in a tongue does not speak to men but to God, for no one understands him; however, in the spirit he speaks mysteries. ³ **But he who prophesies speaks edification and exhortation and comfort to men**. ⁴ He who speaks in a tongue edifies himself, **but he who prophesies edifies the church**. ⁵ I wish you all spoke with tongues, **but even more that you prophesied**; for he who prophesies is greater than he who speaks with tongues, unless indeed he interprets, that the church may receive edification." – I Corinthians 14:1-5

When God first began to pour out the Holy Spirit on the Gentiles, starting with the household of Cornelius, the Roman Centurion, in Acts Chapter 10, there was a great deal of confusion among the Gentiles as to how these "gifts" or manifestations were supposed to be used. The Jews already had a track record of being used in the gift of prophecy, with thousands of years of historical background to go back to so that any supposed "word" from the Lord could be tested against the **historical record** of how God had spoken to men in the past. That historical record was not always a positive record. As a general rule, when prophets spoke in the Name of the Lord, it was **for judgment, trouble and difficulty**. Hear what the prophet Jeremiah had to say about the matter:

"⁸ The prophets who have been before me and before you of old prophesied against many countries and great kingdoms—of **war and disaster and pestilence**. ⁹ **As for the prophet who prophesies of peace, when the word of the prophet comes to pass, the prophet will be known as one whom the LORD has truly sent.**" -- Jeremiah 28:8-9

What was the problem? Just as in our day today, so also in Jeremiah's day, the "church" was filled with tons of **good-news prophets**. They specialized in telling people what they **wanted** to hear, not what they **needed** to hear. And, of course, if you tell people what they want to hear, they will make sure that you are amply rewarded financially. Frankly, that's the current condition of the Full Gospel / Charismatic Movement of today. America and the church in America have been so super-saturated with phony good news prophets for so long that a true prophet of God is considered to be unchristian in some bizarre way. Let me take just a moment and explain to you exactly what the office of the prophet is supposed to do.

Let me begin by saying that **the nature of the prophet has not changed from the Old Testament to the New Testament**. This is one of the very first false teachings that entered into the church starting in the 1970's when the Charismatic Movement was first birthed. The earlier great move of God, the Azusa Street outpouring, was based firmly in holiness and sanctification, and knew that with **great power** came **great responsibility** and the absolute need for **great purity** and **great character**. Unfortunately, as time went on, one prophet after another went "tilt" in moral, ministry or money matters. It is a chilling matter to do the historical research about how many of the great prophets from the 1930's ended their lives. One great healing evangelist and prophet ended up dying

dead drunk, surrounded by empty booze bottles in a hotel room, while at the very same time, his ministry was airing "live" radio clips of him jokingly telling everyone that he was far from dead and that they should come down that very evening to his healing crusade. Another prophet/healer/evangelist developed a terrible doctrine called the "Serpent Seed" doctrine. It proclaimed that Eve had sexual relations with Satan, and that Cain was the result of that unholy union. White supremacists latched onto that teaching and twisted it and taught that Black people somehow had the "Mark of Cain" on them. He was shown his own death in a vision only a few days before it occurred. He saw himself lying dead on the ground with a piece of metal thrust through his head. The automobile accident which occurred only a few days later took his life in exactly that same fashion. Another prophet literally ate himself to death by stuffing himself one too many times with fried chicken and "mashed taters". A heart attack took him out. Sometimes a young, pure prophet would be given a warning for an old, backslidden prophet. Once one great man of God began to tell everyone that he was Elijah come again in the flesh, even though Scripture clearly teaches that the Elijah who was to come was in fact John the Baptist. He began to dress like Elijah, with robes, staff and all the accessories. A young prophet was instructed by God to write this older prophet and warn him that if he continued in this path, it would cost him his life. The warnings were ignored, and one of the greatest healing ministries in the history of America died tragically, far ahead of his time. It would take a whole book to outline all of the self-destructive behavior of those men and women who have been given the sacred trust of the anointing of God and who have violated that trust. Roberts Liardon, once a tremendous prophet of God himself, wrote the now-famous "God's Generals", outlining both the strengths and weaknesses of these individuals. Despite all the research he did, and the knowledge that he carried, he had to remove himself from ministry several years ago because of severe moral and sexual failures.

This litany of lunacy has stretched into our generation. I cannot forget Jim and Tammy Bakker and the crash of PTL. Equally sinful was the total betrayal of Jim Bakker by Jerry Falwell. Jim had entrusted PTL into Jerry's care with the understanding that once the crisis had passed, Falwell would return PTL to Jim and Tammy intact. No sooner was the ink dry on the papers than Falwell turned right around and sold the entire property to a group of Indonesian Muslims! Tammy did not forgive Falwell for this betrayal until shortly before her death. Falwell's sin in betraying a brother was just as great in the eyes of God as Jim's sexual sins with Fawn Hill, his secretary. Nor can I forget how Jimmy Swaggard stood on national TV and called Bakker a "cancer on the face of the church", yet only a few years later he too was brought down not once, but twice by his own sexual scandals with hookers. Just recently, another wave of moral failures has swept the church, as one leader after another crashed and burned. Ted Swaggard steps down because of a homosexual affair, and then only months later is dramatically "healed" and well and wants to step back into ministry immediately. Juanita Bynum, the chief advocate of a return to Biblical holiness in the church, calmly admits that in order to please her perverted "Bishop" of a husband, she swore and acted like a hooker during their sexual foreplay. He, in turn, showed how totally carnal he is by trying to choke his wife in a parking lot. Paula and Randy White mysteriously decide to divorce. Rumors swirl around their ministry, including the former porn star personal trainer who Randy spent a great deal of time with, and Paula's sudden relocation of her ministry to Texas to "sit under" a single man of God. And this is just the **tip** of the iceberg.

Shortly before I wrote this article a prophet friend in the Lord emailed me to remind me that I had "called the shot" long before it happened. He copied and pasted the very prophecy I had given back in 2006 and included it in his correspondence. Frankly, I had completely forgotten about it, but it is worth including in this article so that the skeptics among you can see that these things are truly real and that the gifts of the Holy Spirit are still operational today. In his email, my friend Charles Reese wrote:

"To quote yourself from an e-mail entitled 'Prepare Yourselves!' which you sent on **August 30, 2006**, you said: 'I know that some of you think I am a wild man, that I have lost my senses. But **judgment is coming very soon on the seeker-friendly church, Christianity Lite**. And it will not be a pretty thing. **Ministries that have been wildly successful will be torn to shreds from within by character flaws and personal sin in leadership. All this will happen in a matter of months. Scandal is going to rock the body of Christ, particularly among notable leaders. Many highly placed, apparently respectable ministers are going to fall from grace, and fall hard!** All of this has been building for some time now. Now is the time for judgment. And it begins in the House of God. Mel Gibson's drunk driving meltdown is only the beginning of the sorrows. **Anyone with hidden**

sin in their lives who does not repent and stop it will be publicly humiliated and removed from office. There will be no exceptions'. You also said the following in the same e-mail message: 'GET YOUR LIVES IN ORDER. CLEAN YOUR HOUSE. REMOVE ALL COMPROMISE. I AM COMING WITH POWER. WHEN I DO, IT WILL BLESS THOSE WHO HAVE MADE THEMSELVES READY. IT WILL CURSE THOSE WHO CONTINUE IN SIN. **Many will be removed from ministry because they will not repent. Some will be REMOVED FROM THIS EARTH PERMANENTLY**. A fierce judgment of God against the House of God is about to begin. THIS MONTH IS THE TIME FOR YOU TO PREPARE YOURSELVES. Try to spend at least 2 hours in prayer a day. Yes, two hours! That is the minimum requirement for an Apostle' ".

Gosh, I **hate** being right in things like this! **This** is what leaves the bitter aftertaste in the stomach of the prophet! **This** is what turned Jeremiah into the "**Weeping Prophet**". There is no pleasure for the prophet when the confrontation and correction phases of his/her ministry come to pass, except, perhaps, when it leads to true repentance and restoration. One would think that what we have witnessed in the body of Christ should be sufficient to warn the others in leadership to straighten up their lives and fly right, but that is not the case. The Lord has already told me that **three more major ministries will crash and burn in 2008 and another seven will do so in 2009**. So there you have it, dear friends. I have talked a lot about prophecies that the Lord has given me that have already come to pass. Hindsight is always 20/20. But I am willing to stand on that same anointing to tell you **in this book in December of 2007 what will come to pass in the next two years within the body of Christ among its leadership**. Hopefully, you are reading this in late 2009, so that you can compare the actual events with the prophecy itself. Judgment begins with the House of God. Within the House, it always begins with the leaders, the shepherds. **But that judgment is coming to you, dear friend, starting in 2010**. Before the Great Crash, before the Final Great Awakening, God is cleaning house within the existing church, so that the remnant will be ready, willing and capable of carrying, discipling and teaching the huge influx of new Christians that will be birthed from 2012 on.

How on earth did the church and its "moral" leadership become so corrupted? The historical trail of bread crumbs is not hard to follow. Remember that while the first great Pentecostal revival was birthed out of the Holiness Movement, it came to fruition during the 1920's, a period of time otherwise known as the "Roaring Twenties". Immoral lifestyles were the order of the day. And many of the men and women who became notable prophetic figures in the 1930's after the Crash and during the great move of God which swept America as a result of the Crash were unfortunately shaped and developed during that immoral period of time between the end of World War I and the beginning of the Great Crash of 1929. The seeds had already been sown in their hearts by the culture in which they lived. Anytime that the culture in which you live has more to say about your life than the Gospel of Jesus Christ, you are headed for trouble. True Christianity is not time or culture specific. Most "Christians" are simply products of their own culture first, with only a thin veneer of Christianity spread on them in order to make them appear moral. Ask yourself this question: If being a Christian were against the law and punishable by death by beheading, how many members of the church that you currently attend would suddenly find that their involvement in the Gospel was no longer convenient? For that matter, how many pastors and major public Christian figures would suddenly turn on Christ if their pockets and financial coffers were no longer filled by exploiting the Gospel of Jesus Christ for their own benefit? I have seen the seamy underside of the church far too often, and it is not pretty at all. I have a friend who was a lady pastor in the AME, a predominantly Black denomination. She was one of the very few lady pastors in her particular group, and, for reasons unbeknownst to her, was befriended by the leadership in the region and taken into the inner circle. Much to her horror, she discovered that virtually every male pastor in the region had a mistress on the side, and, in some cases, several. When she confronted some of her colleagues about this obvious breach in ethics, the explanation given to her was that it was "the nature of the beast", and something to be accepted and even joked about openly in the closed conversations which the men had amongst themselves. She eventually resigned from the AME and took her church out with her. I can't say that I blame her.

While the first group of prophetic voices were tainted by the Roaring Twenties, it was the Age of the Hippie that doomed the Baker/Swaggert/Fletcher group. Free Love found a sinful partner in the All Grace message of that era. As a result, morality once again went out the door. I was a product of that

era, and it influenced me negatively until just the last few years, and it took nearly dying several times to finally burn it out of my system.

Let's take just a moment and step back away from all this madness. If this has been the moral condition of the **shepherds**, what must the moral condition of the **sheep** be? And if both the sheep and the shepherds are in this condition from church to church, all across the US and the world, then how can a prophetic ministry issue words of "**edification and exhortation and comfort**" to a church like that? Clearly, if we use **only** the guidelines found in that passage, we will produce a powerless, emasculated prophetic ministry, incapable of and not allowed to issue the necessary correction to a childish, selfish and rebellious church. Over the years, I have discovered that the prophetic ministry involves the use of four "C" words: **confrontation, correction, consolation and comfort, in that order!** Let's take the obvious analogy of a rebellious child, who spends the whole day creating chaos in the house, terrorizing the animals, tormenting their brothers and sisters, and traumatizing the mother, who is trying to maintain order in the house and be fair and generous to everyone. Instead, little Lucifer's liaison Larry has set the kitchen on fire, stuffed his baby sister in the washing machine during spin dry cycle, cooked Fluffy in the microwave and generally made himself a nightmare on Elm Street. Now you understand the role of the pastor or shepherd. He (or she) has the unenviable task of trying to make **everybody** happy without correcting **anybody**. Having been through this process on many occasions, I understand the plight of the shepherd all too well. I am part shepherd and part prophet. The shepherd in me wants to pick them off the ground, dust them off, bind up their generally self-inflicted wounds, gently chide them for their misbehavior, hug them, and tell them to run along and play nice with one another. The Prophet in me knows better. He wants to pick them off the ground too, but with an entirely different purpose in mind. I remember years ago that I was at a supermarket and encountered the dreaded "**Laundromat Mom**" **Syndrome**. There was a very large, very lazy woman there, attended by her children. The woman had her shopping cart parked right in the middle of an aisle, carrying on a conversation with another Laundromat Mom. What's a Laundromat Mom? She is a woman who brings her five thousand children along with her wherever she goes, but never, under any circumstances, ever attempts to correct them. She will issue multiple meaningless threats, which the children blithely ignore because they know that she is all bluff and no threat. She carried on a conversation with one of her peers, cigarette dangling out of her mouth in the supermarket. All the while, her children were running wildly about the store, knocking things over and generally terrorizing the other shoppers. One of the little monsters seemed to think that the aisle I was in was actually part of the Indianapolis Brickyard, and was making one high-speed lap after another past me. I tolerated the first few laps, but by the third or fourth turn around the store, I had lost my patience. As the little savage raced by, I deftly grabbed him by the back of his collar, and with his little wheels still spinning at a million miles an hour, strode purposefully up to the woman, held the creature out in the air in front of her, and asked her, "**Does this thing belong to you???**" The woman nearly went into apoplectic shock. The cigarette nearly dropped out of her mouth. She staggered backward and clutched her chest, as if to feign a heart attack. Her eyes bulged out as if nothing like this had ever happened before. Sadly, she was probably correct. No one had ever forced her to be socially and morally responsible for not only her own actions but also the actions of those whom the law said belonged to her and for whose actions she would also be held accountable. She nodded weakly that, yes, in fact, this child was hers. "**Then make it behave!**" I said sternly, thrusting the equally stunned child into her arms. Amazingly enough, the grocery store aisles ceased being a miniature version of the Indy 500, and all of the little monsters were made to straighten up and shut up.

The prophet in me sees this kind of conduct in the church, and wants to go to the offending members, grab them by their collar, drag them over to the pastor and say, "**Does this thing belong to you???** **If so, then make it behave!**" When a child is misbehaving, and the mother has run out of options, there is one threat that she can hopefully rely on, or at least she **used** to be able to rely on in a saner, more stable era: "**Just wait till your father gets home!**" When I was in high school, I was actually suspended for three days by the principal. Yes, angelic little me! Actually, I really **was** innocent of the charges brought against me. You don't need the whole story, but it involved a teacher popularity contest. Our favorite teacher, Mr. Bray, was winning hands down in a radio contest held by a local station, but another teacher from our school was also in the running. His wife, who I suspect also played in *The Wizard of Oz* as the wicked schoolteacher/witch, was my homeroom teacher. I made a casual comment in home room about supporting Mr. Bray, and within minutes I found myself in front of

Mr. Jackson, our principal, and the possessor of the largest, fuzziest set of black eyebrows I have ever seen in my life. When he talked, his eyebrows bobbed up and down. The more animated he became, the more those two lines of fur became like the fabled dancing bears of Russia, one dancing one way, the other dancing in a different direction. Standing in front of him was almost like being in the presence of a hypnotist. The more the eyebrows danced, the less lucid your mind became. I have no idea what answer I gave him, but it obviously was not what he wanted. I became a hero for three days among my classmates. To further add gall into their drink, I became the first person in the history of our high school to make All-State Band **and** All-State Choir in the same year, all **while imprisoned in the library under in-school suspension!** Never have a group of adults looked so foolish. Yet, despite the fact that I was, like Billy Joel, "*an innocent man*", I had a tough time selling my innocence to my father. In my day, if you got a whipping in school, you were guaranteed **another** whipping when you got home. It was assumed, shockingly, that the **school administrators and teachers were right and you were wrong.** Nowadays, it is just the opposite. I taught for 18 years at a university level, and one of the reasons that I stopped teaching was the incremental erosion of teacher's rights, credibility and authority. During the final ten years that I taught, if any student lodged any accusation against a teacher, it was automatically assumed by the administration that the **student was right and the teacher was wrong.** This meant that teachers became the dancing bears, entertaining their selfish, immature little students. Thank God that most of my students were adults, with an average age of 25. They had better heads on their shoulders, and, in the two times where I was wrongly accused by psychotic students of wrongdoing, they quickly came to my defense and supported me. Otherwise, the lunatic students would have had my head. All the joy went out of teaching in the public school system for that very reason. Most public school teachers I know live in fear of somehow offending or being set up by a student with a vendetta or an agenda.

In a truly apostolic church structure, the pastor acts as the "mothering" figure, caring for and tending the sheep. Most pastors have a tough time with church discipline. They are engineered by God to love the sheep, sometimes to the point of excess. As a pastor, I put up with situations which, had they occurred in any business, would have resulted in immediate dismissal from the firm. That is why an administrative structure that stops at the pastor will always be out of control. Technically, if you get right down to it, teachers are supposed to answer to their pastors. The pastors, in turn, are supposed to answer to the evangelist who founded the church and put the pastor into place. They, in turn, are to be answerable to the prophets, who provide correction and direction to the body, both local and as a whole. And they, along with everybody else in the administrative network, are answerable to the apostle. Clearly, most church business in no way, shape or form even marginally resembles this. Because of this, chaos reigns in the church worldwide. Bureaucrats or politicians with no vision and no power from God rule over the body of Christ. As a result, the church itself has no vision, no passion and no power. If a member of a local body steps out of line and rejects the pastor's loving attempts to correct them within the context of the local body, the pastor should be able to say, "*Just wait till the prophet gets home!*" When itinerary prophetic ministry like Agabus or Paul before he matured into an apostle comes around on his circuit, the offender would be brought before them. The prophet would act in his or her office, using Word of Knowledge and Prophetic utterance to diagnose and warn the individual about the upcoming consequences of their actions. Then, if even a prophetic rebuke is ignored, we enter into the realm of Ananias and Sapphira, where a direct lie to a true apostle ends up with both of them pushing up daisies. That's how it should be. It would only take a random divine judgment or two each year to keep the rest of the church in a legitimate, God-fearing attitude. I know of several such judgments and have participated in at least one myself.

Unfortunately, this is not how it happens in 99% of the churches today. If a prophet attempts to give a corrective word, he is shouted down, first by the pastor, then by the board of elders and finally by the congregation themselves. This constant rejection eventually produces a literal bitterness in the stomach, as rejection after rejection causes physical side effects in the body of the prophet himself. I have been in many church settings, and one thing that I have uniformly found is that pastors live in constant fear of anyone who carries a greater anointing or authority than themselves. We went through many years trying without success to find a pastor who truly welcomed the prophetic ministry in their church. A few said they did in theory, as long as the prophecy (a) was directed toward someone in the congregation other than the pastor and (b) agreed totally with what the pastor had already said. The vast majority of pastors are totally closed to any prophetic revelation coming from

anyone other than themselves. Most envision themselves as teacher, pastor, evangelist, prophet, apostle, high priest and king of their little domain. They ignore the fact that it takes a complete **team** of anointed individuals, **all of whom are accountable to one another**. As a result, most churches remain small, divided and powerless. No organization can grow beyond the vision and ability of the leader. Small minds always produce small results which ensure small churches. Even when I would issue letter-perfect, completely accurate Words of Knowledge and stunningly accurate prophecies, the pastor would eventually reject what the Lord was saying and push us out of the fellowship, fearful not only of **direction** other than that which they wanted, but also of **correction** of that which was wrong in their lives and ministries. Frankly, it is a dangerous thing to walk in the company of true prophets. Just like David, you may find your "mail being read" at the time when it is least convenient and most embarrassing to you. In fact, if you check the Scripture passage where Nathan confronted David about his supposedly hidden sin, Nathan never pronounced judgment on David, other than to tell him that "thou are the man!" What prophetic figure pronounced judgment over David for his sin with Bathsheba and the resultant execution by inaction of one of his 30 Mighty Men, Uriah? **David did!** Nathan, led by the Holy Spirit, presented David with a "theoretical" situation, and asked **him** to judge the villain. David's **own anointing rose up in him and pronounced the verdict: the man would have to pay four times over for his crime**. Did David's own pronouncement come true? Consider the following facts: (1) **the first child born to David and Bathsheba died**. Solomon was the **second** child to be born to them, only this time after Bathsheba's widowhood and subsequent remarriage to David. (2) **Amnon died** after he raped his half-sister Tamar. Her full brother Absalom, arranged for his death two years later in reprisal for what he had done. (3) **Absalom died** when, uncorrected and unpunished for the murder of his half-brother, Amnon, he became arrogant and attempted to take the throne away from David. Joab and his soldiers caught up to the rebellious son in the forest, where his beautiful, long, jet-black locks of hair had become entangled in a tree limb. They quickly converted him from favored son into hanging pincushion. (4) **Adonijah died** when, at the end of David's reign, he also attempted to take the throne from the designated successor, Solomon. Had David paid four times over? Exactly. Plus, just as he had sown sexual immorality, so he had reaped sexual immorality with the rape of one of his daughters and the defilement of all of his concubines by Absalom. Whatsoever a man soweth...

This kind of true prophetic anointing makes the prophet a very dangerous yet very necessary man or woman in the church. Most churches are directed and driven by the will of man, not the will of God. I've written and taught on several occasions about the perfect prototype church, the very first Gentile church in history, at Antioch. Even though the two key pastors were Jewish, Barnabas and Paul, nonetheless the administrative team was multi-cultural, multi-racial and multi-functional, all at the same time. The Book of Acts says that there were prophet(s) and teacher(s) in that council of five. In fact, it was during a time of prayer and fasting that the Holy Spirit spoke to the prophetic council and told them to separate Barnabas and Saul, as he was called then, for the next step up, from pastors to evangelists.

Rejecting the prophetic gift and anointing can have disastrous effects. Obviously, failing to heed a warning of impending doom carries its own punishment when the doom ceases to impend and actually arrives on the doorstep. Then, the very people who laughed at, derided and mocked the prophet who warned them are all suddenly running and screaming and dying... But there is a second, more deadly but far more subtle death that occurs in any group of people who harden themselves to the voice of the Holy Spirit, who grieve and quench the voice crying in the wilderness. There is a certain very well know Pentecostal/Charismatic denomination that has a set rule, based on the exclusive use of the passage in I Corinthians that we quoted earlier. That rule is that the only kinds of prophecies which are allowed in worship services are those which **edify, exhort and comfort**. Now, to be both fair and balanced, it is probably a very good idea for young prophets who are trying to learn the ropes of the business and to understand how to properly interpret the voices which they hear in their minds and their hearts to stick to prophecies that are relatively harmless. Far too many young prophets, me included, have prophesied the destruction of San Francisco by another earthquake. And, while that may well end up being true, it's too easy a "gimme", and does not place the burden of proof on the prophetic individual. Equally un-instructive are "glittering generality" prophecies, which go something like this: "Oh, My Children! How I love thee! How I long to bless thee, blah, blah, blah..." These kind of prophecies go on and on about how much God loves them and how He is pleased with them. People

feed on this kind of stuff. They want to be told how good they are, even if they aren't. And one of the hallmarks of the false prophet in the Old Testament was that they always told the people what they **wanted** to hear, not what they **needed** to hear.

Here is the balance in the matter: If you study the Old Testament prophets, particularly the Big Four of Isaiah, Jeremiah, Ezekiel and Daniel, you will find that they all follow a standard pattern:

- (1) **Confrontation** of the people of God over their sinfulness, with a dire warning of severe, impending punishment unless true repentance took place, and they changed their ways.
- (2) **Correction** of the conduct of the people, either through exile, occupation or terrible punishment of some sort or another.
- (3) **Comfort** of the people as they lay suffering in their sins, experiencing the logical and predicted consequences of their actions.
- (4) **Consolation** of the repentant people by the prophetic, encouraging messages that, although they are justly suffering for their sins, that there would come a day in which they would be rescued, restored and redeemed by their Sovereign Lord.

Most of the Minor Prophets also follow the same pattern. The early part of their writings are **confrontational and corrective** in nature, as they outline the sins of the people and the upcoming punishments for those sins. The latter part of their writings are **comforting and consoling**, healing the self-imposed wounds which the people have suffered and promising them a better day. It only makes logical sense. You do not **reward a child for bad conduct**. Neither do you **punish a child for good conduct**. I find that when I prophesy to Christians who are suffering unjustly or who are giving God their very best effort yet without results that I am always **comforting and consoling**. Just this past Sunday, I had an unusual opportunity to give out four separate prophetic words. The first was a word of encouragement to a man to step up and ask to be considered for the position of prayer leader of the church. This position had just been vacated by a Godly man who has suffered a great deal in recent years with physical problems, and he simply needs to step aside for a while to recover. It also just happens that the man I prophesied to **had just finished a 40 day fast about this and other matters!** Was I speaking to a saint or a sinner? Clearly, a saint. And what I told him, from the Lord, confirmed and affirmed what was already going on in his heart. Clearly, a word of consolation and encouragement. The second prophecy was given to a couple who asked me to pray for them about a change in their job situation. As I prayed, the Lord gave me a Word of Knowledge about how this man's boss was a kind of **Nabal** (Hebrew for "fool"), making mistakes, but making his subordinate look like the guilty party; sticking this brother with the accusation of doing wrong when his boss was actually the wrong-doer. When we finished praying, they were astonished. I had described in **exact detail** his situation at work. A third prophecy involved a young Black woman at the church for the very first time. God had called her to help the refugees in the Sudan. She was on-fire and pure-hearted. Our pastor asked the congregation to take up a special offering for her. As the praise and worship team sang, one person after another came forward to put something in the plate. At the same time, the Lord gave me a specific word about her operating in the power of the Holy Spirit while in the Sudan and that signs, wonders and miracles would attend her the next time she went. She began to weep openly. Clearly, the Word either confirmed something she had been praying about or touched her heart regarding these people. A fourth word was to a precious, elderly saint of God who just loves praise and worship. The Lord told her that even though the church had experienced some powerful times of worship during 2007 that 2008 would be the year that an Azusa Street style revival would break out there.

At face value, it would appear that I was totally obedient to Paul's instructions to the church at Corinth. But in each of the four cases, I was speaking to individuals who were in **obedience** to the known will of God in their lives. All four were striving as hard as they could to obey Him and fulfill the call that He had placed in their lives. There have been other times when my prophetic voice has not been so kind. One of the most notable of those occurred in Madisonville, KY. We were asked to pray for a woman of God who had a drunken, violent husband. As we prayed, I saw a clear picture of the man's hands being broken, and so prayed accordingly, out loud. We asked God to **break this man's hands** so that he could not strike his Godly wife again. Within one week, we found out that he had caught his hand in a car door and had it broken. A few days later, he was involved in an altercation with the police and

was sent to jail, presumably for a very long time. In that case, the individual was walking in **disobedience**. On another occasion, I was walking down the center aisle of the church with a precious young Black teacher who loves the Lord with all her heart. As we were walking, I suddenly turned to her and asked her, "So, how long has your principal being smoking crack cocaine?" She almost fell to the floor. **Just that Tuesday** the police had arrived unexpectedly at her school and taken the principal into custody for not only using crack cocaine but also **selling it to the students!** A second Word of Knowledge with her involved a totally different set of circumstances. A group of us were returning from ministering to a group of Charismatic Methodists. We were busily trucking down I-71 at about 70 miles per hour. I was behind the wheel, with her in the front passenger seat and another precious lady of God in the back seat. Suddenly, the Lord spoke to me and said to me, "Ask her what she wants Me to do for her." I turned my head slightly and posed the question. Her eyes grew large, and she began to explain what had happened to her only that past week. She had been seeking more of the Holy Spirit, but little of that was to be found in the Methodist Church. She had accompanied one of her Oneness Pentecostal friends to a mid-week service at her church. Although the service was good, my friend was clearly hurt and frustrated because the people at that church made her feel like a second-class citizen because she didn't speak in unknown tongues. Many Oneness folks teach that you aren't even saved if you don't speak in tongues. Nothing could be further from the truth. Once she was done sharing, it became obvious that what she wanted from the Lord was for Him to baptize her in the Holy Spirit, with the evidence of speaking in unknown tongues, exactly as the Book of Acts documents. I had no problem with that, and, holding on to the steering wheel with one hand, I stretched out my other hand and placed it on her forehead. I instructed the other lady in the back seat to lay hands on our friend as well. Then we began to pray. In a matter of moments, the car was awash with the power of God. And, as we drove down the road having our own little Holy Ghost fit, the Lord Jesus Christ sovereignly baptized our friend in the Holy Spirit! When we made a stop to pick up some sound equipment cables, she was so drunk in the Spirit that she couldn't even get out of the car!

See the pattern, dear friends in Christ? You **comfort the afflicted, and afflict the comfortable**. You mete out punishment to the child that is misbehaving. But, if after having been given the spanking of their lives, they repent and are sorry, vowing never to do it again, you comfort them and console them because you love them.

Remember that unnamed denomination that wouldn't permit confrontational or corrective prophecy? Their disobedience to the whole counsel of God had produced results of its own. Because the full range of prophecy is not permitted, prophets can never come to full maturity in that congregation. And since Apostles can only arise out of a matured prophetic ministry, no apostles have arisen out of that denomination. Since one of the attributes of a true apostle is that they can transfer the Baptism of the Holy Spirit through the laying on of hands, it then stands to reason that no prophets = no apostles = no one to transfer the Holy Spirit into the lives of the congregations. The result? In one of the oldest denominations established on the absolute necessity of receiving the Baptism in the Holy Spirit, only 1/3rd of their own people speak in tongues! Their false, delimited doctrine has resulted in the Spiritual impoverishment of their own denomination. You get what you pay for. What goes round, comes round. And whatsoever a man soweth...

What is the balance, then? Are prophets doomed to have that precious anointing be sweet in their mouths but bitter in their stomachs forever? Not necessarily. If the church would permit and encourage prophecy just as Paul recommended, we would see more believers attempting to step out and be used in the gift. What if some of those prophecies were not correct? Would that make them a false prophet? Nope! It would take a whole article to show how badly that Scripture has been misused and abused. Suffice it to say that Paul said that we **all see through a glass darkly, and that we all prophesy incompletely**. The fact that young believers attempting to move in the gift of prophecy may very well miss more than they hit at first explains why Paul elsewhere says not to despise prophecy or to forbid it. Senior prophets should help to guide rookies through the process, and then rejoice when some of those youngsters move past them and into the big leagues. Our own church often will see as many as three or four prophecies come forth on any given Sunday, but none of them are from me. Why? I don't want to push young prophets out of the picture. This is their place and their time. My time will come, and it will be on a national and international scale when it comes. In the meanwhile, God keeps me just busy enough to keep the edge on my curveball, and the smoke on

my fastball. There will come a time when the wily old veteran will come out of the bullpen to put out the fire and close up the victory. In the meanwhile, I try to get as much as of the "sweet" part as I can, while avoiding as much of the "bitter" as possible. Don't ever be afraid of God using you prophetically or speaking to you prophetically. Even if it hurts sometimes, just remember, God chastises those that He loves. Let Him spank you once in a while. Then you will be a true Son of His, destined for greatness and fit for His divine company. Seek the Little Book, dear friends, and let the truths contained in it fill your mouth, mind, heart and belly. Amen and Amen!

Day 19 ~ Don't Bug Agabus



“¹⁰ And as we stayed many days, a certain prophet named Agabus came down from Judea. ¹¹ When he had come to us, he took Paul's belt, bound his own hands and feet, and said, ‘Thus says the Holy Spirit, ‘So shall the Jews at Jerusalem bind the man who owns this belt, and deliver him into the hands of the Gentiles.’ ”

~ Acts 21:10-11

In yesterday's *E-Pistle*, we discussed the nature of prophecy and the office of the prophet in both the Old and new Testaments. We also dealt with some of the false doctrines which have arisen in the church during the last few decades, doctrines which have bound up the prophet and rendered the office powerless and a travesty. Normally, such a topic should only warrant one article, but I have found down through the years that when I present a truth to the body of Christ that is a little stern or unpleasant, I must go out of my way to defend and document what I am saying. We have been so pre-conditioned to only want to hear "happy" things that any time a man or woman of God stands up and presents an unpleasant truth, we are automatically branded as heretics and teachers of false doctrine. What is even more amazing to me is the staggering number of false doctrines which the church so readily accepts. It seems that the more ludicrous the teaching, the easier it is to gather a highly dedicated group of disciples around you, who will pour their time, their finances and, ultimately, their very lives into defending the insanity that they have embraced. Witness Jim Jones and Jonestown. Jones began as a minister of the Gospel of Jesus Christ, pastoring an inner city church in Indianapolis, IN. You can't get more "plain vanilla" than that. Yet before the matter was done, Jones had successfully convinced an entire community of people to relocate to Guyana and to commit suicide together. David Koresh and his "Wackos from Waco", the Heaven's Gate / Hale-Bopp Comet Group, and many, many others all cry out that insanity seems to be the rallying cry of the 20th and 21st Centuries. The current religious insanity that grips the world is one that sends young girls and boys into public places with C4 explosives strapped to their waist. Their goal? To kill themselves and as many "infidels" as possible at one time so as to gain assurance of entering Paradise.

In the church, we seem to be capable of eagerly embracing each new "wind of doctrine" as it comes down the pike, all the while steadfastly refusing to believe what the Word of God actually says. As long as the "prophetic voice" says **what we want it to say**, it does not matter to us what other doctrines, true or false, are introduced at the same time. But if that same voice says **what we need it to say**, it is a virtual guarantee that our ears will be closed to the truth. I apologize if I seem a bit bitter on this topic. I've just visited it so many times with so many people and almost always gotten the same result.

Let's consider at great length the doctrine that prophets in the church can only issue positive, affirming, encouraging, exhorting messages. Even though there are tons of Scriptures in the Old Testament shattering this theory, critics say, "Well, we live in the New Testament time of grace now. Prove what you are saying to me out of the New Testament, and I'll believe you". I took that challenge to heart and began to think about the best way to answer the challenge. The New Testament, like the Old Testament, is broken out into four distinct components. They are:

- (1) **Presentation** -- The four Gospels, where Jesus outlines this new Kingdom of God covenant in detail.
- (2) **Implementation** – The Book of Acts, where the infant church takes the Gospel and attempts to put it into action.
- (3) **Correction** -- All of the Epistles, written by Paul, Peter, James, Barnabas(?), from the Book of Romans all the way through the 7 Letters to the 7 Churches in Revelation. Every single Epistle says basically the same thing: I love you guys, **but...**
- (4) **Conclusion** – Closure on the story, in which the Presentation, despite the horrid Implementation and a total disregard for the Correction, nonetheless comes to a satisfactory end through God's great grace.

I looked at the structure of the New Testament and analyzed each book to see where most of the practical prophecy is contained. I finally settled on the Book of Acts, the implementation phase of the New Testament church. In the Book of Acts, there is a very interesting gentleman named **Agabus**, the first acknowledged full-time prophet in the New Testament. He issues two very notable prophecies, one over the church as a whole and one over the apostle Paul. Both come to pass exactly as he had spoken them. Using his name as a cute alliterative, I then researched each and every prophecy uttered in the Book of Acts to see if it qualified as "good news", meeting the limited Pauline standard currently in vogue in most Charismatic churches, or "bad news", supporting the proposal that prophecy in the Old Testament and the New Testament are fundamentally the same, both in concept and in implementation. What I discovered was fascinating, and I want to share it with you, dear readers, so that if some true prophetic individual "reads your mail" and finds some correspondence contained therein that isn't so nice, you will be willing to suck it up and be a **Timex Christian**. What is a "Timex Christian"? Many years ago there was a great reporter named John Cameron Swayze who was famous for coining catchphrases. When asked to do a Timex watch commercial, he came up with the near-immortal phrase "*Timex – Takes a Licking and Keeps On Ticking!*" This is how it should be with Christians. We should be able to take a licking and keep right on ticking for the Lord.

Having decided what approach to take, I once again reached for my lined tablet of paper, and started listing stuff. I found approximately **20 prophecies** in the Book of Acts. Some of them were uttered by Jesus Himself. One was given by two angels. Some were given by Peter, some by Paul, some by Judas, some by Silas, some by a ministry team and, last but certainly not least, by Agabus himself, the hero of this tale. As I encountered each prophecy, I had to decide whether it was "good new", "bad news" or a combination of the two. I discovered that out of the 20 prophetic passages, there were **12 "good news" statements and 11 "bad news" statements**. Hmmm... A near dead heat. Interestingly enough, only 9 of the 12 "good news" prophecies were **all** good news. The other four were a mixture of "good news" and "bad news". Conversely, of the "bad news" prophecies, only 8 were bad news only; again, the other four were a mixture of both good and bad news. The conclusion was pretty much what I expected it to be. Prophecy in the New Testament was no different than prophecy in the Old Testament, despite what Paul says to the church in Corinth. In the Old Testament, you have terrible warnings of great destruction. You also have wonderful promises of tremendous deliverance. The classic Old Testament example of this model of a little of this and a little of that is found in the Book of Deuteronomy, Chapter 28. Many people are familiar with the first 14 verses. We had this passage hand lettered in calligraphy on parchment paper, then framed and placed on our wall. Bev and I frequently repeat this blessing out loud over us, our household and our family. Here is the blessing part:

*"¹ Now it shall come to pass, **if you diligently obey** the voice of the LORD your God, to **observe carefully** all His commandments which I command you today, that the LORD your God **will set you high above all nations of the earth.** ² And all these blessings shall **come upon you and overtake you, because you obey the voice of the LORD your God:** ³ **Blessed shall you be in the city, and blessed shall you be in the country.** ⁴ **Blessed shall be the fruit of your body, the produce of your ground and the increase of your herds, the increase of your cattle and the offspring of your flocks.** ⁵ **Blessed shall be your basket and your kneading bowl.** ⁶ **Blessed shall you be when you come in, and blessed shall you be when you go out.** ⁷ The LORD will cause your enemies who rise against you to be defeated before your face; **they shall come out against you one way and flee before you seven ways.** ⁸ The LORD will command the blessing on **you in your storehouses***

and **in all to which you set your hand**, and He will bless you in the land which the LORD your God is giving you. ⁹ The LORD will establish you as a holy people to Himself, just as He has sworn to you, if you keep the commandments of the LORD your God and walk in His ways. ¹⁰ Then all peoples of the earth shall see that you are called by the name of the LORD, and **they shall be afraid of you.** ¹¹ **And the LORD will grant you plenty of goods, in the fruit of your body, in the increase of your livestock, and in the produce of your ground, in the land of which the LORD swore to your fathers to give you.** ¹² **The LORD will open to you His good treasure, the heavens, to give the rain to your land in its season, and to bless all the work of your hand. You shall lend to many nations, but you shall not borrow.** ¹³ And the LORD will make you **the head and not the tail; you shall be above only, and not be beneath**, if you heed the commandments of the LORD your God, which I command you today, and are careful to observe them. ¹⁴ So you shall not turn aside from any of the words which I command you this day, to the right or the left, to go after other gods to serve them.”
 -- Deuteronomy 28:1-14

Wow! Pretty awesome Scripture, huh? I want to recommend it to you, since **all** the promises of God find their Yea and Amen in Christ Jesus. I kinda like to think of the King James word Yea like our word Yeah! or Right On! When you read this passage of Scripture, keep saying, "Yeah! Right On! This is talking about **me!**" See, I really can be an encouraging kind of guy when the circumstances are right. We've seen wonderful miracles of provision occur as a result of speaking these promises together, out loud, standing in our front hallway, where the passage is displayed in a five foot by three foot frame.

If that were all of the passage, it would all be wunnerful and hunky-dory. But that's not where the passage ends. From verse 25 through verse 68, it's nothing but one piece of bad news after another. I won't take up the full amount of space required to show all the **bad** things that happen as a result of **disobedience**, but here's a small sample:

" ¹⁵ But it shall come to pass, if you do **not** obey the voice of the LORD your God, to observe carefully all His commandments and His statutes which I command you today, that **all these curses will come upon you and overtake you:** ¹⁶ **Cursed** shall you be in the city, and **cursed** shall you be in the country. ¹⁷ **Cursed** shall be your basket and your kneading bowl. ¹⁸ **Cursed** shall be the fruit of your body and the produce of your land, the increase of your cattle and the offspring of your flocks. ¹⁹ **Cursed** shall you be when you come in, and **cursed** shall you be when you go out. ²⁰ The LORD will send on you **cursing, confusion, and rebuke in all that you set your hand to do, until you are destroyed and until you perish quickly**, because of the wickedness of your doings in which you have forsaken Me. ²¹ The LORD will make the **plague cling to you until He has consumed you** from the land which you are going to possess. ²² The LORD will strike you with **consumption**, with **fever**, with **inflammation**, with **severe burning fever**, with **the sword**, with **scorching**, and with **mildew**; they shall pursue you until you perish. ²³ And your heavens which are over your head shall be bronze, and the earth which is under you shall be iron. ²⁴ The LORD will change the rain of your land to powder and dust; from the heaven it shall come down on you **until you are destroyed.**"
 - Deuteronomy 28:15-24

Ouch! Had enough! Remember, it goes on and on and on like this all the way to verse 68, and we only showed you through verse 24. That's how prophecy is all through the Bible. Some good news, some bad news. To further prove the point, let's take a quick look at each of those prophecies in the Book of Acts, just so you can see that I'm not making this up:

<u>Prophecy</u>	<u>Given By</u>	<u>Topic</u>	<u>Scripture</u>	<u>Good News</u>	<u>Bad News</u>
1.	Jesus	Outpouring of the Holy Spirit	Acts 1:4-5	x	

(Good news, indeed! In just a few days, the disciples would be baptized in the Holy Spirit! Yea!)

<u>Prophecy</u>	<u>Given By</u>	<u>Topic</u>	<u>Scripture</u>	<u>Good News</u>	<u>Bad News</u>
2.	Jesus	Outpouring of the Holy Spirit	Acts 1:6-8	x	x
<p>(Good and bad news. Bad news in that it was pretty obvious by Jesus' response to their question about restoring the kingdom to Israel that their cherished dream wasn't about to happen just yet. Additional bad news was the fact that the information they wanted was strictly on a need-to-know basis, and they didn't need to know. If they had known that it would take almost 2,000 before the Jews would return to Jerusalem, they would have quit before they started. On the other hand, the really good news was that they would be endued with power when the Holy Spirit came on them and they would be witnesses from Jerusalem out to the whole world.)</p>					
3.	Two Angels	The Second Coming of Christ	Acts 1:9-11	x	
<p>(Strictly good news here. The way you saw Him go is the way you will see Him return.)</p>					
4.	Peter	Ananias and Sapphira	Acts 5:1-11		x
<p>(No way this prophecy can be interpreted as exhorting, edifying or encouraging. Peter is dealing with two people here who have made a quality decision to lie to the Holy Spirit. Is it gonna cost them? Oh, boy! Is it ever! The immediate fulfillment of the prophecy has them both pushing daisies.)</p>					
5.	Peter	Simon the Magician	Acts 8:9-24		x
<p>(Another definite downer! Peter would have been pitched out of most Charismatic churches by this point in time! Peter is not the least bit gentle or encouraging to a man who wants to buy the power to transmit the Holy Spirit through the laying on of hands. He not-so-gently tells Simon that both he and his money can go to...oops, can't use that phrase in this book!)</p>					
6.	Jesus	Paul's ministry to the Gentiles	Acts 9:10-16	x	x
<p>(Another mixed metaphor! Good news, Paul! You are chosen vessel to take the Name of Jesus before the Gentiles! Bad news, Paul! Ananias, after healing your scorched corneas, is going to tell you how much you are going to have to suffer as a result of that wonderful privilege.)</p>					
7.	An Angel	Cornelius and the Holy Spirit	Acts 10:1-48	x	
<p>(Absolute good news! Buddy, your prayers and your giving have gone up as an offering before God. Guess what? You and your whole household are going to be the very first Gentiles to have the Holy Spirit poured out on them just like the Jews did in Jerusalem on Pentecost. It won't be good news for Paul, though, when he has to return to Jerusalem and explain what on earth he was doing in a Gentile house, for crying out loud!)</p>					
8.	Agabus	Famine throughout the world	Acts 11:27-30		x
<p>(This one's pretty clear. People starving to death is never good news. It is good news that the people are warned, so that they can prepare in advance, but a famine is never good news.)</p>					

<u>Prophecy</u>	<u>Given By</u>	<u>Topic</u>	<u>Scripture</u>	<u>Good News</u>	<u>Bad News</u>
9.	Antioch Council	Paul & Barnabas chosen as first evangelists/missionaries	Acts 13:1-4	x	

(This one's also a no-brainer. You have an absolutely cool, Spirit-filled council consisting of three Jewish members [Barnabas, Paul and Manaen] and two Black Gentile members [Simeon **Niger** and Lucius of Cyrene, reported to be the son of Simon of Cyrene, who carried the cross of Christ, and from a region in Africa which was totally Black at that time]. They are praying and fasting. The decision is unanimous. Whoever spoke out the prophecy received total support from the other four.)

10.	Paul	The False Prophet Elymas	Acts 13:6-12		x
-----	------	--------------------------	--------------	--	---

(Elymas had it coming in spades! First of all, his other name was **Bar-Jesus**, or **son of Jesus!** This slimeball not only openly opposed the Gospel of Jesus Christ, he also claimed to be Jesus' Son! What an arrogant jerk! Paul cooked his kettle of fish nicely by calling a black mist to come and surround his face. How do we know? Easy! The mist was tangible, and could be seen by all those around him.)

11.	Judas & Silas	Encouraging the church at Antioch	Acts 15:30-32	x	
-----	---------------	-----------------------------------	---------------	---	--

(Nuff said! Encouraging a church which is already living right to keep on keepin' on!)

12.	Jesus	Encourage Paul	Acts 18:9-11	x	
-----	-------	----------------	--------------	---	--

(Paul has been experiencing great results and great opposition at the same time, just as it always is when the Gospel is truly proclaimed. Jesus wanted him to know that his mission wasn't done and that he should keep on doing what he was doing, because he would be protected.)

13.	Paul	Resurrecting Eutychus	Acts 20:7-12	x	
-----	------	-----------------------	--------------	---	--

(Some people argue that Eutychus only was knocked unconscious when he fell two stories out of a window after falling asleep late at night as Paul preached. But if you read the passage carefully, you will see that he was **taken up dead**. Paul, acting in accordance with the same principles that Jesus, Elijah and Elisha used, **lay down across his dead body, embraced him, and spoke life back into him prophetically**. Clearly a case of good news for Eutychus, his parents and everyone there. Perhaps also for Paul, who didn't want to be accused of boring someone to death with his preaching...)

14.	Paul	Farewell at Ephesus	Acts 20:17-38		x
-----	------	---------------------	---------------	--	---

(Multiple pieces of bad news. First, you aren't ever going to see me again [Hint: I'm going to die before I get to come back here]. Second, after I leave, false teachers are going to come in after me and prey on the congregation as if they were wolves and the members of the congregation were sheep. Third, I am going to Jerusalem bound, anticipating my death. Nothing positive worth noting, except that Paul made it clear he had taught them to the very best of his ability.)

15.	Agabus	Paul bound at Jerusalem	Acts 21:10-14		x
-----	--------	-------------------------	---------------	--	---

(Definite bad news. Agabus confirms prophetically what Paul had already said at Ephesus. He was going to go to Jerusalem, be bound and arrested, and taken somewhere he didn't want to go)

<u>Prophecy</u>	<u>Given By</u>	<u>Topic</u>	<u>Scripture</u>	<u>Good News</u>	<u>Bad News</u>
16.	Jesus	Tells Paul to leave Jerusalem	Acts 22:17-24		x

(Paul admits in his letter to the church at Rome that he would gladly trade his own salvation and his immortal soul away if it meant that his countrymen, the Jews, could be saved. Bad news, Paul! Jesus warns him that no matter how hard he tries, they are not going to receive him or his message. Ouch! Talk about rejection! That hurts!)

17.	Jesus	Paul to bear witness in Rome	Acts 23:10-11		x
-----	-------	------------------------------	---------------	--	---

(Good news in a bad situation. Paul has just been jailed, and they are arguing about what to do with him. Jesus personally appears to Paul to let him know that even though he has been rejected in Jerusalem, Rome will get to hear him instead. All things considered, not a bad trade-off.)

18.	Jesus	Jesus' Commission to Paul	Acts 26:12-20		x
-----	-------	---------------------------	---------------	--	---

(Paul recounts his encounter with Jesus, how he was knocked off his horse and blinded, and how Jesus appeared to him and told him exactly what he was going to be doing from now on. One of the most remarkable commissioning experiences recorded in the Bible. Definite good news.)

19.	Paul	Wreck of ship going to Rome	Acts 27:7-10		x
-----	------	-----------------------------	--------------	--	---

(A classic example of what happens when people don't listen to a true prophet of God. Kind of fits in the "I told you so" category.)

20.	An Angel	Passengers of ship to be rescued from drowning	Acts 27:21-26		x
-----	----------	--	---------------	--	---

(The ship may be going down, but no one is going to drown! Good news in a bad situation! And another clear evidence of the fact that Paul hears from God. Soon, even the Centurion guarding him and the other prisoners believe in the God of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob.)

That's it! When all the smoke clears, the prophetic totals are **12 for Good News**, and **11 for Bad News**. Almost a flat-footed tie and certainly **not** a piece of evidence to support the "only good news" doctrine currently in vogue in most Charismatic churches. There is a balance in all of this, as with all things. I don't encourage young prophets or prophetesses to prophesy bad things right away. Usually, their discernment antenna aren't working all that well at first, so they have trouble getting the details right. I clearly remember the first time the Lord spoke to me about someone I was praying for. As the woman knelt and I leaned forward to pray for her, I clearly heard the Holy Spirit say, "Baby". I immediately announced to her that she was going to **have** a baby. That wasn't true. She wasn't pregnant. She **wanted** to have a baby. I didn't know that I had to stop and ask for details. I've come a long way since then, but I still stop to ask directions along the way. I'm only as good as the anointing that abides in me, and it is only as good as the degree to which I stir it up inside of me before I begin to minister. So much to teach, so much to learn! Rookie prophetic voices should probably restrict themselves to good news until they get their feet wet and begin to have a clearer, more accurate feel for the presence of the Holy Spirit. Unfortunately, most of us don't do that. We get a scrap of a prophetic word and off we go! A mature prophet learns to wait, listen and learn before ever stepping out. Eventually, some congregational prophets will grow beyond the walls of their congregation. They will begin to minister to **multiple** congregations, perhaps developing a circuit as Samuel, Elijah and Elisha did during their ministries. They also need to study how other prophets learned to hear from God and deal with the negativity inherent in their circumstances by studying the prophets who came before them. Daniel learned how to be a prophet by studying the works of Jeremiah, his immediate prophetic predecessor. He also learned about Jeremiah's prophecy of the 70 years in the process, and then received his own prophecy regarding the 70 weeks of years for which he is famous for. He discovered the name of King Cyrus by studying the works of the prophet Isaiah. The

more he studied to show himself approved, the more approved he became. The more he devoted himself to prayer and the ministry of the Word, the more the Word came alive in and for him. It is a good lesson to be learned by all prophets, not just young ones.

Older prophets must battle several issues. First of all, they are dealing with the affairs of men's lives and the conditions of men's hearts. **An incorrect prophecy can lead to disaster** and draw good people into bad situations. There is far too much carelessness in the prophetic movement today. There is very little attention paid to credentials and experience. Too much flash. Too much trash. Not enough time waiting on the Lord. Second of all, an experienced prophet should never be drawn into a situation where he is **expected to prophesy to everyone**. I strongly oppose those prophetic schools which teach and practice that a prophet should have something to say to everyone. Wrong! A prophet is obligated to say **only what God tells him or her to say, when He tells them to say it**. Jeremiah had to deal with the same situation in his day. Everyone wanted him to prophesy that the big bad Babylonians would go away and Jerusalem would be saved yet again, even though no one there was living right at the time. There were plenty of false prophets who were more than glad to give them a "word from the Lord", even if God didn't say it!

¹⁶ Thus says the LORD of hosts: **'Do not listen to the words of the prophets who prophesy to you. They make you worthless; they speak a vision of their own heart, not from the mouth of the LORD.** ¹⁷ **They continually say to those who despise Me, 'The LORD has said, 'You shall have peace' '; and to everyone who walks according to the dictates of his own heart, they say, 'No evil shall come upon you.'** ¹⁸ For who has stood in the counsel of the LORD, and has perceived and heard His word? Who has marked His word and heard *it*? ¹⁹ Behold, a whirlwind of the LORD has gone forth in fury— A violent whirlwind! It will fall violently on the head of the wicked. ²⁰ The anger of the LORD will not turn back until He has executed and performed the thoughts of His heart. In the latter days you will understand it perfectly. ²¹ **'I have not sent these prophets, yet they ran. I have not spoken to them, yet they prophesied.** ²² **But if they had stood in My counsel, and had caused My people to hear My words, then they would have turned them from their evil way and from the evil of their doings.**' -- Jeremiah 23:16-22

That's a pretty grim scenario, isn't it? The danger in the prophetic ministry is manifold. There is always the temptation to say what people want to hear. Many people come to me and attempt to "prime the pump". What do I mean by that? Let's say someone is wrestling with whether they should go to Kenya as a missionary. They will come to me and say something like this: "*Oh, Bother Ray! Please pray for me! I need to hear from God as to whether I am supposed to be a missionary in Kenya. What do you think? What does the Lord say?*" At this point, they have probably ruined any chance of me hearing from God for them. They have already **predisposed my intellect** in the direction they want it to go. Now, it is **twice** as hard for me to hear from God for them. I must first dismiss what my ears have heard, if I can. Then, if the Lord does in fact speak to me about missionary work in Kenya, I have to be double sure that it is **Him, not me** that I am hearing. I often tell people to simply be quiet and say nothing. That way, if I speak the secrets of their hearts, they know that it was of the Lord, and not of their own soulish manipulation. There is always the danger of being forced into saying something prophetic even though you yourself have heard nothing from God. That is a very dangerous habit to get into. It can lead to spiritual deafness. I have found that as I minister to a group of people, it is better for me to allow the Holy Spirit to point out those individuals to me for whom He has a prophetic Word. That way, I am allowing the Holy Spirit to do the selecting, and not me. I will gladly pray **for** and agree **with** everyone, but I will not be coerced into issuing carnal, soulish prophecies over everyone who comes before me. Another danger arises when you **prophesy over someone because they have just given you a gift**. Now, it is highly Biblical for people to bring an offering for the Lord when they come before a full-time, itinerant prophet of God. Itinerant ministries have no congregation to rely on for a salary, and so must depend on the generosity of those to whom they are speaking and ministering to. We can always agree with the giver in prayer. We can ask God to multiply and bless what they have given. But beware prophesying over people because they are givers. Remember the widow and the two copper coins. Only God knows how much those two pennies were worth in heaven. On the flip side of the coin, I have also discovered that even though I may have nothing prophetic to say to an individual when they first come before me, as we enter into a season of prayer for them, the anointing may come on me and I may well receive a Word

of Knowledge or a Prophetic Utterance for them, but only after being in prayer for their specific situations and needs long enough for God to speak to me about them. And so I find at least two major avenues in the prophetic ministry that the Lord had entrusted me with. God does pick out individuals. They often receive the greatest miracles and most startlingly accurate prophecies. God may also generously supply supplemental revelation to those who come before me seeking prayer. But there is no guarantee that God will say something. Nonetheless, I have seen remarkable miracles come from simple prayers of agreement when the anointing of God is present.

I have also seen situations where I had to call a minister or ministry into accountability for things that they have done wrong. It is then that the fur really flies. This needs to be done much more often. As a general rule, this uncovering of sin should occur **in private**, rather than in public. Most of the time, the Lord will graciously and mercifully confront the individual who is walking in hidden sin and give them an opportunity, sometimes several opportunities, to repent from their works before He pulls the cover off and shames them in public. I will guarantee you that every single ministry that has crashed and burned in the last few years was privately rebuked by a prophetic individual long before their sins became public knowledge. Since baby Christians are damaged and often lost to the world again when their leaders fall, God tries to protect the babies by chiding the guardians privately. Perhaps one of the greatest offenders in our generation is "Bishop" Earl Paulk. For years there were rumors of sexual misconduct. For years there were cover-ups and payoffs and witnesses who suddenly wouldn't talk. And then the truth came out. Not only had Paulk been sleeping with multiple women in his congregation, he had also carried on a 15-year affair with his brother's wife, and his "nephew", who was his right hand man in the church, was actually his own son! And yet, even with the open admission of this sin, confirmed by DNA testing, Paulk remains in the pulpit of his church and is allowed to speak into the lives of others. I shudder to think what level of accountability he will have before the Almighty. When God plays back the tapes of him coercing and manipulating even his own praise and worship leaders into taking off their clothes so he could "love them", what will be the judgment levied against him? How many thousands of people have turned away from the Lord in hurt and disgust because the man that they looked up to as next to God Himself has perverted himself and his ministry for years on end?

Without a powerful prophetic and apostolic ministry in the church, there is no enforcement agency against the bad behavior of these individuals. But if there were a network of evangelists, prophets and apostles over the pastors who just happened to drop by from time to time, it would be much more difficult for these frauds to continue for long periods of time. Bogus prophets, who issue "blanket prosperity prophecies" over thousands of direct mail supporters would be drummed out of the ministry. Prophets who have lines for \$100, \$250, \$500 and \$1,000 prophecies would be drummed out of the ministry. Prophets who are now itinerant would be held up to accountability by a council of global apostles, who would have the power to revoke their ministries and even their lives if the rebellion, sin and deceit continued. Small wonder, then, that the Muslim world calls us "Satan America" and "The Big Satan". When they look at our "religion", and see this kind of shameless behavior, it is small wonder that they consider themselves to be spiritually and morally superior to us. We have legitimately earned the contempt which the world holds us in. It is time for the church to grow up, clean up, step up and power up! Let's replace this circus side-show with a network of accountable ministers and ministries. Let's give our people accurate, corrective and encouraging prophecies, designed to meet the specific situation as God would speak into it. Let's raise up a body of believers who are mature, correctable and willing to grow into the "fullness of the measure of the stature of Christ". And then, the Word of the Lord will not only be sweet in the mouths of the prophets, it will also bring peace into our bellies as well, with a body of believers that is finally fitly capable of being joined to the head, even the Lord Jesus Christ Himself. All glory and honor and praise be unto Him who lives forever! Amen and Amen!

Day 20 ~ Blueprints From the Future



“¹ Then I was given a reed like a measuring rod. And the angel stood, saying, ‘Rise and measure the temple of God, the altar, and those who worship there.’² But leave out the court which is outside the temple, and do not measure it, for it has been given to the Gentiles. And they will tread the holy city underfoot for forty-two months” ~ Revelation 11:1-2

As we enter into the 11th Chapter of Revelation, we find yet another parallel to a passage in the Old Testament. Before we begin examining the Two Witnesses in depth, we need to take a quick peek at the Apostle John as Carpenter’s Apprentice. Through most of this incredible vision from God (remember the **entire** Book of Revelation is a single continuous vision, by far the largest vision ever received in the entire Bible), John has been a **spectator**, watching in mute amazement as one event after another unfolds before his wondering eyes. But in Chapter 10 he suddenly finds himself an active **participator** in the events. So often, this is the case in our relationship with the Lord. We start from a position of unbelief. Then we discover that there really is a God and that He can and does answer prayer. Gradually, we come to understand that there is nothing that the Lord cannot do. We begin to hunger to be able to **witness** the things of God. A witness is merely someone who has **witnessed or seen something** and is now willing to **tell others what they have seen**. Finally, we get our big break. The Lord does something supernatural in our presence. Now we have actually seen the hand of God in action. We not only **believe** that such things are possible, we now **know** that they are real. It has been often said that a man with an **experience** is never at the mercy of a man with an **argument**. I remember that as a child growing up in church, I was told many times by my parents, my Sunday School teachers and my pastors that God was real. But when I was sixteen, I and a young lady had an incredible experience involving the presence and power of God. After the experience was over, we shared what each of us had felt and compared notes. Much to our amazement, we had experienced **exactly the same sensations and feelings** even though we had been unable to speak during the actual event. From that point on, no one could ever tell me that God was not real. I had a personal **experience** which made me a **witness**. Being a witness is good, but there is something better. And that is being a **participant** in the event, being a part of making it actually happen. I have had the privilege of seeing untold hundreds of people healed during my ministry. Frankly, it should be a normal experience for every single pastor out there, not to mention every single believer as well. If your life is empty of the supernatural power of God, and you earnestly desire that it be filled with His power, begin to pray fervently, asking the Lord to use you. Let me share a series of practical examples of how this works. As I write this article, we are in Jeffersonville, IN visiting some of our children and grandchildren. I did not come down here to minister. I came down here to relax, enjoy Christmas, and knock out an article or two on the current book. On Christmas Day we traveled the two hours to Jeffersonville. Later on that day, I had a call from New Jersey that was ministry related and lasted about a half an hour. Later on that evening, another call came through, this time from New Albany from a dear young pastor who is going through marital problems. That call lasted an hour. The next day I was working on a book when a couple from Clarksville dropped by to see us. That ministry session lasted at least two or three hours. Much later on that night, I was trying to finish up this article when my son-in-law asked a question about ghosts. That conversation led into another conversation about the Holy Ghost and then into some serious personal needs that my daughter has. It was 2:30 in the morning when I went to bed, exhausted but pleased that the Lord had opened up the door for me to minister to her. And today, Bev and I traveled to a Western Union location to wire transfer some badly needed funds to Ruth and Raj and the kids of GSM. While I was there, I noticed that the older lady clerk was really not feeling well. I made a small comment to her about it not being much of a Merry Christmas for her. I also said that I would pray for her. Immediately her face lit up, and you

could see hope and joy pour into her. As soon as she was done entering the transaction, I took her hand, rebuked the sickness, poured the virtue of Jesus Christ into her, and concluded the prayer. When I left, she was beaming. There are an infinite number of opportunities out there to be used by God. All you have to do is build up the power of the Lord inside of you by praying in the Spirit, meditating on the Word, throw a little fasting in to ignite the whole thing, and then ask God to use what you have inside of you for His glory. You would be amazed at what the Lord will bring to you. I have had people walk up to me in a mall and ask me to pray for them, even though I had never met them before. Shocked, I asked them how they knew that I was a minister of the Gospel. They simply shrugged and said that the Lord had pointed me out to them and told them to go to me and ask for prayer. Since God is no respecter of persons, it then logically follows that if He will do it for me, He will do it for you.

As a participant, John had already been asked to take a little scroll from a big angel and eat it. Everything else from that point on should be easy. He was then asked to take what we would call a yardstick and do some measuring.

" ¹ Then I was given a reed like a **measuring rod**. And the angel stood, saying, 'Rise and **measure the temple of God, the altar, and those who worship there**. ² But leave out the court which is outside the temple, and **do not measure it**, for it has been given to the Gentiles. And they will tread the holy city underfoot for **forty-two months**' ". – Revelation 11:1-2

As with almost everything found in the Revelation of Jesus Christ, it echoes and mirrors another similar or identical event found in the Old Testament. This measuring thing is very big to God, particularly in the Book of Ezekiel, where the most amazing set of measurements ever are made by an angel of God.

" ² In visions of God He took me into the land of Israel and set me on a very high mountain, on it toward the south was something like the structure of a city. ³ He took me there, and behold, there was a man whose appearance was like the appearance of bronze. He had a **line of flax and a measuring rod** in his hand, and he stood in the gateway. ⁴ And the man said to me, 'Son of man, **look with your eyes and hear with your ears, and fix your mind on everything I show you; for you were brought here so that I might show them to you. Declare to the house of Israel everything you see**'. ⁵ Now there was a wall all around the outside of the temple. In the man's hand was a **measuring rod six cubits long, each being a cubit and a handbreadth; and he measured the width of the wall structure, one rod; and the height, one rod.**" -- Ezekiel 40:2-5

In order to understand what we are seeing here, a little explanation is in order. When the Bible talks about a **measuring rod**, it is referring to what we would call a **yardstick**. Today, we use retractable metal measuring tapes which make measuring much easier and more practical. But in my dad's day, such remarkable devices were not available. Instead, they relied on **rulers**, generally one foot long, and **yardsticks**, generally three feet or 36 inches long. If you go anywhere else in the world, you will find the **metric system**, consisting of **meters, centimeters and millimeters**. Neither of these standards was in use in Biblical times. Instead, a unit of measure called the **cubit** was used. What was a cubit? It was the most practical and most primitive way a man could measure anything without having any tools at his disposal. It is the **distance between the tip of the elbow and the tip of the index finger**. If you hold your arm out in front of you, bent at the elbow, you are looking at a cubit. Although the distance between those two points will vary from person to person, the generally assumed standard is 18 inches. My own arm has a length of 19½ inches. Most people don't understand how huge we are today in comparison to even our immediate ancestors. If you go to a museum and check out several suits of medieval armor, you will be amazed. The average height of most of those suits was about 5½ feet tall, and the knights were generally among the largest, tallest and strongest of the people of the day. Most of us would be considered giants if we were suddenly transported back in time, like Mark Twain's *Connecticut Yankee in King Arthur's Court*. According to the Bible, Goliath was about **9½ feet tall** and uniformly proportioned. The shaft of his spear was 25 pounds all by itself. Imagine if you were a teenager just a smidge over 5 feet tall and you were facing someone twice as big as you were. Imagine the level of faith required to go up against such an adversary!

We now know the length of a cubit. Unfortunately, we are not done with our research just yet. The passage above says that the base unit of measure was a cubit and a **handbreadth**. Now we need to find out what a handbreadth is, for crying out loud! Fortunately, the handbreadth is exactly what it sounds like it is, the **breadth or width of a hand**. If you hold your hand out, spread the fingers out to their maximum width and then measure from one end of your little finger to the other end of your thumb, you now have the correct unit of measure. Historically, a handbreadth was assumed to be about **6 inches**. My own hand measures about 8½ inches. Yeah, I know. I'll never get into a petite again. And I'm really kind of tiny compared to some of the pro athletes we have today. Imagine the sheer terror of an enemy army if a group of soldiers like the men in the WWE or the NFL showed up fully armored and brandishing swords and spears!

Now that we have figured out what a cubit and a handbreadth are, we can add the two units of measure together to see what actual length we are looking at. We already said that a cubit is considered to be 18 inches. Add to that the 6 additional inches of a handbreadth and we arrive at **24 inches**. Ezekiel says that the measuring stick was 6 times that length or **144 inches** or **12 feet long**. I find it to be absolutely amazing how remarkably consistent God is. I have been doing my measuring and calculating as I went along in this article. I had absolutely no idea how the final measurements would come out. How perfect is it that the final answer should be two of God's special numbers. Truly, He is the beginning and the end of all things.

Now that we have made the measurements to figure out how to make the measurements, we can ask ourselves exactly what the heck it is that we are measuring. It is at this point that we find out that this is no dreary drudge of a task. We are involved in an incredible exercise which violates every known law that we have regarding time travel. When Ezekiel first flew into Israel in the vision, he was placed on a **very high mountain**. Because it was so massive, he didn't recognize it for what it was. He didn't know it, but he was standing on the new and vastly improved **Mount Zion**. Another little known but amazing fact about the Millennial Reign is that during the 1,000 years when Christ rules and reigns from the throne of His father David there will only be **one major mountain in the entire earth**. During the massive earthquakes that shake the planet Earth to its very core, the final earthquake is so violent that it shatters the tectonic plates, causing **every mountain in the world to collapse back into the mantle**. Don't believe me? Let's check the Sacred Scriptures to see if these things be so.

*"¹² I looked when he opened the sixth seal, and behold, there was a **great earthquake**; and **the sun became black as sackcloth of hair**, and **the moon became like blood**. ¹³ And **the stars of heaven fell to the earth**, as a fig tree drops its late figs when it is shaken by a mighty wind. ¹⁴ Then the sky receded as a scroll when it is rolled up, and **every mountain and island was moved out of its place**." – Revelation 6:12-14*

In this first global earthquake since the Flood, the tectonic plates are badly shaken. As a result, several logical things also occur as a result of this megaquake. In shattering the tectonic plate, it clears the way for massive volcanic activity as well. There are a little over **300 active volcanoes** in the world, most of which are found around what is called the **Ring of Fire**, an irregular, quasi-circular chain of major fault lines around the boundaries of the Pacific Ocean. However, there are over **1,000 volcanoes total** all over the entire Earth. Imagine, if you will, the staggering amount of rock, ash, soot and poisonous gasses that would be released in just a matter of hours if all those 1,000 volcanoes began to erupt at the same time. I do my homework when I present facts like these to you. I have studied very carefully what would happen should a meteorite the size of a mountain, about six miles across and weighing over a billion tons strike the earth. Every time I watch yet another segment on the *Science Channel*, I find my projections and estimates are actually quite conservative in comparison to the scientifically calculated figures. Within just a few days, the earth would find itself in a total blackout, and the sun would literally become black as sackcloth and the moon would literally look like blood, all because there is so much dust and particulate matter in the atmosphere, so high up that it will block virtually all light and heat from the planet for an extended period of time. This is no momentary incident. These seals will take months, even years, to play out properly and as described in the Book itself. Most of the heavier pieces of volcanic material hurled into the air would come cascading back down on us in what would look like a meteorite shower. In reality, the materials in this case would not be coming from space, but rather from inside our very own planet.

To a non-scientific individual like John, it would indeed look like the stars were falling from heaven. And, most importantly, **every mountain and island would be moved out of its place.** John was a fisherman. He had no knowledge of the fact that islands are nothing more than undersea mountains that just happen to be taller than the water surrounding them is deep. From a tectonic standpoint, there is absolutely no difference between a mountain and an island. How could John have known? How is it that when you interpret the Sacred Scriptures as **literal, logical and chronological** that everything just happens to make perfect scientific sense? Just the ramblings of some ancient holy man? I think not.

That massive worldquake is bad, but not bad enough. A little work remains to be done. And God will take care of the *coup de grace* in Revelation Chapter 16.

" ¹⁸ *And there were noises and thunderings and lightnings; and there was a **great earthquake**, such a mighty and great earthquake **as had not occurred since men were on the earth.*** ¹⁹ *Now the great city was divided into three parts, and **the cities of the nations fell.*** *And great Babylon was remembered before God, to give her the cup of the wine of the fierceness of His wrath.* ²⁰ *Then **every island fled away, and the mountains were not found.*** ²¹ *And **great hail from heaven fell upon men, each hailstone about the weight of a talent.*** *Men blasphemed God because of the plague of the hail, since that plague was exceedingly great."* -- Revelation 16:18-21

The previous **megaquake** equaled its predecessor at the time of the Flood. This final **ultraquake** is unmatched in the entire history of mankind. The mountains and islands, already weakened and moved by the previous shattering of the tectonic plates, now collapse under their own weight into the magma as the remaining stability of the shattered plates gives way completely. Volcanic eruptions, already off the chart, now reach epic proportions, as stones each weighing about **100 pounds each** are hurled into the outer atmosphere, only to reenter as the largest hailstones in the history of the planet.

Now all the mountains are gone. The irregularities of our planet's surface are smoothed over, just as Isaiah prophesied.

" ³ *The voice of one crying in the wilderness; 'Prepare the way of the Lord; Make straight in the desert a highway for our God.* ⁴ ***Every valley shall be exalted and every mountain and hill brought low; the crooked places shall be made straight and the rough places smooth;*** ⁵ *The glory of the Lord shall be revealed, and all flesh shall see it together; for the mouth of the Lord has spoken' ".*

- Isaiah 40:3-5

One final geological operation must be performed before we can transport Ezekiel in the Spirit far into the future. Mount Zion must be established as the premier and sole mountain in the world and it must be larger than any mountain has ever been before it.

" ² *Now it shall come to pass that **in the latter days that the mountain of the Lord's house shall be established on top of the mountains, and shall be exalted above the hills; and all nations shall flow to it"*** - Isaiah 2:2

In a unique parallel Scripture, Micah gives the **exact same prophecy, word for word** in Chapter 4, Verse 1. It is one of only a few places where the Lord said **exactly the same thing to two different prophets.** Since their job is to listen and repeat the witness given them by God, you can't justly accuse Micah of plagiarism. It would have been considered a sin of enormous magnitude for one true prophet of God to steal the words of another true prophet of God. That might have been the way things worked among the false prophets, but such was not the case for those few men who stood in the presence of the one true God in order to hear His voice and do His will.

Now, after **much** work and research, we finally have the huge mountain that Ezekiel is standing on. Small wonder, then, that he does not recognize it. The familiar terrain that he once knew is no more. Perhaps the only familiar markings are the boundaries of the Mediterranean Ocean and the Jordan River. Everything else is gone. And on the side of this mountain is an extremely large group of buildings, so large that they look like a city. Little does he know that in the 1,000 year reign of Jesus

Christ, **the temple is so large that it looks like a city** from high above. Having received a 12 foot measuring stick, the angel then takes Ezekiel all across the temple/city, taking measurements of **everything**. Ezekiel dutifully writes every measurement down, along with the detailed descriptions of how everything is to be constructed. Supplemental instructions are included for the purified priesthood that extend all the way to the end of Chapter 48 and close the prophecy. I have an extended teaching on this subject called *The Ultimate Temple*, but the temple itself is not our subject for today.

We do need to discuss the incredible time paradox involved in this vision. I want you to think carefully with me, because I am going to discuss one of the many apparent paradoxes of time travel, even if it is in the Spirit realm. Consider the following facts: Ezekiel lived a very long time ago. During his life time, the children of Israel were in the process of being taken into captivity by the Babylonians. After that would come 70 years of exile, followed by the remarkable prophecies of Daniel, pointing 490 years into the future and to the Messiah who was to come. In the intervening period, Judea would again fall to enemy forces and be destroyed. The Maccabees would fight their heroic struggles. The Romans would come and once again enslave the Jews. In the fullness of time, Christ would come to set His people free from their sins, but not their political enslavement. He would consequently be rejected, crucified, dead and buried. On the third day He would rise from the dead and shortly thereafter ascend into heaven. Rome would come in 70 AD to provide final punishment for the rebels of Palestine, and the terrible *Diaspora* would begin. Almost 2,000 years would pass before the Jews would be allowed to return to their homeland. And all the while, Ezekiel's prophecy slept, awaiting the day of its fulfillment. Finally, the terrible events of Revelation would occur. The earth would be torn asunder, shredded by forces which we cannot even begin to understand. The tectonic plates would shatter, and then collapse into mush, taking the mountains and islands with them back into a mass of glowing goo under the shallow shell of the earth that we know. Then one mountain will be thrust back up, this time of massive proportions. On the side of that mountain a great and wonderful temple will be built. That temple will stand undamaged for 1,000 years until we have a new Heavens and a New Earth and no longer need a temple, for the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb Himself are the temple then. But this fifth and final temple will stand for the duration of the millennium, constructed based on the detailed designs written down thousands of years before, when a man of God stood in the Spirit in the future and wrote down what He saw and what he was told.

Here, then, is the paradox. The temple is in the **future**. It does not yet exist. The instructions for building were written down in the distant **past**, when it did not exist, long before it was to be constructed. So the instructions for building the final temple **which does not yet exist** are created by measuring and writing down the dimensions of a building that **does not exist then, but does exist in the future**. As with many, many critical parts of the Bible, something **becomes the model for its own design**. In the natural, that cannot happen. Something cannot exist before it is built. You cannot measure your house and take the blueprints to the architect so that the house can be constructed. **It is a paradox**. In our linear view of space-time, this cannot be. It cannot happen. It cannot exist. Yet it does. Time is looping back into itself.

Are there other examples? Yes. In fact, one of the most important facts in all of Scripture is a similar closed loop in time. The Bible says in Hebrews that Jesus is a priest forever, of the Order of Melchizidek. Melchizidek holds his office by the power of an indestructible or eternal life. Yet only one person has that claim to fame, the Lord Jesus Christ Himself. After his resurrection in AD 33, Christ traveled back in time with that time and change-immune eternal body, intersecting and changing our history in order to achieve a series of desired results. He becomes the 4th man in the fiery furnace. He wrestles with Jacob at the Jordan. He is the Commander in Chief of the Lord's armies speaking with Joshua. He is Melchizidek meeting Abram to offer him communion in the form of bread and wine, thus joining him across space and time with the Apostles in the Upper Room. And finally, He is the Lord Himself, forming space, time and the universe itself, shaping a single planet so that it can hold life, then planting a garden, and kneeling down beside the reddish-brown soil and gathering it up together into a form just like His, to make Adam a living soul. In every case, **He becomes His own prototype and model**, Melchizidek to Christ, and Jesus Himself as the one who forms Adam in **His own image**.

Make your head hurt? Probably. Don't feel bad. You have to chew on things like this for a while before you start to get the hang of them. Sound a little like Science Fiction? No doubt. But remember

that God is the ultimate scientist. His science is so much more far out and strange than the strangest science fiction we could ever imagine.

All of that explains the measuring of the fifth and final temple. The first temple had been built by Solomon, acting on the divinely transmitted blueprints of his father David. The second temple had been rebuilt after the 70 years in exile by Ezra and his followers, so pale in comparison to the original temple that when it was finally dedicated, the younger Jews celebrated and cheered, for they had never known the original temple of Solomon. But the older Jews, who remembered how wonderful Solomon's temple had been, wept instead of cheering. So evenly divided was the crowd that day that those who heard the sound from far away could not tell if the people were crying or cheering. The third temple was built by the not-so-godly Herod, in an attempt to please and pacify the Jews under Roman occupation. The fourth temple has yet to be built, but the cornerstone has already been laid by the Temple Mount Guardians in anticipation of the restoration of the daily sacrifice. This temple, the one concerning John in his vision, must be in place in order for it to be defiled by the Anti-Christ, as he stands in the temple of God proclaiming himself to be God. In John's vision, the fourth temple has been built but not yet defiled by the Anti-Christ. Why then is he asked to measure it? What is God's motive in all of this? Perhaps it was to say that even during this difficult and traumatic time on earth, there was still a place that belonged uniquely to God; that He still had his "turf" amongst the machinations of the monster, the beast that arises from the sea. But in his measurements, John is instructed to leave out the Outer Court, the Court of the Gentiles, for it has been given to the Gentiles, to be trodden down by them. In the original design of the temple and its grounds, the outermost court was the Court of the Gentiles, for the *Goyyim*, the unwashed, the dogs. Inside of that was the Court of the Women. Inside of that was the Court of the Men, the Israel Court. Inside of that was the Holy Place, where only the priests could go. And inside of that was the Holiest Place, or Holy of Holies, where only the High Priest could go, and then only once a year, with a bowl of blood to offer up for his sins and for the sins of the people. It was there that the Ark of the Covenant was found in the original temple. By having John measure everything, the Lord is assuring him and us that He has the boundaries of everything and everyone already assigned. Satan will not be permitted to step beyond the boundaries which the Almighty has assigned to him. Eventually he will be stopped. Only part of the temple will be surrendered to the operations of those who are enemies of God. How long will they hold this part of the temple? 42 months, or 3½ years, half of the seven year period of Daniel's which most Bible expositors erroneously place with the Tribulation. In reality, this seven year, 3½/3½ split period of time does not occur until Chapter 13 of Revelation, the time of the Beast, and the title of this Episode. During the first 3½ years, the two Witnesses and their enormous prophetic powers will hinder the activities of the Anti-Christ. Eventually, Abbadon or Apollyon, the monstrous demon that came out of the Abyss earlier in this Episode will be called upon to attack them. So great is their power that no human can stop them, only one of the most powerful demons of all time can do it. But that is not our story for today. That is our story for tomorrow, when we will witness the ascension of the two greatest prophets of all time, the Two Witnesses, and we will learn a great deal about the ***Elijah Who Is To Come***. Until then, may **your** witness for the Living Christ be pure, spotless, and filled with His power and His glory. Amen and Amen!

Day 21 ~ Elijah Who Is to Come



“¹⁰ For this is he of whom it is written: ‘Behold I send My messenger before Your face, who will prepare Your way before You.’ ¹¹ Assuredly, I say to you, among those born of women there has not risen one greater than John the Baptist; but he who is least in the kingdom of heaven is greater than he. ¹² And from the days of John the Baptist until now the kingdom of heaven suffers violence, and the violent take it by force. ¹³ For all the prophets and the law prophesied until John. ¹⁴ And if you are willing to receive it, he is Elijah who is to come”. — Matthew 11:10-14

We now come to a topic on which there has been more bad, uninformed teaching than almost any topic in the Bible. It would probably rank #3 on the Clueless Sermon list, with the Timing of the Rapture ranked #1 by a huge margin, followed by The Identity and Time of the Appearance of the Anti-Christ at #2. Before we get into what's **right**, we need to discuss what's **wrong** in terms of teaching about this subject. First of all, these two men are **not**, I repeat, **not** Moses and Elijah come back from the dead. I have heard this taught by major ministries on TV. It is not only not true, it is **impossible**. Why do I say that? Because the Bible clearly teaches that **it is appointed unto a man once to die, and then the judgment** (Hebrews 9:27). If you say that these two super-prophets are Moses and Elijah come back from the dead, then you are saying that you subscribe to the doctrine of **reincarnation**, one of the most hellish doctrines of demons ever unleashed on the world. Why am I so harsh about this matter? Because I have seen what the doctrine of reincarnation has done to the brilliant, innovative people of India over thousands of years of servitude to it. At first glance, reincarnation doesn't seem like such a bad idea. If you break the phrase down and look at the **etymology** or root word study of the word, what it really means is **re-** (to do again) **in-** (to enter into) **carne-** (the flesh) **ion** (the process of doing so). Turn that into an English sentence, and you get **the process of entering into the flesh a second time**. As I said, at first it looks like a good deal. Don't get it right in this life, and you get a bonus round or an extra life, just like some video game, so that you can keep on playing. The theory is that after a few turns, you finally get it right, and get to go to Heaven, Nirvana, Paradise or wherever it is that you think you're going. There are, however, some very nasty hidden catches in the fine print once you begin playing the game. Let's say that you were born as Joe or Jane Average, and that you lived an average life with some sinful actions and some good actions. When you died, your life was really a wash, with the good canceling out the evil and vice versa. So, where do you go? You're not good enough to go to Heaven and not bad enough to go to Hell. This is why, after the Catholic Church adopted the doctrine of Universal Salvation (everybody gets to go to Heaven, no matter how bad they are) during the Middle Ages, they also had to invent Purgatory. Purgatory is a place where you go if you're not good enough to go to Heaven. From there, your faithful family and friends can pray, light candles and pay indulgences to the local priest until enough good "karma" has accumulated to drag your sorry carcass into a place where you no more belong than a rapist in a Nunnery. With the doctrine of reincarnation, however, you are simply recycled. You find yourself reborn into another life, **but with no knowledge of what you did right or wrong in your previous life**. Talk about not being able to learn from your mistakes! Now re-in-carnated, you take your new body for a spin around life. Once done, you die, and then you either stay where you are, move up the food chain, or move down the food chain. If you are bad enough long enough, you may very well find yourself reincarnated as a cow, a chicken or a cockroach. And since these creatures have no ability to discern right from wrong, you may well find yourself trapped in animal bodies for all eternity. Sounds like fun, right? But even if you are a good guy or a good girl, you still have a long way to go. Even a life lived well only permits a slight increase in your spiritual rebirth status. In talking with Hindu theologians who have researched the doctrine of reincarnation thoroughly and spent much time discussing the matter, we found out that it would probably take a **minimum of 10,000 lifetimes**

before Nirvana could be achieved. 10,000??? And guess what happens when you finally arrive at this most desired of all conditions? **You cease to exist.** You are swallowed up into the Cosmic Consciousness and become one with the universe, losing your identity forever. Wow. Thanks a lot. That's what I've always wanted for Christmas, dad! Of course, when you consider that you have to live and live and live and live... for at minimum of 10,000 times, you would be so tired of being you that **not** being you might be an attractive proposition.

That's bad enough, all by itself. But there is more. **Much more.** In addition to all of what we just said above, a corollary doctrine also automatically develops. This is where we get into the fine print, and we find out that any deal signed with the Devil always turns out bad for us. Since you are **where you are and what you are in your present life because of what you did in your previous life, there is no sense to attempt to change your life or anyone else's life.** If you are sick, it is because of your bad karma in your previous life. If you are rich and famous, it is because of your good karma. Since people are where they are because of what they did, it seems only fair and reasonable for them to sit quietly and suffer through this lifetime, for in so doing, they will build up good karma again so that the next time they are reborn, they may suffer a little less. The whole reincarnation thing turns into **an eternity of suffering, after which you simply disappear.** Sounds like our Christian definition of Hell, doesn't it??? As a result, the prevailing mindset in India is to do **nothing** about the lives of the poor and oppressed, other than to steal from them and oppress them. They deserve it, after all, don't they? If they had been good in their previous lifetime, none of this would be happening to them, would it? See the nightmare this creates? This is why, when you go to India, you find the streets of every city lined with beggars and orphans, left to suffer, be molested and die **because of the bad karma they created in their "previous" lifetime!** See why I call it a Doctrine of Demons? It is not without significance that India just happens to have more "gods" than any other nation in the world. It is a calling card to every unclear spirit throughout the whole world. Come one, come all! Come and see a nation in which every soul is a potential host. Come and see a nation in which every tin-horn two-bit demon can parade themselves around as if they were really God Himself! Come to a nation in which no man cares about the fate of his fellow-man.

Now contrast that theology with Christianity. You are born, you live and you die. Once time around. No second chances. But no eternal loop, either. And even though every soul gets only one pass through life; **every soul has equal opportunity for eternal life.** "*Whosoever will*" is the cry of Christianity. And better than that is the fact that there really is a God, one true God, who **loves you personally so much that He was willing to send His only begotten Son to die on a cross for the sins that you have committed.** When I was in India, I preached a sermon the final night of the crusade under the direct inspiration of the Holy Spirit which I would call "*The Good Captain*". I was preaching on Elijah the prophet and how he called fire down from Heaven not once, not twice, but three times. As I was preaching, the Lord suddenly changed the theme of the sermon to the third Captain of 50, who loved his men so much that he instructed them to stay at the base of the hill while he went up to the Man of God alone to plead for the lives of his men. He was willing to sacrifice His life so that his men might be spared. As I shared this message with what I thought was largely a Christian audience, I noticed that some people were beginning to weep. I found out later that these were Hindus, who had never heard that they could get it right on the first pass, and that there was one true God who so wanted them to make it that He would sacrifice His own Son in order for them to do so. They were shocked, stunned and deeply touched that someone, **anyone**, would care so deeply for them. When I finally gave the altar call, at least **25%** of the supposedly all-Christian audience stood to receive Christ, many weeping openly. I found out later in talking with Ruth and Raj that when they go into outlying villages where the Gospel has never been preached at all that conversions rates in the 70% range are normal and expected.

Given the fully implications of both doctrines, which do **you** think makes more sense? If Christianity were properly presented in India, the sub-continent could be converted in one lifetime. Right now in India, there are over **one billion** souls, and **40%** of them are **under the age of 14!** Many of those young people have been abandoned by their families either because of the death of their parents or because their families cannot take care of them. And India has no social welfare system to speak of. Baby, you are on your own! Momma may have. Poppa may have. But Heaven help the child in India who **doesn't** have his own.

Having said all that about reincarnation, I now have to turn around and say that despite all of that, there was **one exception**, not to the rules, but to the practice of living once and then awaiting judgment. And that one exception was **Elijah/John the Baptist**, who are really one and the same person. What? Blasphemy! Pastor Ray, you are violating fundamental Christian doctrine. Not really, dear friend. Actually, I am **confirming the authenticity of the Scriptures and Christian doctrine**. How can that be so? Remember that the Bible says that it is appointed to a man **once to die** and then the judgment. Did you catch that **once to die** stuff? Converted into plain English, it means that **once you have passed through the barrier of physical death and a sufficient amount of time has passed, you cannot return under any circumstances back into a physical form in this universe**. Despite what seems to be a fairly iron-clad statement, there are some vagaries and blurriness around the edges when you talk about what constitutes physical death and what constitutes a sufficient amount of time. Because of our medical capability of sustaining physical life long after all brain activity has ceased, there is some reason to believe that there are a significant number of people alive today physically whose spirit and soul have passed out of their body, never to return. I know that many years ago I went to visit my precious grandmother, who was then 93, in a nursing home and in failing health. She had always been active, both physically and mentally, and put out a flower garden every year until she was 83. It grieved her so much to not be able to do what she had always done. After we had talked for quite a while, I said, "Let's pray." I took her hands and we began. I let the Holy Spirit direct the prayer, and I found myself drawn to the passage in the Bible which says that "*underneath are the everlasting arms*". When I repeated that phrase, my grandmother suddenly squeezed my hands with unusual intensity. I continued to pray for a bit, then closed the prayer and opened up my eyes to look back at Gram. What I saw shocked me. There was a blank stare on her face. Her mouth was open. My grandmother was gone. At the very moment of that prayer, she had left her body and had gone with the angels of Heaven to see her precious Lord and Savior. Although her body persisted for three more days, the actual time of "death", if you will, was actually when we stood praying. I had never had the privilege of helping someone pass over like that before, nor since. It was one of the most holy moments I have ever experienced.

Equally nebulous is the actual point in time where death becomes irreversible. I personally know three men who were "toe-tag" dead for extended periods of time, yet were raised from the dead and have lived healthy, active, Spirit-filled lives since. Let me introduce you to them.

Ron Estes is a financial planner, a robust man in excess of six feet and 200 pounds. Several years before I met him at a Full Gospel Businessmen's Fellowship International meeting, he had been driving in his Cadillac. An accident pushed the steering wheel and column into his diaphragm. At first, it only seemed to be a bruise. What Ron didn't know was that his colon had been ruptured. It began to leak fecal material into his midsection. By the time doctors realized what had happened, many of his internal organs had been eaten up by peritonitis. By the time he died, he only weighed 97 pounds and his skull was showing through his scalp. He was pronounced dead by the hospital staff, was taken to the morgue, and a tag attached to his big toe. But God wasn't done with him just yet. Two hours later, he sat bolt upright on the morgue examination table, suddenly alive and back in his body again. One of the nurses in the room at the time lost her mind and had to be institutionalized. The doctors ran a full set of medical tests and found that all of the internal organs which had been literally eaten up by the peritonitis were back in place and completely well and normal, with the vitality of those of a 20 year old man. Today he carries his own death certificate from the Commonwealth of Kentucky to prove to people that he really did die. His hair had turned white and then fallen out during his terminal illness. Today he sports a full head of jet black hair. So, then, is two hours the boundary? Not really. In fact, not by a long shot.

Dr. Richard Eby was a well known heart surgeon when he accidentally fell off a balcony ledge and plummeted to his death three stories below. He hit head first and split his skull open like a ripe watermelon. Sorry to be so graphic and gross, but you need to understand the severity of the accident. He was pronounced dead on the spot. Yet three hours later, life came pouring back into him. He had experienced an incredible vision of both Heaven and Hell during that three hour period of time. Jesus promised him that he would never experience physical death again, but that He would return

before that. The last I heard, Dr. Eby was in his 90's and qualifies as the Godliest man I have ever met. OK. So the limit is three hours, right? Nope. Not even close.

Evangelist Dale Begley travels the county as an itinerant healing evangelistic ministry. He speaks rhyming prophecies in the Holy Spirit. He only has one good eye. And he was dead for **eight full hours**. When he was 12 years old, an angel came to his father and took him to a hill overlooking their home and the road that passed by it. At the same time, another angel appeared to his mother and told her that her son was going to die, but that he would be resurrected from the dead and would come alive again. Dale was playing near the highway when a 70-year-old lecher with a 16-year-old child bride came roaring around the bend in the road, hell-bent to get to Mexico so that he could consummate the marriage. Dale never stood a chance. He was struck head-on by the car and dragged underneath the undercarriage for 200 feet. His mangled body was taken to the hospital, where a doctor pronounced him dead. But his mother wouldn't leave. Despite the insistence of the medical staff, she refused to return home or leave Dale's side, resolutely proclaiming that the Lord had told her that her son would die but would be raised from the dead shortly thereafter. The staff all considered her to be mad with grief, and let stay by the body. For eight long hours, she stayed by the body of her son, refusing to change her testimony, just as the Shunnamite woman did so many thousands of years before her. Then, miraculously, breath came back into her son, and he sat up alive but not well. He still bears the scars of his accident today, perhaps so that folks will believe his testimony when he gives it. Now we have to be at the absolute maximum limit, right? After all, how could a spirit come back into a body after eight hours? Surely rigor mortis would have set in and the level of cellular decay would be so significant that it would be irreversible. Nah. Not even close.

There is a story told by Mel Tari of the Philippines about someone who had been dead an entire week and was raised from the dead by a group of native evangelists who prayed over him, but that story is undocumented. However, there is a clearly documented story about an African pastor who had been dead a week. His widow would not accept his death, and said that the Lord told her that if she would take her husband's body to a Reinhart Bonnke meeting, that he would be raised from the dead. She had to fight with the medical authorities to get her husband's body. She had to fight to get his body transported the considerable distance to the crusade. And when the security guards refused to let her bring her husband's body into the meeting, she convinced them to let her take him to the basement underneath the meeting. Once there, the coffin was opened and the partially embalmed body lay in state directly underneath Bonnke as he preached under the anointing of the Holy Spirit. Gradually her husband's body began to warm up. Then, muscle spasms were detected. Before the meeting was over, her husband was alive, confused about what had happened and why he was there, but in full possession of his faculties and with every part of his body performing normally. I have viewed reports on the miracle, and everything is documented to the hilt, including recorded testimonies from the doctor who pronounced him dead to the hospital staff themselves. So, until further notice, we will stand on **one week** as the maximum amount of time that a person can remain dead and still be raised from the dead.

Now that we have established some reasonable boundaries, we have to ask how Elijah could possibly have returned from the dead untold hundreds of years after his death. Think carefully about your answer before you reply. Why? **Because Elijah never died!** He, along with Enoch before the Flood, never experienced physical death. Don't believe me? Bad idea! You **know** I'm going to slap you upside yo' head with some Scriptures! First, Enoch, because he **was** first! As we go through the genealogy of Adam in Genesis, we find a standard pattern. First, the **name** of the individual is listed. Then, how long he lived **before** he had his first-born son (with the exception of Seth for what should be obvious reasons) along with the name of the **first-born son**. After that, how long he lived **after** he had his first-born son, and the notation that he had **other sons and daughters**. Finally, the **total** number of years in his lifespan, followed by the telling comment **and he died**. Here's an example:

"⁹ **Enosh lived ninety years, and begot Cainan.** ¹⁰ **After he begot Cainan, Enosh lived eight hundred and fifteen years, and had sons and daughters.** ¹¹ **So all the days of Enosh were nine hundred and five years; and he died.**" – Genesis 5:9-11

Pretty grim, huh? Born, have first kid, have other kids, die. Next. Repeat loop. And repeat it does until we come to the name of **Enoch**, where the rules suddenly change.

"²¹ **Enoch lived sixty-five years, and begot Methuselah.** ²² *After he begot Methuselah, Enoch walked with God three hundred years, and had sons and daughters.* ²³ *So all the days of Enoch were three hundred and sixty-five years.* ²⁴ **And Enoch walked with God and he was not, for God took him.**" -- Genesis 5:21-24

Notice the difference in the wording? Enoch walked with God, and he **was not**, not **he died**. And just in case you want to argue the point, the Bible adds **for God took him**. Now, there still might be some wiggle room for unbelievers, but the Book of Hebrews comes to our rescue and comments on this very passage.

"⁵ **By faith Enoch was taken away so that he did not see death, 'and was not found, because God had taken him'; for before he was taken he had this testimony, that he pleased God**".
– Hebrews 11:5

Here, for the very first time, we have clear cut evidence of someone passing **from life to life** without passing through physical death. Therefore, according to the rule of single pass existence, Enoch's life was never terminated by death, making him a candidate to return physically to the planet Earth. However, the Bible never promises that Enoch will be sent back, so we can eliminate him as a possible candidate for one of the two super-prophets. What about the only other person to pass directly into Heaven, the prophet Elijah? We know from the account in II Kings Chapter 2 that he was separated from Elisha by a chariot and horses of fire and that he went up into Heaven in a whirlwind. As I was reading this passage carefully, I noticed another subtle mistake that we seem to make all the time with Elijah. Every time we talk about the event, see an artist's rendition of the event or hear the great Gospel classic, we get the impression that Elijah went into Heaven in the chariot of fire. That is not how it happened. Let me show you the exact words that are used.

"¹¹ **Then it happened, as they continued on and talked, that suddenly a chariot of fire appeared with horses of fire, and separated the two of them; and Elijah went up by a whirlwind into heaven.** – II Kings 2:11

Folks, I ain't making it up! What you see is what you get! We are so careless and casual in our reading, studying and meditating on the Word of God (and that sometimes includes me!). If we were Jews under the Old Testament covenant, we would all be pushing up daisies.

No matter how you cut it, the bottom line is that Elijah, just like his prophetic predecessor Enoch, passed from life temporal into life eternal without passing through death. Now, he, too, could return to the planet, if provision were made. And in the case of Elijah, provision **was** made. In the very last book of the Old Testament, the Book of Malachi, in the very last chapter of that Book, a remarkable promise is made by God; the last thing He will say to Israel for over 400 years:

"⁵ **Behold, I will send you Elijah the prophet before the coming of the great and dreadful day of the Lord.** ⁶ *And he will turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the hearts of the children to the fathers lest I come and strike the earth with a curse.*" – Malachi 4:5-6

For those of you who have participated in a Jewish *Seder* or Passover know that there is always a place set at the table for the Prophet Elijah, and often one of the last things that they do is to open the door so that Elijah can come in. Since the Jews missed John the Baptist and Jesus the first time around, they are still waiting for their Messiah. When he returns, it will be His **second** coming for us and His **first** coming as far as they are concerned. Now, for those of you who were paying attention, you just heard me give you the cue: **John the Baptist is Elijah the Prophet**. Can I prove that? Beyond a shadow of a doubt. It will take a little time to review all the evidence, but it will be worth the journey.

In addition to Malachi 4:5-6, there is another promise regarding the return of Elijah earlier in Malachi. It is found in Chapter 3.

" ¹ Behold, **I send My messenger, and he will prepare the way before Me.** And the Lord whom you seek will suddenly come to His temple, even the Messenger of the covenant, in whom you delight. Behold, 'He is coming', says the Lord of hosts." – Malachi 3:1

If you study this prophetic passage carefully, you will find that it is **Jesus Himself** who is sending this messenger. Notice how the passage says, **I will send My messenger and he will prepare the way before Me.** Anytime you see a personal pronoun capitalized, you know that the passage is talking about the Lord; either as the Father, the Son or the Holy Spirit. To further tie this connection down, all we have to do is to move to the Synoptic Gospels, Matthew, Mark and Luke, to see how the New Testament writers understood and connected the passages together with the events which had just taken place.

" ² And when John had heard in prison about the works of Christ, he sent two of his disciples ³ and said to Him, 'Are You the Coming One, or do we look for another?' ⁴ Jesus answered and said to them, 'Go and tell John the things which you hear and see: ⁵ 'The blind see and the lame walk; the lepers are cleansed and the deaf hear; the dead are raised up and the poor have the gospel preached to them. ⁶ And blessed is he who is not offended because of Me.' ⁷ As they departed, Jesus began to say to the multitudes concerning John: 'What did you go out into the wilderness to see? A reed shaken by the wind? ⁸ But what did you go out to see? A man clothed in soft garments? Indeed, those who wear soft clothing are in kings' houses. ⁹ But what did you go out to see? A Prophet? Yes, I say to you, and **more than a prophet.** ¹⁰ For **this is he of whom it is written: 'Behold I send My messenger before Your face, who will prepare Your way before You.'** ¹¹ Assuredly, I say to you, among those born of women there has not risen one greater than John the Baptist; but he who is least in the kingdom of heaven is greater than he. ¹² And from the days of John the Baptist until now the kingdom of heaven suffers violence, and the violent take it by force. ¹³ For all the prophets and the law prophesied until John. ¹⁴ **And if you are willing to receive it, he is Elijah who is to come**".
-- Matthew 11:2-14

Oh, my! There is so much in this passage. To properly teach it would take at least one article in and of itself. However, what we are interested in are **three critical statements** that Jesus makes. The first is that John the Baptist is **more than a prophet.** For the longest time, the statement didn't click into place for me. He was more than a prophet because of this reason and that reason, etc, etc. Then, I was reading Ephesians Chapter 4 one day, and suddenly this verse jumped out at me:

" ¹¹ And He himself gave some to be **apostles, some prophets, some evangelists, and some pastors and teachers.**" – Ephesians 4:11

I had been familiar with the **Five-Fold Ministry** for many years, and had taught extensively on it. These five offices are **stepping stones.** Although there is a great deal of watered-down mis-teaching about this area, it is clear: Teachers are to be subject to pastors. Pastors are to be subject to Evangelists (boy, that will cause the fur to fly!). Evangelists are to be subject to prophets, and **prophets are to be subject to apostles.** What is **more than a prophet? An apostle!** That being said, this passage then clearly implies that Elijah/John the Baptist was actually the Old Testament equivalent of an Apostle, as was Moses. How can I say that? Just hold on a few minutes more! Oh, there is so much more to come!

The second critical statement that Jesus makes is to quote Malachi 3:1 with a subtle change in the wording, connecting the **Messenger** of Malachi 3:1 directly to John the Baptist, and identifying him as such. The change in wording is really fascinating. In Malachi 3:1, the Lord says **I will send My messenger and he will prepare the way before Me.** In the Matthew narrative, Jesus says **I send My messenger before Your face, who will prepare Your way before You.** This difference is subtle but very important. By changing the "me" of Malachi 3 to "you/your" in Matthew 11, Jesus is clearly identifying Himself as **the Jewish Messiah**, identifying Himself as **the person who was speaking** in Malachi 3, and, as such, also clearly is identifying Himself as **God.**

From that second statement, the third is a logical extension. If Jesus is Messiah, the Divine Speaker of Malachi 3 and God, then the Messenger of Malachi 3 must in fact also be John the Baptist, who was His forerunner, and who heralded His way. Therefore, if John the Baptist is the Messenger of Malachi 3, then he must also be, by default and by definition, **Elijah who is to come**. Jesus has just identified **the only man to have two complete identities and souls connected to a single spirit in all the history of this known universe**. The fact that there is a single spirit with multiple souls or personalities attached to it is, in fact, **reincarnation**, the entering again into flesh of a spirit. But this privilege is reserved **only** for Elijah/John the Baptist. God never promised to send Enoch a second time. But He did promise clearly, as His final promise in the Old Testament, to send Elijah. And Jesus has just made the identification for us directly and indirectly by making reference to Malachi 3:1 and Malachi 4:5-6. **John the Baptist is Elijah. Not like Elijah. Elijah.** Plain and simple. Now, I know that there are plenty of people out there who choke and sputter each and every time that I make a statement that flies in the face of conventional suburbianity. Tough. Like it or lump it. You can call me a liar and a heretic and a false prophet and it is no skin off of my nose. But call Jesus a liar, and I have a problem with you. Look. Let me make this plain for you. As Josh McDowell so tellingly puts it, He is either a Lunatic, a Liar or Lord. He can't be two of the three. And if He is Lord, **then you better pay very close attention to what He is saying**. Don't be calling the Son of God a liar. Don't be calling the One who shed His precious blood for your sorry carcass an incompetent fool. Have I made you mad? Good. Wonderful. **Perhaps now you understand what you put Him through each and every time you question His precious and Holy Word!** If the shoe fits...

We have run out of time for today, but we have not run out of Scripture nor of Topic. Stay tuned tomorrow for the continuation of this topic and the subsequent discussion of **My Two Witnesses**.

Day 22 ~ My Two Witnesses



“³ And I will give power to My two witnesses, and they will prophesy one thousand two hundred and sixty days, clothed in sackcloth. ⁴ These are the two olive trees and the two lampstands standing before the God of the earth. ⁵ And if anyone wants to harm them, fire proceeds from their mouth and devours their enemies.”

~ Revelation 11:3-5a

Yesterday we were looking at the overwhelming evidence that Elijah the Prophet and John the Baptist are really the same person, or, more accurately, the only spirit in the history of the universe to possess two separate souls or personalities. We also examined why, according to Scripture, reincarnation is impossible except in the case of one set of circumstances in which the individual passes from life temporal to life eternal without passing through death. We also clearly identified Enoch before the Flood and Elijah of ancient Israel as the only two individuals ever to accomplish that feat. We then applied the second of the two credentials, the promise that God would send someone back. Out of that simple process, Elijah emerged as the only viable candidate to return to this planet prior to the Resurrection/Rapture.

We also examined the passage in Matthew in which Jesus Himself clearly identifies John the Baptist as Elijah who is to come. But even with all of that clear-cut Scriptural evidence, there are still those who do not believe because they are unwilling to submit what momma said or what their preacher said to the cold, hard, unwavering standard of the Word of God. So, for those of who for whom one passage is not enough, let me present to you “the rest of the story”, as Paul Harvey was famous for saying.

I apologize, sort of, for having to make so many side trips along the Road of Revelation. I have found that in order to properly understand what Revelation is saying, you have to understand the symbols used in the Book. In order to understand the symbols, you must be aware of the fact that every single one of them is linked to one or more key passages in the Old Testament, and then you must understand those supportive Scriptures as well. When we, as uninformed Gentiles, read the Word of God, we read it superficially and with only a limited understanding of what God is saying. The Jews, on the other hand, labor under the burden of the **Veil of Moses**, otherwise known as the **Mishnah**, or **Second Law**. For those of you who have been with us for a while, you already know that the Jews have not one, but **two** sets of teachings about the Holy One of Israel. The first set is called the **Torah**, which is the true, revealed Word of God and represents **God’s opinion of man**. The second is called the **Mishnah**, which represents just the opposite, **man’s opinion of God’s opinion of man**. Because the Jews always read the **Torah** in the light of the human interpretations of the **Mishnah**, they are as much in the dark as we Gentiles who read too little into the Sacred Scriptures. If only we would take what the Lord has given us and patiently follow that Scarlet Thread where it leads us, we would uncover so much more in the ancient vaults of the riches of the King of Kings and Lord of Lords. Instead, we wallow in shallow pools of limited understanding, not willing to pay the price which says that we must **study** to show ourselves approved, workmen not to be ashamed. One of the things that I am proud of in all of the wondrous things which He has shown me is that I can defend to the very letter everything that I teach, in context, with multiple witnesses. For those of you who love the deep things of God, this is what you live for. For those of you who simply want a daily devotional, light and fluffy, these little side trips bore and sometimes irritate you. Be that as it may. As for me, I live to know and walk in the deep things of God. It is my very life breath. I pray that this book is for you meat and drink, as it is for me.

As I mentioned earlier, I always try to back up anything I say with at least two, preferably three, Scriptures in context. Matthew's comment is powerful, but it should have some help to stand comfortably. All we have to do is move to the next Gospel in line, the Gospel of Mark.

"² As it is written in the Prophets: 'Behold, **I send My messenger before Your face** who will prepare Your way before You. ³ The voice of one crying in the wilderness; prepare the way of the Lord: make His paths straight' ⁴ **John came baptizing in the wilderness** and preaching a baptism of repentance for the remission of sins. ⁵ Then all the land of Judea, and those from Jerusalem, went out to him and were all baptized by him in the Jordan River, confessing their sins. ⁶ **Now John was clothed with camel's hair and with a leather belt around his waist, and he ate locusts and wild honey.**"

-- Mark 1:2-6

As we examine this Scripture, we quickly recognize the reference to Malachi 3:1, followed quickly by the mention of John the Baptist, linking the two together. But there is something more, something so unique to Israel that only a Jew would recognize it immediately. Mark's Gospel says that John was **clothed in camel's hair and had a leather belt around his waist**. OK. What's that all about? Any devout Jew recognized many great prophetic figures in the history, but only two who were dominant, **Moses** and **Elijah**. So prominent was Elijah in Israel's history that a unique **copycat** pattern developed. In order to understand what I mean about copycat patterns, we must go to II Kings and take a quick look at Elijah. In this incident, a wicked king named Ahaziah was badly injured by a fall through some lattice work in his palace in Samaria, and sent a messenger to inquire of the false god **Baal-Zebub** to see if he would live or die. It is from this demonic entity that we get the name **Beelzebub**. The name literally means **Lord (Baal) of the Flies (Zebub)**, and is the inspiration of the William Golding novel of the same name. Today we use this name to refer to Satan himself, although that is probably not correct. There were plenty of Baal's in Canaan. Each community, and sometimes even each family or clan had its own Baal. Even though Yahweh was the God of Israel, this foolish king was so backslidden that he asked the deity of some other land before he asked his own God. It didn't take long for the Holy Spirit to speak to Elijah about the matter, and he intercepted the king's messenger and gave him a not-so-pleasant message. Was there no God in Israel that the king should seek out the counsel of some other god? Because he had been unfaithful, he would surely die in the bed in which he lay. The messenger was then directed to turn around and head back where he came from. Since no one knew that the messenger had been sent, the messenger wisely interpreted this intervention and message directly from the One True God, and he turned around and headed back to the king. When the king heard the message, he asked an interesting question:

"⁷ Then he said to them, 'What **kind of man was it** who came up to meet you and told you these words?' ⁸ So they answered him, '**A hairy man wearing a leather belt around his waist.**' And he said, '**It is Elijah the Tishbite.**'" -- II Kings 1:7-8

Rather odd, isn't it? The king asked for the description of the man who intercepted the messenger. When he was told that the individual was a hairy man wearing a leather belt, the king immediately knew that he was referring to Elijah. Elijah must have cut quite a swath in ancient Israel. Not only was he a furry fellow, he was very much the wild man. No pretty boy preacher. No fancy clothes. Just as wild and wooly as you could get. The Bible equivalent of Grizzly Adams. So distinctive was his appearance that the king knew immediately who was talking. And so distinctive was his garb that from that time on **everyone who fancied himself a prophet but really wasn't tried to emulate Elijah's mode of attire**. So you wanna be a cowboy? Wal, shucks, podner! Y'all don't need to know how to shoot, ride and rope. Jest git yerself a **cowboy outfit**. All you have to do is **look the part**. You don't have to actually be able to prophesy accurately or do signs, wonders and miracles. All you had to do in order to be a wanna-be and a poser was to **look like Elijah**. Not a hairy guy? No problem! All you had to do was wear a **hair shirt**. That would be good enough. By the time that Zechariah was prophesying, the me-too wanna-be Elijah look was so popular among the prophetic posers that Zechariah was forced to prophesy against it.

"⁴ And it shall be in that day that every prophet will be ashamed of his vision when he prophesies; **they will not wear a robe of coarse hair to deceive**" -- Zechariah 13:4

So when John the Baptist appeared at the Jordan, baptizing, wearing a **camel's hair coat and a leather belt**, it was immediately understood that he, like so many before him, was identifying with Elijah, with one notable exception: acting under the divine mandate of Malachi 4:5-6, **he actually was Elijah!**

There are two more fascinating things that we must know about John the Baptist. Since he had never passed through death, his anointing was not removed from him when he entered into heaven, but remained on him, even when he returned to earth. If we move forward one additional Gospel, we find ample documentation for this fact:

*"¹⁵ For he will be great in the sight of the Lord, and shall drink neither wine nor strong drink. **He will also be filled with the Holy Spirit, even from his mother's womb.** ¹⁶ And he will turn many of the children of Israel to the Lord their God. ¹⁷ **He will also go before Him in the spirit and power of Elijah, to turn the hearts of the fathers to the children and the disobedient to the wisdom of the just, to make ready a people prepared for the Lord.**" – Luke 1:15-17*

Most people gloss over this passage without even realizing what they have just read. Just as Elijah/John the Baptist is the only human spirit to have two separate souls or personalities, so also, John the Baptist is the first and only human being in the history of the world to be **filled with the Holy Spirit while still in his mother's womb**. Not even Jesus was filled with the Holy Spirit when He was born. According to the rules which govern the transition of a spirit from that world into this, you can only bring with you what you already have. Jesus would not be filled with the Holy Spirit until He is ready to begin His adult ministry. In Luke 3:21, we find the Holy Spirit **descending** on Jesus in bodily form like a dove. In Luke 4:1 we find Jesus **being filled** with the Holy Spirit at the Jordan and being led/compelled/forced by the Holy Spirit into the wilderness to be tempted by Satan. After that time of winnowing and testing, we find Jesus returning from the experience **in the power of the Spirit** in Luke 4:14. Not so with John. Because He has already been on the planet, he is in heaven in the same condition spiritually that he was when he left. What had been the last thing that he had done? **Just part the Jordan River by striking it with his cloak!** Think he was filled? Yeah, buddy!

And speaking of water, there's another fascinating thing about almost all super-prophets: **they do most of their best work in and around water**. What about Moses? Well, how about the parting of the Red Sea (actually the Gulf of Aqabah, as we have previously discussed) using a stick? Elijah? All he needed was a coat to take care of the Jordan. Joshua, Moses' disciple? A couple of pairs of sandals, attached to the feet of faithful and faith-filled priests. Elisha? The same cloak that Elijah used. John the Baptist? By the Jordan baptizing. Sorry. No miracles this time. Been there. Done that the first time he was here. No need to repeat. And last, but certainly not least, Jesus Himself, walking on the water and saying, "*Peace! Be still!*" All centered around water, as if water itself is some sort of focusing agent, increasing the anointing. Think about baptism. Why water? Hmm... I'll let you do some speculation of your own at this point. Go have fun. And let me know what you come up with.

One final note: In this passage in Luke, we have a clear reference to Malachi 4:5-6 with the hearts of the fathers being turned to the children. And last but not least, we find **Gabriel himself** saying that John will go before Jesus **in the spirit and the power of Elijah**.

End of discussion. If by now you are not convinced of the fact that John the Baptist is Elijah the Prophet, there is nothing in this universe that can convince you. If you are not moved by the Word of God, then you are not capable of being moved. When the rich man begged Jesus to send Lazarus back from the dead to warn his brothers, Jesus calmly retorted that if they would **not believe Moses and the prophets**, then they would not believe if it someone came back from the dead.

If, however, you do believe, then let me share several other amazing facts about John with you. First of all, **there is no John the Baptist in Heaven, only Elijah**. How can I say that? Because of what happens much later in the Gospel of Matthew, in Chapter 17, on the Mount of Transfiguration. In order to understand what is happening, you must understand the timeline involved. First, we have Elijah being born and growing up into a mighty prophet of God. Second, we have his assumption into Heaven, passing from life to life without passing through death. Third, we have his return in the form

of John the Baptist. Fourth, we have his imprisonment and subsequent execution by beheading at the hands of Herod, Herodias and Salome. Now he has finally passed through physical death just like everyone else and thus cannot return to earth physically until we all do it together. Fifth, we have the meeting **in a vision** on Mount Tabor, the Mount of Transfiguration, in Matthew 17. Now, he does not appear as John the Baptist, but rather as Elijah the Prophet, along with Moses and Jesus Himself. This, by the way, is how you can know with certainty who the three greatest prophets in the history of the world are. Jesus, Moses, **Elijah**. This raises an interesting question. Given that he had **two personalities and appearances**, is it possible that he can **switch between the two**? Or, having fulfilled his **repeat performance** as John the Baptist, has he now reverted to his **original appearance** as Elijah permanently? This is one question that we will probably never have an answer for until Christ returns. Then, I am sure that there will be many questions that have never been answered which will receive fair and just responses.

And while we're beating this horse to death, let's throw one more amazing fact into the mix. Did you know that **Enoch and Elijah were the only two humans in Heaven until Jesus ascended into Heaven**? This is one of those fun facts which don't become apparent until you start to **meditate** on the Word of God. When you begin to **think deeply with concentration, focusing only on the Word of God**, amazing things will begin to come to you. How do you think I have the revelation I have? I have read the Bible from cover to cover over a dozen times, with untold hundreds of special reviews on different topics. My Bible is underlined, doubled underlined, footnoted, highlighted and bookmark inserted. There was a period in my life when I wore a Bible out every two years. I would end up with **everything** underlined. Then I would give it away and start afresh with a slightly different translation.

Anyway, back to the population of Heaven. You have to understand that in the Old Testament, under a works and law covenant, no one was sinless, only righteous. Since no sin is permitted in Heaven, a temporary holding area had to be created in the center of the Earth, awaiting the day when the Son of Righteousness would come and **impute** righteousness to all those who believed in Him. As such, all the righteous dead found themselves placed comfortably in a place referred to by Jesus as **Abraham's Bosom**. The unrighteous dead found themselves adjacent to them but separated from them by a vast chasm in a place called **Gehenna**. Because Enoch and Elijah had not experienced physical death, there was no judgment that could be arraigned against them. As such, they did not qualify for either Abraham's Bosom or Gehenna. And God apparently did not hold anything against them, because Enoch and Elijah were both **taken**, Elijah by a whirlwind (tornado), and the direction was **up**. That leads me to believe that both men were taken up into Heaven. But no other humans were there yet. Abraham's Bosom would be emptied when Jesus ascended, for it is written that when He ascended He **led captivity captive**. Most Bible scholars translate that as the fact that they were taken up into Heaven when Christ ascended. I agree with that assessment. So the human population of Heaven increased dramatically on that wonderful day. Of course, property values went down at the same time...

Now, (deep breath), **having said all of that**, I hope that you can understand how it would be **totally impossible** for Either Moses or Elijah to be one of the Two Witnesses. **However**, having said all that, it is very obvious that these two remarkable men possess all of their abilities and much, much more. Elijah called fire down from Heaven on three separate occasions. These two remarkable men will have fire **come out of their mouths at any time** in order to protect them. Moses was able to call down ten separate plagues on Egypt. These men will be able to call any kind of plague they want on the Earth at any time. And given the already horrific state of the planet, additional plagues will not make them the most popular individuals in the world.

While we're talking about these two remarkable lads, there's another can of worms that we have to open. **What is their racial or ethnic background?** On this question, we have only one Scripture passage to go on, but it is very conclusive. **They have to be Jewish**. Why so? Not because of any direct Scripture reference in Revelation, but because of a **reference** in Revelation to another Scripture passage. Remember how we talked about how in Revelation one phrase, word or symbol will **link** to a matching passage elsewhere in the Bible? Here we go again. Listen to what the angel talking to John says:

"³ *And I will give power to my two witnesses, and they will prophesy **one thousand two hundred and sixty days**, clothed in sackcloth.'* ⁴ *These are the **two olive trees** and the **two lampstands** standing before the God of the earth."* – Revelation 11:3-4

Let's look briefly at their term of engagement. Revelation expresses the time span in days, but it makes more sense to divide by 30 (the number of days in a lunar month). That yields **42 months**. Divide that by 12 (the number of months in a year), and we get **3½ years**, the same amount of time that Jesus ministered. Now, for all of you Daniel fanatics, we have finally come to the beginning of the **seven year period spoken of by Daniel**. I know that you have been taught repeatedly, constantly that there is a 7-year Tribulation. I hope we have successfully shown you how ridiculous that is, based on even a mildly serious study of Scripture. As you know by now, the Tribulation is a period of time during which intense persecution breaks out against Christians and also probably Jews on a global scale. And you also know by now that the Tribulation is also the 5th Seal. And I hope that you still remember that we are in the **7th Seal or Wrath of God** right now, having left the Tribulation in our wake a long, long time ago. At the end of the 6th Seal, the Holy Spirit was removed from the Gentile world, making any further salvations in the Gentile world impossible. Now salvation would be exclusively for the Jews, and they need it, because God had already promised Paul that when the time of the Gentiles was at an end that **all Israel would be saved**. But while heaven is breaking out in Israel, Hell is breaking out in the Gentile world. Now that **He Who restrains** has been taken out of the way, the Anti-Christ is free to move from merely being the leader of a three-nation confederacy to being a leader of global importance leading a ten-nation confederacy. Now the Man of Lawlessness finally enters into that seven-year period, hoping to quickly move into Israel and proclaim himself god in the Temple. But there is a minor problem. For the first 3½ years of that seven year period, these two men of God stand squarely in his way, and prevent him and his unholy legions from taking control of Israel, Jerusalem and the Temple. Even the Anti-Christ himself cannot stop them. Why? **Because their anointing level exceeds that of any human being to ever live on the planet with the exception of Jesus Himself**. To understand this massive anointing, we have to go to Zechariah to the Scripture referred to in Revelation.

In this passage, Zechariah is having a conversation with an angel, and he is having a tough time getting straight answers out of him. Let's join in the conversation.

"¹ *Now the angel who talked with me came back and wakened me, as a man who is wakened out of his sleep.* ² *And he said to me, 'What do you see?' So I said, 'I am looking and **there is a lampstand of solid gold with a bowl on top of it and on the stand seven lamps with seven pipes to the seven lamps.*** ³ ***Two olive trees are by it, one at the right of the bowl and the other at its left.'*** ⁴ *So I answered and spoke to the angel who talked with me, saying, '**What are these, my Lord?**'"* – Zechariah 4:1-4

As always with complex descriptions in the Bible, it is often hard for the reader to get a clear picture of what the prophet is actually seeing. The best rendering I have seen so far is by a wonderful lady named Pat Marvenko Smith, who has painted a whole series of incredibly beautiful and accurate pictures taken straight from Revelation. Imagine, if you will, two beings of incredible spiritual strength and anointing, more than anyone except Jesus Himself. Now imagine that their anointing is so strong that the olive oil literally drips out of their branches and gathers in a golden bowl sitting on the top of a Menorah. There are a series of pipes coming out of the bowl that feed into the seven lights of the Menorah. The oil travels from the bowl down the pipes and into the candles to keep them lit. If you would have gone into the Tabernacle in the Wilderness, you would have found a restricted area just outside of the Holy of Holies. In that area would be the Table of Showbread, the Laver and other special items. Among those items would have been a six foot tall Menorah. Imagine so much oil pouring out of these two trees that they can fuel that entire giant Menorah.

At the end of that description, Zechariah asks what these two things are. Instead of giving him a straight answer, the angel launches into a detailed prophecy encouraging the governor of Judea, a gentleman named Zerubbabel, who was a key figure in the return to Judea and the rebuilding of the Temple. After completing the prophecy, Zechariah repeats his question, much to the angel's amazement.

" ¹¹ Then I answered and said to him, **'What are these two olive trees – at the right of the lampstand and at its left?'** ¹² And I further answered and said to him, **"What are these two olive branches that drip into the receptacles of the two gold pipes from which the golden oil drains?"** ¹³ Then he answered me and said, **'Do you not know what these are?'** And I said, **'No, my lord.'** ¹⁴ So he said, **'These are the two anointed ones, who stand beside the Lord of the whole earth.'** -- Zechariah 4:11-14

These are the two anointed ones who stand beside the Lord of the whole earth. Wow. How would you like to have it said of you that you were one of those two? Imagine the purity and the power that must run through their veins. Imagine being so transparent to God's power and so totally yielded to everything that **He** is that you are totally invulnerable to what the **Anti-Christ** is. Frankly, it is in my heart to be able to be one of those two remarkable men. Even if it meant having to forego the Rapture and remain behind to help fight for my Jewish brothers and sisters, I would gladly embrace the cost. But I fear that I am not a candidate. I am a Gentile, a bacon-eatin' man clear through and through. It is almost impossible to imagine God allowing a Gentile to stand in Jerusalem and fight against the Man of Sin. Sometimes I daydream that one of the Two Witnesses might be Gentile and the other Jewish, but I know in my heart that this is not a likely situation.

Even if that were so, would God pick me out of all the Gentiles all over the world who serve Him with such passion and purity? Not likely. But a boy can dream, can't he?

Having been resisted by the Two Witnesses for a remarkable 3½ year stretch, Satan finally decides to bring in the big guns.

" ⁷ When they finish their testimony, **the beast that ascends out of the bottomless pit will make war against them, overcome them, and kill them.** ⁸ **And their dead bodies will lie in the street of the great city which spiritually is called Sodom and Egypt, where also our Lord was crucified.** ⁹ Then those from the peoples, tribes, tongues, and nations will see their dead bodies **three-and-a-half days, and not allow their dead bodies to be put into graves.** ¹⁰ And those who dwell on the earth will rejoice over them, make merry, and **send gifts to one another**, because these two prophets tormented those who dwell on the earth. ¹¹ Now **after the three-and-a-half days the breath of life from God entered them, and they stood on their feet**, and great fear fell on those who saw them. ¹² And they heard a loud voice from heaven saying to them, **'Come up here.'** And **they ascended to heaven in a cloud, and their enemies saw them.** ¹³ In the same hour there was a **great earthquake**, and a tenth of the city fell. In the earthquake seven thousand people were killed, and the rest were afraid and gave glory to the God of heaven." – Revelation 11:7-13

There is so much here that we will need to address each topic sentence by sentence.

- 1. The beast that ascends out of the Abyss, Abaddon or Apollyon, is the agent that Satan uses to kill the Two Witnesses.** Remember him from Revelation 9:1-11? He is one bad dude and this twin killing may be the single most important thing that he does for his unholy boss.
- 2. The Two Witnesses are killed in Jerusalem.** Despite all the rhetoric about Sodom and Egypt, the dead giveaway (pardon the bad pun!) is the fact that they are killed **in the same city that our Lord was crucified in.** Bingo! We have a winner!
- 3. Their dead bodies lay in the streets of Jerusalem for 3½ days.** Nothing like a little gloating, right? It wouldn't surprise me if people went by and threw rocks, garbage and other items from a distance. There's no telling what their dead bodies look like, either. Remember, they have been murdered by a demon, so it can't be pretty.
- 4. The world treats the event like some giant, global Christmas, only in the demonic reverse.** *Merry Witness-Murder, Fred! Here, have a cigar! And a present, too!"* Can you see now why I say that no further salvation or repentance is possible? This is the level to which mankind has finally sunk, now that the church is no longer there to provide salt and light.
- 5. CNN and all the major networks carry the event live.** In John's day, there was no way for the nations to actually see their dead bodies. Today, no problem! Knowledge will increase, indeed! Imagine the **Witness Channel**, specially thrown together so that you can turn to

Channel 666 on the Cable (don't laugh!) and just sit there with a Whiskey Sour in your hand, a cigar in the other hand, and just pour out your hatred and disgust on the dead bodies of these two impudent Jews who had dared to defy the one man to unify mankind for the first time.

6. **They are resurrected while the whole world is watching.** How ironic! The very news channels that were so faithfully serving the Anti-Christ now inadvertently serve the purposes of the very God that they have been rejecting.
7. **They ascend into Heaven just like Jesus.** How cool. How totally, totally cool. How in-your-face. Everything that the devil worked for is going down the drain. And there is **nothing** that he can do to stop it. **Nothing.**
8. **An earthquake accompanied Jesus' resurrection. An earthquake accompanies their ascension.** Why not? Everybody's already all shook up.
9. **All the people finally decide it's time to give God glory when it's finally too late.** But don't they always?

Now that the Two Witnesses are finally out of the way, the remaining 3½ years of nightmare and terror can finally be carried out. Israel will fall to the Anti-Christ. Two-thirds of the people in the land will perish. The Northern Army of Gog of Magog will move to Megiddo. The Kings of the East will gather their troops across the Euphrates in the Valley of Jehoshaphat. Everything will be going Lucifer's way. Everything he ever dreamed of will appear to be so close to realization. And then, a beam of light will split the Eastern sky, and a new army will appear, one led by someone called the Word of God.

We won't get to that wonderful event in this Episode. We will take you to the darkest point in the history of man, and then cruelly leave you hanging. But just like the Two Witnesses, take heart. There will be a time of resurrection and redemption for you, just as there was for them.

We are finally done with the 6th Trumpet / 2nd Woe. But mankind is not done with the torment that is to be inflicted on them. For the 3rd and final Woe is coming, the 7th Trumpet of the 7th Seal, the point of closure of the hostilities between man and God. When we resume tomorrow, we will meet the most amazing lady in the Bible, ***A Woman Clothed with the Sun.***

Day 23 – A Woman Clothed With the Sun



“¹ Now a great sign appeared in heaven: a woman clothed with the sun, with the moon under her feet, and on her head a garland of twelve stars. ² Then being with child, she cried out in labor and in pain to give birth. ³ And another sign appeared in heaven: behold, a great, fiery red dragon having seven heads and ten horns, and seven diadems on his heads. ⁴ His tail drew a third of the stars of heaven and threw them to the earth. And the dragon stood before the woman who was ready to give birth, to devour her Child as soon as it was born. ⁵ She bore a male Child who was to rule all nations with a rod of iron. And her Child was caught up to God and His throne..” – Revelation 12:1-5

Of all the passages in Revelation, there are none so difficult as Chapters 12 and 13, at the very heart of the narrative. In fact, for many years when I tried to read this Book of Books, I would bog down every time I hit this spot. Even when I taught it, I would skim over it because I really didn't feel that I had adequate understanding and appropriate explanations. Whenever I read other "experts", I constantly came away with the feeling that they were glossing over major issues. Unfortunately, because we as a church are so superficial in all things, not just religion, most people don't even know that there are unresolved problems, nor do they care.

The problem for me was that I cared. If I was going to teach others what the Bible really said and meant, I would be taking on an enormous responsibility. James clearly says that not many of us should be teachers, because we who teach will be judged with greater strictness, and we all make many mistakes. Whenever I read that passage, two words jumped out at me; **judged** and **mistakes**. I didn't want to be careless or casual. Whatever mistakes I might make would not be for a lack of diligence on my part, nor would it be from a slipshod reading of the text. I was and still am committed to bringing you the **truth**, the **whole truth** and **nothing but the truth**, so help me, God.

When I first ran into this remarkable lady, I didn't know what to make of her. I knew the standard Catholic teaching that this was Mary, the mother of Jesus. And superficially, they seemed to be correct. In verse 5 it says that **she bore a male Child who was to rule all nations**. It also says that this child was to be **caught up to God and His throne**. Sure sounds like Jesus to me. But notice that I said **superficially**. With that in mind, let's dig a little deeper into this mystery lady.

We begin in Verse 1 with a description of the lady. She is clothed with the sun. The moon is under her feet. There is a garland of 12 stars on her head. We now have our first link. It involves **three connected symbols, the sun, the moon, and the garland of 12 stars**. The minute I saw those three symbols connected together, a little bell rang in my mind. I immediately turned to the Old Testament, to the Book of Genesis and a very well known story, the story of Joseph. Joseph was a classic example of a young man carrying an anointing which his lack of maturity made it difficult for him to handle. When he was 17, he had two extraordinary prophetic dreams, both of which came to pass much later in his life. His first prophetic dream involved sheaves of wheat, and although the prophetic subject is the same as his second dream, the symbols used were not. It is the second dream in which we have our connection with John the Revelator.

"⁹ Then **he dreamed still another dream** and told it to his brothers, and said, 'Look, I have dreamed another dream. And this time, the **sun**, the **moon**, and the **eleven stars** bowed down to me.'

¹⁰ So he told it to his father and his brothers; and his father rebuked him and said to him, 'What is this dream that you have dreamed? Shall **your mother** and **I** and **your brothers** indeed come to bow down to the earth before you?' ¹¹ And his brothers envied him, but his father kept the matter in mind."

– Genesis 37:9-11

In Joseph's second dream, the analogies were clear: the **sun** represented his **father**, the **moon** represented his **mother**, and the **eleven stars** represented his **brothers**. Needless to say, the dream didn't play well at home, not only to his brothers, who already were envious of and deeply resented him as daddy's favorite son, but also with his father, who chewed him out publicly, but privately suspected that something really big was going to happen with boy somewhere down the line in the future.

Now, we move far into our future to the vision of the woman. If these symbols still apply, let's see who we come up with in her case. Who is the father? **Jacob**. Who is the mother? **Rachel**. Who are the twelve stars? **The twelve sons of Jacob, i.e. the twelve tribes of Israel!** I realize that we have to "massage" the symbols a little bit in order to make them fit, but I don't think it's much of a stretch. What we end up with is a corporate entity whose "sun", father or "covering" is Jacob, whose "moon", mother or "foundation" are the four women who birthed all 12 tribes, and, of course, the 12 "stars" or sons of Jacob who eventually become the 12 tribes themselves. This match isn't perfect, but it is clearly the best match in Scripture, and a far better match than that of Mary, not only for these reasons but for others which we will examine in just a bit. What is our conclusion so far? That this woman is **the nation of Israel**. All through the Bible, **Israel is referred to as a woman**, and the covenant which God enters into with them is constantly referred to as a **marriage contract**. So consistent is the analogy that when God becomes angry with Israel and decides to send her into exile, the event is described as a **divorce** by both Jeremiah and Hosea, something that can only happen between a man and a woman who are married.

Now that we've identified the first set of symbols, let's move on to the next one. In John's vision, this woman is about to give birth. She is in pain and cries out. This symbol takes on a dual identity. For Catholic believers, this must be Mary. For Non-Catholics, however, it is probably both Mary **and** Israel itself. All through time, Israel has had a dual purpose: First, to be **priests and kings** unto the Lord their God, and second, to be the incubator for the **messiah** who would come to be the savior not only of Israel but also of the whole world. This is why Satan has tried so hard down through the centuries to exterminate the Jews. If he could kill off the bloodline of Abraham, God would be forced to scrap the entire process and start over again. And it is this assassination attempt by Satan that takes us right into the next symbol, the **dragon**.

In Verse 3, we find a really scary dragon with **seven heads** and **ten horns** and **ten diadems (crowns)** on his head. Although we will get into these three symbols in great detail later on during this Episode, I can give you kind of a kind of sneak preview. If you turn just one page and move ahead to Chapter 13, you find a **beast** rising up out of the sea. He has **seven heads** and **ten horns** and **ten crowns (diadems)** sitting on those. This beast is in turn connected to Daniel Chapter 7. We will not go into detail on that subject here. It will take several days worth of discussion to decode all of that. Suffice it to say that what we have here is a **confederation of nations** involving **seven kings or leaders** and **ten nations**. That confederation is demonically driven, this time by Satan himself.

There is so much to be said about the dragon that we must devote several days to him. With that in mind, we are going to skip over certain Scriptures for right now and then come back to them later. Instead, we are going to move forward in the timeline to a point after the dragon has been unsuccessful in his attempt to kill the Christ Child. Having failed to kill the child, he goes out in a rage to try and kill the mother instead.

*"¹³ Now **when the dragon saw that he had been cast to the earth, he persecuted the woman who gave birth to the male Child.** ¹⁴ **But the woman was given two wings of a great eagle, that she might fly into the wilderness to her place, where she is nourished for a time and times and half a time, from the presence of the serpent.**" – Revelation 12:13-14*

In **Episode 4 – The Crucified Bride**, I wrote an article entitled *Day 23 – Beware the Bear*. In it I explain in great detail what the various symbols in Daniel's dream in Chapter 7 mean. Using the **Bear** as the key connection symbol, I link it to modern-day **Russia**, the only nation in the history of the world to be associated with the symbol of the bear. Then, moving backward in the timeline, we encounter a **Lion with Eagles Wings**. By extrapolation, we determine that the empires prior to the

emergence of Russia were **America, the Eagle** and **England, the Lion**. In the dream, Daniel watches as the **Eagles Wings are torn off of the Lion**. This event constitutes the American Revolution. We also encounter a **Leopard with 4 heads and 4 pairs of wings**, symbolic of a **Pan-Arabic Union of Iran, Iraq, Syria and Saudi Arabia**. These same symbols appear again in Revelation Chapter 12 and 13. In Chapter 13, we find that the **Beast out of the Sea** has **seven heads and ten horns**. We also find that this terrible creature is like a **Leopard**, has the **feet of a Bear** and the **mouth of a Lion**. If we take these symbols and cross-reference them, we find that the end-time empire of the Anti-Christ will be comprised of **seven heads (leaders) and ten countries (horns)**. We also find that its overall tone will be **like a Leopard (Islamic, Jihad, Middle Eastern)**, it will have the **feet of a Bear (armed and equipped with Russian military equipment and augmented with Russian "advisers")**, and, most sadly of all, have the **mouth of a Lion (the verbal approval of England, once Israel's staunchest backer)**. But of the **four animal symbols** of Daniel Chapter 7, we find **one animal noticeably absent in the empire of the Anti-Christ**. It is my great sorrow to have to be a prophet to America. I see a great and terrible time of punishment coming which will shatter this country into four separate pieces. I have seen in a vision leadership who will lead us into an unholy union with the military and political leader that will arise from Austria to lead us into the 3rd and final World War and into another unholy union with the Muslim world. I have seen America's proud economy crash and burn, plunging us into the most terrible time of lack and want we have every experienced. I have seen our crash plunge the rest of the world into a global depression which will enable the rise of the Anti-Christ. But, just like Samson laboring at the grist mill, blinded and stripped of his strength, there will be one final moment of glory for the former United States of America. For in the Bible, we find that the woman (Israel) is given the **two wings of a great eagle**.

In Israel's greatest hour of need, America will rise again, shake off her chains and unite one last time in the name of the God of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob. The nation that said **In God We Trust** and claimed that it was **One Nation Under God** will repent of all its folly and return one final time to the faith which once made it great. There is a little known story about America and Israel, and I was privileged recently to see an excellent documentary about it. It centered around the Yom Kippur War. During that war, Syria and Egypt launched a treacherous attack from both the south and the north on the one day in Israel when no one is at work. On Yom Kippur, businesses and transportation in all of Israel are shut down, and almost all men are expected to either be at home with their families or in Synagogue for religious services. The Arab world knew that this would be the time when it would be most difficult for the Israelis to assemble their troops. Caught unawares, the Israelis were being driven back on both fronts. Syrian tanks were rapidly advancing on Tel Aviv and Egyptians tanks were quickly closing on Jerusalem. The Muslims knew that if those two key cities fell, Israel was effectively conquered. The Israeli cabinet began to make preparations to conduct business in exile. Prime Minister Golda Meir was so depressed by the turn of events that she seriously considered taking her own life. To give you a clearer picture of the situation, I would like to share a wonderful passage from Wikipedia, the awesome online encyclopedia (www.wikipedia.com).

"In the days leading up to the Yom Kippur War, Israeli intelligence was not able to determine conclusively that an attack was imminent. Six hours before the outbreak of hostilities, Meir met with Minister of Defense Moshe Dayan and General David Elazar. While Dayan continued to argue that war was unlikely, Elazar advocated launching a pre-emptive strike on Syrian forces. Meir believed that Israel could not depend on European countries to supply Israel with military equipment and the only country that might come to Israel's assistance was the United States. Fearing that the U.S. would be wary of intervening if Israel were perceived as initiating the hostilities, Meir decided against a pre-emptive strike. In hindsight, this was a wise decision; then-U.S. Secretary of State Henry Kissinger later confirmed Meir's assessment by stating that if Israel had launched a pre-emptive strike, Israel would not have received 'so much as a nail.' "

That is very depressing, but there is even more to the story than that. Most of Israel's military supplies had been destroyed by the invading forces, and she was in deadly danger of running out of everything she needed to wage war, from military vehicles to bullets. When Israel made a desperate appeal to the United States for supplies to continue fighting, Kissinger reportedly said, *"Let them bleed for a while"*. But God was actively intervening on behalf of His people. When President Richard Nixon had been a child, his mother had repeatedly told him of a dream she had experienced. She told him many times,

"Richard, someday God will use you to help the Jews". When Prime Minister Meir called in desperation to talk directly to Nixon, he said that his mother's words echoed down through the corridors of time as Golda pleaded with him. Overriding Henry Kissinger's obviously anti-Semitic stance, Nixon ordered the **United States Air Force** to replenish **everything which Israel had lost and more**. In **one night**, the USAF flew in supplies, tanks, trucks, bandages, bullets and everything Israel needed to continue the war. Arab air power was no match for the massive resources of the United States, and the supplies came in virtually uncontested.

As it was in 1973, so it will be again when the Anti-Christ comes to destroy the tattered remnants of Israel. According to Zechariah 13:8-9, two thirds of Israel will die during this terrible time. But for that remnant third who now fervently believe in Jeshua Messiah, the **eagle wings of the United States** will once again swoop into Israel, to carry the woman to a safe place for the final terrible 3½ years of that fateful 7-year period. The United States, once again united just as Samson once again regained his strength, will take over for the Two Witnesses after their ascension to rescue His people.

One final topic remains to be discussed. After the US has safely airlifted the remnants of Israel to a safe place in the wilderness, the dragon makes one final effort to destroy them.

"¹⁵ So the serpent **spewed water out of his mouth like a flood after the woman**, that he might cause her to be **carried away by the flood**.¹⁶ But the earth helped the woman, **and the earth opened its mouth and swallowed up the flood** which the dragon had spewed out of his mouth.¹⁷ And **the dragon was enraged with the woman**, and he went to **make war with the rest of her offspring, who keep the commandments of God and have the testimony of Jesus Christ.**"

– Revelation 12:15-17

Understanding these final two symbols takes a little bit of work. Water coming out of the mouth of the dragon seems to be a contradiction of terms. Water is always symbolic of the Holy Spirit, or of cleansing and purifying. Neither of those make any sense. In fact, **nothing** symbolic makes any sense here. But what if it's **not** symbolic? What if these sentences describe **an actual event**? Remember that Israel has fled into the wilderness to escape the armies of the Anti-Christ. That flight has been enabled by the United States Air Force. The problem is that we don't know **where** in the wilderness they have been carried to. We don't know the topography or physical features of the area. What if there is some large body of water nearby? There would logically have to be, in order to accommodate the needs of such a large group of people. We might be looking at logistics similar to those of the children of Israel when they were in the desert with Moses. Roy Hyser was a good friend of mine who worked in management for a major restaurant chain. He did some very interesting calculations about those 40 years. Using a rough estimate of 5 million people, the water requirements would be something like this:

If we assume that each individual would use 1.5 gallons of water a day for bathing, cooking and drinking and then multiply that figure by 5 million people, we end up with a combined water usage of **7.5 million gallons per day**. Since each gallon of water weighs about 8.4 pounds, we find that providing water to all those people would require moving 63 million pounds of water a day. If we divide that figure by the standard 2,000 pounds per ton, we find that their water needs would amount to **31.5 tons** of water a day.

Those figures, of course, are for 5 million people. The current population of Israel is about 7 million. But attrition during the occupation of the forces of the Anti-Christ will reduce that figure to perhaps 1/3 of that number. So let's assume that about 2.5 million people are sky-lifted to safety. Gee! That means we can cut our estimates in half. Then we only need **15.75 tons** of water! Well! That makes it a **lot** easier. Seriously, these reasonable statistics only underscore the absolute necessity of the refugees being located near a large body of water. Now, just for fun, let's further speculate that this water is in the form of a lake formed by the building of a dam. It would be well within Lucifer's ability to shatter that dam, thus causing the water to cascade down on an unprotected people. But God is a good God, and also perfectly capable of manipulating the surface of the planet. We already know that much of the tectonic plate has been shattered by the first mega-quake in the 6th Seal, and we know that another massive quake will collapse every mountain and island into the magma. In addition, we

know of several severe earthquakes which will strike Israel all throughout this process. So it requires no stretch of our imaginations to visualize a huge earthquake opening up a major fault line into which the water could pour. In fact, it just so happens that the Syrian-African fault line runs right through Israel, north of the Dead Sea. This makes Israel a prime candidate for seismic activity. Not only do the physical facts support it, the Scriptures themselves support it.

Once this sequence of events occurs, Satan realizes that there is absolutely **nothing** he can do to permanently destroy Israel. Whatever move he makes, the Lord is going to make a countering move. And, just for fun, wouldn't it be neat if the **earth itself** had a soul of sorts, and was so fed up with Lucifer's abuse of it and its inhabitants that the planet itself opened up and swallowed the water, just like Revelation says. Gosh, devil, **nobody** likes you anymore! Can you see how bit by bit, his ability to manipulate and control is being stripped from him? And because by basic nature he is a murderer, a liar and a thief, if he can't kill one person, he will try to kill another. Having totally failed against Israel, he now turns his wrath against those Christians who have remained faithful to the Lord even though they messed up and missed the Rapture.

Let me talk just a little bit about this group of people. I refer to them elsewhere in this series as the **7th Seal Martyrs**. How did they come to be in this situation, anyway? If you have been following this series chronologically, you had the opportunity to get a ton of good teaching on this subject in **Episode 4 – The Crucified Bride**. I spend a great deal of time explaining how Matthew 24 outlines what will happen and gives a general timeline, while Matthew 25 outlines the terms of inclusion or exclusion. To be fair to those of you who are reading this book first, and have not had access to Episode 4, let me give a brief recap of that teaching, so you understand what is going on.

It is generally and blindly assumed by most people that when the Rapture occurs, it will happen **before** the Tribulation and that **all** of the church will be included. Nothing could be further from the truth. There is massive documentation in Matthew Chapters 24 and 25 in the very words of Jesus Himself confirming the fact that **he who endures to the end shall be saved**. That's just one of many quotes. Jesus makes statement after statement during the two chapters regarding the **timing** and the **conditions** to be included in the Rapture. I devoted almost the entirety of Episode Four – The Crucified Bride to this subject. For the sake of argument, let's turn to Matthew Chapter 24. You open your Bible. I will provide the outline of statements and topics. You see if I'm telling you the truth or not. Here goes:

<u>Scripture</u>	<u>Event or Statement</u>
Matthew 24:2 Matthew 24:3	Jesus utters the prophecy regarding the destruction of the Temple The disciples ask the Three Big Questions <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. When will these things occur? 2. What be the sign of Your coming? 3. What will be the end of the age?
Matthew 24:4-14 Matthew 24:5 Matthew 24:6 Matthew 24:7	Jesus answers Question #3, What will be the end of the age? <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Many will come in My Name 2. Wars and rumors of wars, but the end is not yet 3. Nation will rise against nation (1st Seal – War) 4. Kingdom will rise against kingdom (2nd Seal – Ethnic Genocide) 5. Famines, pestilences (4th Seal) 6. Earthquakes in various places (6th Seal) 7. All these are the beginning of sorrows
Matthew 24:8 Matthew 24:9	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 8. Then they will deliver you up to Tribulation and kill you (5th Seal) 9. You will be hated by all nations for My Name's sake (5th Seal)
Matthew 24:10 Matthew 24:11 Matthew 24:12 Matthew 24:13 Matthew 24:14 Matthew 24:14	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 10. Many will be offended, betray one another and hate one another (5th Seal) 11. Many false prophets will arise and deceive many (5th Seal) 12. Lawlessness will abound, love of many will grow cold (5th Seal) 13. He who endures to the end shall be saved 14. This Gospel will be preached in all the world as a witness 15. And then the end shall come

- Matthew 24:15 **Jesus answers Question #1, When will these things occur?**
 Therefore, when you see the Abomination of Desolation standing in the Holy Place...
- Matthew 24:16 a. Let those in Judea flee to the mountains
 Matthew 24:17 b. Don't even bother to take anything out of your house
 Matthew 24:18 c. Don't go back to get your clothes
 Matthew 24:19 d. Woe to those who are pregnant or nursing in those days
 Matthew 24:20 e. Pray that your flight doesn't occur during winter or on the Sabbath
 Matthew 24:21 **Jesus answers Question #2, What will be the sign of Your coming?**
 1. For then there will be **Great Tribulation** (6th Seal) unparalleled since the beginning of time
 Matthew 24:22 2, Unless those days were shortened, no life would be left on the planet
 Matthew 24:23 3. If someone says, "There is the Christ", don't believe it
 Matthew 24:24 4. False Christs and false prophets will rise and show great sign and wonders to deceive even the elect, if possible (7th Seal, Chapter 13)
 Matthew 24:25 5. See, I have told you beforehand
 Matthew 24:26 6. If they say He is in the desert or the upper room, don't go there
 Matthew 24:27 7. As lightning flashes from the east to the west, so will the coming of the Son of Man be
 Matthew 24:28 8. Wherever the carcass (body) is [Jerusalem], there the eagles will be gathered (angels)
 Matthew 24:29 9. Immediately **after the Tribulation of those days** (Great Tribulation):
 a. The sun will be darkened (6th Seal)
 b. The moon will not give its light (6th Seal)
 c. The stars will fall from heaven (6th Seal)
 d. The powers of the heavens will be shaken (6th Seal)
 Matthew 24:30 10. **Then the Sign of the Son of Man will appear in heaven**
 11. Then all the tribes of the earth will mourn
 12. They will see the Son of Man coming on the clouds of heaven with power and great glory
 Matthew 24:31 13. **And He will send His angels out with the great sound of a trumpet**
 14. **They will gather His elect from the four winds (Rapture)**
 15. **From one end of heaven to the other**

Having answered the Three Questions and dealt with the timing of the event, Jesus then went on to teach a series of parables regarding the qualifications to **be in the Rapture**:

Scripture **Parable and Topic**

- Matthew 24:32-33 **Parable of the Fig Tree**
 1. When you see leaves on the branches you know summer is near
 2. When you see **all these events** you know **the Rapture is near**

(This parable is so badly mis-taught that it defies description. I constantly hear that **Israel is the fig tree**. Nothing could be further from the truth. **The events that Jesus just described are the fig tree, and He says so!** It's time for the church go get a grip and start treating the Word of God and in particular the Words of the Lord Himself with a little respect!)

- Matthew 24:37-44 **Parable of the Days of Noah**
 1. The coming of the Son of Man will be just like the days of Noah
 2. They were eating and drinking, marrying, giving in marriage, business as usual
 3. Until the day that Noah entered the Ark
 4. They didn't know until the Flood came and took them away
 5. The coming of the Son of Man will be the same way
 6. Two men in a field, **one left, one taken**
 7. Two women grinding at the mill, **one left, one taken**
 8. Watch, **for you do not know what hour your Lord is coming**

9. If the master of the house had known what hour the thief was coming, he would have watched and not allowed his house to be robbed
10. **Be ready**, for the Son of Man is coming in an hour **you do not expect**

(Another parable classically mis-taught. Somehow, Pre-Trib advocates say that this parable teaches that the church will magically escape the Tribulation because we are Noah and the Rapture is the Ark. Again, **that's not what Jesus said!** The central teaching of this parable is that **they will never see it coming, and never know what hit them!** Specifically, Jesus points out that **one will be left and one taken [50%]. If you are not ready, you will not go.** How can it be any clearer?)

Scripture

Parable and Topic

Matthew 24:45-51

Parable of the Faithful and Wise Servant

1. The Master has made the servant ruler over His household in His absence
2. When the Master comes back, blessed is the servant found doing his job
3. The Master will make him ruler over all His goods
4. An evil servant will say, "My Master is delayed"
5. Begins to beat his fellow servants and eat and get drunk
6. The Master of that servant will come on a day he doesn't expect
7. **And will cut him in two and put him with the hypocrites**
8. **Where there is weeping and gnashing of teeth**

(There can be no doubt about the meaning of this parable. Faithful servants [believers] receive charge of the Kingdom in the Millennial Reign. Unfaithful servants [backsliders and unbelievers] end up in the Lake of Fire. I did a special study years ago on the phrase **weeping and gnashing of teeth**. In every single New Testament reference, it clearly talked about a place of eternal torment. Not a pretty picture, indeed!)

Matthew 25:1-13

Parable of the Wise and Foolish Virgins

1. **Ten Virgins (the church) go out to meet the Bridegroom (Jesus)**
2. **Five are wise and five are foolish (50%)**
3. All five took lamps (The Word) and some oil in them (the Holy Spirit)
4. Only five took **an extra container of oil (filled with the Holy Spirit)**
5. **The Bridegroom was delayed and they all fell asleep (Middle Ages)**
6. At **midnight (the last possible moment)**, the Bridegroom was **announced as coming**
7. Everyone **trimmed their lamp (repentance)**
8. Foolish asked the wise for some of their oil
9. Are rebuffed because then no one would have enough oil
10. Foolish go to buy some more oil
11. While they are gone, **Bridegroom finally arrives**
12. **Five Wise Virgins go in with Him and the door is locked**
13. Five Foolish Virgins return and beg to come in **and are denied access!**
14. Beware, for you do not know the day or the hour when the Son of Man is coming

(This is just so incredibly clear. Again, just as in the parable of the Days of Noah, we have **only 50% of those who could have gone in actually gaining entrance** (Five Wise/Five Foolish). Why is this the church and not the world? Simple. **All ten had the Word of God (the lamp). All ten had some of the Holy Spirit (the oil). All ten repented (trimmed their wicks). Only five were filled to overflowing with the Holy Spirit (the extra supply).**

The parables that follow, the **Parable of the Talents** and the **Parable of the Sheep and the Goats**, have to do with eternal reward and/or punishment for those who had the chance to do work for the Lord. As such, we are not concerned with them at this point in time. What we are concerned with is the very clear and consistent teaching in these first four parables that only part of those who call themselves believers will go in. In fact, the percentage given constantly is **50%**. I find it personally

fascinating that globally at this very moment, virtually all new believers are not only born again and baptized, but also **filled with the Holy Spirit with the evidence of speaking in tongues** at the same time. Except in America, of course, where conversions are so cheap that all you have to do is say a "simple little prayer" and everything is all right, despite the fact that the vast majority of those simple little pray-ers go right back out on the street and continue to live like Hell.

Starting in 1901 in Topeka, Kansas, when Agnes N. Ozman became the first person known to speak in unknown tongues in 300 years, the percentage of the church worldwide to be baptized in the Holy Spirit has grown dramatically. At its current rate, **50% of the church globally will be baptized in the Holy Spirit by 2050**. We will have reached the point at which 5 of the virgins are wise and 5 are foolish. I personally believe that it will be at that precise point in time when the actual Rapture will occur. This will theoretically leave half of the church stunned and startled. But the actual percentage will be much lower than that. Since the Rapture doesn't occur until the end of the 6th Seal, and the Tribulation, a global persecution of the body of Christ, occurs in the 5th Seal, we will see a massive falling away at that point in time, drastically reducing the number of official Christians. In Matthew 24:9-10, Jesus specifically prophesies that many will become offended and fall away. Why? Because their Pre-Trib pastors and TV preachers continually told them that they weren't going to have to suffer for Christ. Suddenly, they will find themselves in severe adversity for the sake of the Gospel. The attrition rate will be awful, but the worst fallout will occur among the Word-Faith, Charismatic, Full-Gospel groups who have totally embraced the Pre-Trib Rapture viewpoint. This causes me great personal pain, because much of what is taught in those groups is correct. I cut my spiritual teeth in the Charismatic movement of the 70's and 80's. But if you try to talk to most people about anything regarding suffering or persecution, they block you out immediately, despite the painfully obvious fact that their brothers and sisters all over the globe are already being persecuted for Christ's sake. Once that falling away takes place, Jesus, in Matthew 24:11, predicts the rise of a whole group of false prophets who will quickly prey on this group of apostate Pentecostals. Finally, many of them will be so totally hardened that they become irretrievable regarding repentance or salvation, as outlined in Matthew 24:12. Jesus then emphasizes that only **those who endure to the end (of the 6th Seal) shall be saved** in verse 13. It is interesting to note that in what theologians call the **Olivet Discourse** (the passage we just finished analyzing), Jesus takes the timeline up to and through the Rapture, but stops short of the 7th Seal, the Wrath of God. Why did He not continue on? The most probable answer is that He answered only what the disciples asked about. I guess He figured that there was enough bad news right there to keep them busy for a while!

Despite the massive falling away during the 5th Seal, only half of the church will be ready when the Rapture comes. What, then, of those who are left behind? Although things had been difficult up to this point in time, after the Rapture the Devil really pulls out his big guns and lets the remainder of the church and the Jews have it full force. Faced with the unenviable choice between taking the mark of the Beast or dying for their faith, a large majority will capitulate to Satan, thus sealing their eternal doom. However, in the midst of all the madness, a small but determined group of formerly backslidden Christians will come to their senses, repent, and restore their relationship with Christ. Determined not to lose their eternal salvation, they will flee into the wilderness, try to drop out of the computer-mark-driven global economy established by the Anti-Christ, or simply give up their lives, preferring to be killed, often by beheading, rather than risk eternal damnation. This group are those that I refer to as the 7th Seal Martyrs. Left behind, they decide that even though they were not willing to **live** for Jesus while they had the chance, they are nonetheless willing to **die** for Him. Later on, in **Episode Six – Invasion from Heaven**, I will show you how Christ resurrects them and incorporates them into the Bride for the purposes of ruling and reigning during the Millennial Reign of Jesus Christ.

We are done with the lady and her offspring for the time being. Now, we must return our attention to the dragon, and try to discover what has caused him to come to this terrible form. We'll start our process tomorrow, when we meet God's first **Disgruntled Employee**. Until then, make sure that **you** have washed your robes and made yourself ready. Be on the job and working for the Lord when he comes. Then He can turn to you and say, "*Well done, good and faithful servant!*" Amen and Amen!

Day 24 – Disgruntled Employee



“³ And another sign appeared in heaven: behold, a great, fiery red dragon having seven heads and ten horns, and seven diadems on his heads. ⁴ His tail drew a third of the stars of heaven and threw them to the earth. And the dragon stood before the woman who was ready to give birth, to devour her Child as soon as it was born.”

– Revelation 12:3-4

In yesterday's *E-Pistle*, we skipped over the dragon in order to concentrate on the lady. Today, the devil will get his due. Actually, he doesn't deserve **anything** after the way he treated his **last** employment opportunity. But that's a story for later on today. Let's recap from yesterday for just a moment.

In Verse 3, we found a really scary dragon with **seven heads** and **ten horns** and **ten diadems (crowns)** on his head. We talked briefly about that subject yesterday, and will come back to it in full detail when we discuss Chapter 13. For right now, let's take a look at the Dragon himself, to see if we can discover how he went from being Lucifer to an ugly old dragon. And so, it's back into the text to see what the Holy Spirit will show us today.

Just when our translation and decoding effort seemed to be slowly regaining its sanity again, Revelation throws us a **huge** curve. In Verse 4, it says that the dragon "*drew a third of the stars of heaven and threw them to the earth.*" In that simple half of a verse, we have to scrap another huge chunk of very popular theology. I have heard it said, ever since I joined the Charismatic Movement, that when Satan fell **at the beginning of time**, that he caused **1/3rd of the Heavenly Host to rebel and fall with him**. I have heard it repeated so many times that I've lost count. And I've repeated it myself, almost as many times. Where does that 1/3rd of the Heavenly Host come from? Verse 4. **Only** Verse 4. At this point, most people just shrug their shoulders, say "OK. *Works for me!*" and go right on. What they **should** be saying is "*Wait a minute! Something here just doesn't make sense!*" Why should they say that? Let's look at the **timeline** involved in all of these events. What we are interested in tracking is exactly **what** happened to Satan and exactly **when** it happened. Just as in sports, **timing is everything**.

When we first encounter Satan in the timeline, he is called by his real name, **Lucifer**. And we are **not** in the Garden in Eden. Not just yet. Something even more drastic than the fall of mankind has to occur first. From a **chronological** standpoint, the first time we meet Lucifer, he is in deep trouble not on earth, but **in Heaven**. If you have ever read any of my writing on the prophetic gift and office, you know that often prophecies come in **non-linear** fashion. It's as if we are creatures living under the sea, breathing through gills, with everything **above** water distorted **by** the water. Every once in a great while we are suddenly thrust unceremoniously above the water and can see with remarkable clarity everything around us. But we are creatures with gills, not lungs, and so we cannot survive above the water. In order for us to continue to live, we must quickly be put back in the water. Now, things are back to "normal", in conditions which we are used to living in. But, oh, that one moment above the surface! The things that we saw! The sun in all its brightness! The land, looming so nearby! But it was only a glimpse, just a momentary peek at what **really** is. And, because we are not used to life above the surface of the sea, those momentary glimpses aren't really easy to explain. As prophets, we say what God has told us to say, but it often makes no sense to us. We faithfully write

down the vision He has given us, but we are so overwhelmed, like Daniel, by what we saw above the water that we are sick for days, unable to process so much information that is so alien to us.

As the prophet Isaiah writes in Chapter 14, he is prophesying about the king of Babylon. In Verse 9, he taunts the king by saying that Hell is excited about him coming to them. And he continues to prophesy about and against the king of Babylon until he reaches Verse 12. Then, without warning, the Holy Spirit suddenly changes topics and persons. Listen to what comes next:

"¹² How you are fallen from heaven, O **Lucifer**, son of the morning! How you are cut down to the ground, you who weakened the nations! ¹³ For you have said in your heart: '**I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God; I will also sit on the mount of the congregation on the farthest sides of the north; ¹⁴ I will ascend above the heights of the clouds, I will be like the Most High.**' ¹⁵ Yet **you shall be brought down to Sheol, to the lowest depths of the Pit.**" – Isaiah 14:12-15

Let's take a close look at this passage. When I teach this section of Scripture, which I refer to as the **Five Deadly I's**, I tell people that the reason that Lucifer fell from grace was that he had a serious medical condition. When I receive looks of incredulity, I calmly add, "He had '**I**' problems!" If you analyze what he boasted of, you can see that he had fairly ambitious plans.

- (1) **I will ascend into heaven.** An interesting ambition, considering that we normally assume that Lucifer was already **in** heaven. Actually the Hebrew word used here is **shamayim**, and can be used to describe any of the three different heavens we will talk about it just a second. A closer reading of Scripture may convince us otherwise. More on that topic later in this article.
- (2) **I will exalt my throne above the stars of God.** Another interesting thought. At first, when I was researching this passage, I thought that the Hebrew word for **stars** might also be translated as **angels**. Not so. The Hebrew word is **kowkab**, and it means, appropriately, **star**. At first, this doesn't seem to make sense, until you realize that there are **three** heavens, not one. The first heaven is the **atmosphere** around our planet. The second heaven is the **physical universe** in which we live. The third heaven is the **heaven of heavens**, and is where the Godhead actually dwells and has His/Their source of being.
- (3) **I will sit on the mount of the congregation.** The Hebrew word translated **congregation** is **mow'ed**, and after doing a little research on the word, I have to honestly say that congregation is probably a lousy translation for that word. **Meeting place** or **council** is probably a more accurate rendering. No wonder the Bible tells us to study to show ourselves approved, workmen not to be ashamed, **rightly dividing** the Word of truth. The more I researched this matter, the more clearly a **whole new interpretation** for this passage began to come to light. In this boast, he has stated that he and his opinions will be held in high regard by the little known **Council of 70** spoken of in apocryphal writings. This Council of 70 involves the 70 most powerful angels, cherubim and possibly seraphim, all of whom are actively involved in helping the Lord administer this physical universe. Clearly, Lucifer was not a member of said council.
- (4) **I will ascend above the heights of the clouds.** Extremely interesting, in the light of the fact that there are three heavens. This statement makes it sound like he is going to push **beyond the atmosphere or our planet into outer space, as if he were overstepping his assignment here on earth**. Boy, does this play into the next Scripture passage we will decode! In boast #2, he has also said that he will exalt his throne, or sphere of influence or dominion, above the stars of heaven, or, as we would say it, **to include and exceed the physical universe in which we live**. Ambition knows no boundaries. He has already told us that he is tired of his assignment on earth, and wants to expand his dominion beyond earth itself to include all of the physical universe.
- (5) **I will be like the Most High.** The Hebrew word here is '**elyown**', and is generally used to refer to God Himself. But an alternate translation can also be read as **angelic princes**, as of the Council of the 70 to which we just referred. He either wants to be like God or to be God himself,

which is, after all, the ultimate ambition of every rebellious human, desiring to be totally in control of everything.

When we get done decoding this passage, we are forced to come to some very different conclusions about Lucifer than are traditionally taught in Full Gospel circles. There is no doubt that he is an angel. And, as we will learn in our next passage, a **cherub**. Cherubs or cherubim are superior to regular angels, but inferior to **seraphs** or **seraphim**. But, based on this passage, he might not have been the hot-shot that he has typically been portrayed as. Sermons I have heard on this subject usually place him high up in the hierarchy of heaven, often at God's right hand, but the more I study the subject, the less I am sure of that. In this passage, I find a very disgruntled individual, with severe delusions of grandeur, and an ambitious streak that seems to have no end. I also find that individual plotting to make several moves up the line.

First, he wants to leave earth and break with his current assignment.

Second, he wants to leave this physical universe and gain access to the 3rd heaven.

Third, he wants to be a part of the angelic ruling council.

Last of all, he either wants to be like the Almighty, like the ruling council under Him, or to replace God altogether.

God's reaction to this futile attempt is quick and merciless. The Lord quickly tells him that although his ambitions may be divine in scope, his results will put him not only in Hell, but at the very dregs of the barrel, the bottom of the ladder. The higher they climb, the harder they fall. Having said all this about Lucifer, Isaiah then returns to prophesying against the king of Babylon, although there is no clear demarcation line to tell where one prophecy stops and another begins. How is it that Isaiah found himself interweaving these two prophecies against these two individuals? One was an evil king. The other was the king of evil itself. The probable answer is that, just like the Anti-Christ will be in his day, so the king of Babylon was **indwelt by Satan himself**. When the prophet went into the Spirit, the tenuous barrier separating the spirit of the wicked man and the wicked spirit controlling that man was brushed aside. I often tell people that if they could really see the demonic activity present on this planet, they would die of horror as soon as they looked in a mirror. Even if every human being were to be instantly eliminated from the earth, the planet would still remain a fiercely contested battleground between angels and demons alike. Like Elisha and his servant at Dothan, we are vastly outnumbered by both the forces arrayed **against** us and the forces arrayed **for** us.

One more quick note about the Evil One before we move on to our next piece of the puzzle. Satan is Lucifer's **title**, not his **name**, just as **Christ** is the title of our Lord, while we know Him as Jesus. Best read, it would be **Jesus the Christ or Anointed One**, and **Lucifer the Satan or Adversary**. In that respect, the Muslims have a clearer use of the term Satan than we do.

Now we clearly know what Lucifer tried to do, thanks to Isaiah. The question then is **why did he do it?** That answer is found in Ezekiel, Chapter 28. Just as in Isaiah, we find Satan once again personally inhabiting a king in the Middle East, this time the king of Tyre. At the beginning of Chapter 28, Ezekiel begins to prophesy against the **prince** of Tyre, apparently the **human** half of the equation. But in Verse 11, the prophecy switches from the **prince** of Tyre to the **king** of Tyre, and begins to attribute to the king of Tyre things that no human being could have ever done. By the time we are done with the prophecy, it is painfully clear that we are not only talking about a demon, we are talking about the chief demon of all.

" ¹¹ Moreover the word of the LORD came to me, saying, ¹² 'Son of man, take up a lamentation for the **king** of Tyre, and say to him, 'Thus says the Lord GOD: 'You were the **seal of perfection, full of wisdom and perfect in beauty**. ¹³ **You were in Eden, the garden of God; every precious stone was your covering: the sardius, topaz, and diamond, beryl, onyx, and jasper, sapphire, turquoise, and emerald with gold. The workmanship of your timbrels and pipes was prepared for you on the day you were created.** ¹⁴ **You were the anointed cherub who covers; I established you; you were on the holy mountain of God; you walked back and forth in the midst of fiery stones.** ¹⁵ **You were perfect in your ways from the day you were created, till iniquity was found in you.** ¹⁶ *By the abundance of your trading you became filled with violence within, and you sinned; therefore I cast*

you as a profane thing out of the mountain of God; and I destroyed you, **O covering cherub**, from the midst of the fiery stones. ¹⁷ **Your heart was lifted up because of your beauty; you corrupted your wisdom for the sake of your splendor; I cast you to the ground, I laid you before kings, that they might gaze at you.**” -- Ezekiel 28:11-17

There is so much in this passage that is going to blow your mind and be alien and strange to you that we have to take one statement at a time and explain it. Here goes:

- (1) You were the seal of perfection, full of wisdom and perfect in beauty.** One thing that has to be said for Lucifer is that he was once one of the most splendid of all of God’s created beings. There are three kinds of “sons” of God, the **created sons of God**, whom we know as the angels and demons, the **only begotten Son of God**, Jesus Himself, and, last and least of all right now, the **procreated or adopted sons of God**, we human beings. Lucifer before he fell must have been a breathtaking sight. Even now, as twisted and evil as he has become, he is still capable of appearing as an angel of light for a period of time. He can’t sustain the deception indefinitely, but he can still summon enough anointing and power to make it look like he is the real thing. In every case where an “angel” visited someone and gave them some “new” revelation, like Emmanuel Swedenborg of the New Jerusalem Church or Joseph Smith of the Mormons, that “angel” was Lucifer on special assignment, temporarily assuming the appearance he once enjoyed constantly. That’s why Paul said that **even if an angel came and preached to the church**, if he preached any other Gospel than the Gospel that Paul had preached, that he was to be **anathema, or under a curse!** (Galatians 1:8-9) Isaiah said that if they speak not according to this word (the Word of God), **there is no light in them at all!** (Isaiah 8:20) Supernatural “revelation” may often be nothing more than supernatural deception. Lucifer was a **perfect** being. He was extremely wise and **perfect in beauty**. There aren’t too many guys out there who are so good looking that they can be called “beautiful”. But every now and then, a man will come along who is breathtakingly good looking without any feminine overtones who can legitimately be called “beautiful”. There’s not a carnal woman in the whole world who wouldn’t have fallen head over heels in love with Lucifer if they saw him in his human form.
- (2) You were in Eden, the Garden of God.** Yeow! Wow! Omigosh! Can there be **any** doubt about who we are talking about now? But there is more to the story. **Much, much more.** We know from Genesis that Lucifer came **into** the Garden and appeared to Eve as a serpent, but that fact raises some question in and of itself. Was that the **first** time he had been in Eden, or was he a frequent visitor? Why was Eve not surprised when an **animal**, for crying out loud, **spoke** to her? Folks, there was no Mr. Ed the talking horse or Wilbur the talking pig in the Garden in Eden. We read these things in the Bible and we don’t ask the questions that need to be asked. The correct question is not whether these things are true or not. The correct question is, given by faith that these things **are** correct, then **why** are they correct?
- (3) Every precious stone was your covering.** Man, don’t talk to me about *bling*. Baby, nobody could touch Lucifer regarding bling. Every precious stone from diamonds on down was part of his outfit. Not only did the dude **look** good, he also **dressed** good! Nine precious stones plus gold made up his apparel. Can you imagine? It’s not as if God wasn’t taking care of him, no matter where he was stationed. It helps to understand the situation if you picture this as a military operation. When a soldier is given his orders and is stationed at a particular military base, it is not up to him whether he goes there or not. As a soldier, he is obligated to go where his commanding officer tells him to go. He will be outfitted with all the appropriate gear, provided with transportation, housing, meals and an appropriate salary for his service. His job is to do his job, as ordered, in the way ordered, until such time as new orders come in. Clearly, Lucifer was not being mistreated or punished by being assigned to the planet Earth. We’ll come to **why** he was stationed here in just a few moments.
- (4) The workmanship of your timbrels and pipes.** Turns out that old Slewfoot was quite a musician in his day. The word *timbrel* is not a word that is familiar to us, but the word **tambourine** is. That’s what a timbrel is. The word **pipe** looks to be simple, but, alas, it’s not. The Hebrew word translated **pipe** is **neqeb**, and can either be translated as the setting for a

gemstone, which would tie it to the previous statement, or as a hollow pipe, which would tie it to this one. Either way, there is no doubt that Lucifer was **created to be musical**. The mental picture that comes to mind is that in many ways he is a living music box, something which when opened plays a beautiful melody. I've heard it preached many times that he was the praise and worship leader in heaven. Sounds good, but unfortunately, there are absolutely no other Scriptures in the Bible to support that contention. Give that untold thousands of angels are assigned to praise and worship God, once again I believe we are giving him more credit than he is due. He, of course, wants it that way. The more we amplify him, the less we glorify God. In the Satanic Bible, he is portrayed as Jesus' older brother. What an abomination! The more I study him, the tinier and less important he gets.

(5) You were the anointed cherub who covers. Covers what? Ah, dear friends, this is where the plot thickens. We already know that a **cherub**, not an ordinary angel, was **in** the Garden of God. Why was he in the Garden of God? **To cover it.** What does the Bible mean by cover? **To guard and protect it.** Why guard it and protect it? **Because a very important experiment was going on there.** What kind of experiment? **The first attempt in the history of the universe to blend spirit and matter together in an intelligent being with a soul and a body.** When Christ knelt by the super-river that flowed out of the Garden and shaped some of the red clay into a copy of His resurrection body, He was doing something that had never been attempted before. God the Father is a Spirit. The Holy Spirit is, of course, a Spirit. And the Word was a Spirit before He became Jesus, the Christ and became the **only begotten or naturally born Son of God.** All the angels were spirits, too. I've talked about the time paradox formed when Christ took His resurrection body created in 33 AD and moved it backwards through time, intersecting the time stream at multiple locations. He was the 4th Man in the fiery furnace. He was Melchizidek offering communion to Abraham. But most importantly of all, He was the part of the Godhead who **walked in the cool of the evening through the Garden with his creation, made literally in His own image, Adam.** A project of such magnitude would not be left to the care of just any angel. Unfortunately, the angels did not understand fully what was being done. And even Lucifer himself, entrusted with the protection of fledgling humanity, did not understand the significance of the project or what the Lord's final objective was. He should have felt greatly honored. No other angel, cherub or seraph had been given this assignment. Jesus had turned this project over to a cherub who was clearly superior in many ways to his colleagues. Wise. Beautiful. Musical. And apparently also strong and trustworthy. Nothing was to be allowed to interfere with this project. It had been, after all, the crowning achievement of the 7 God-days of Creation. Near the end of that 6,000th Man-year, Adam had been formed. When it became apparent that combining matter with spirit created the biological side effect of desiring a mate, Eve was taken out of Adam's side. Then, after the enormous expenditure of energy required to shape and form the entire, nearly boundless universe, Christ decided to take a day off. Although 1,000 human years represented a dot in eternity to Him, it still gave Him a day to kick off His shoes, lean back in His heavenly Lay-Z-Boy, and take a much deserved rest. But before He could do that, He needed someone He could station on earth, in the vicinity of the Garden, to keep an eye on it and **cover it.** We still use the phrase today. We ask someone at work if they can **cover** our work shift for a day so we can take care of personal items. We ask someone to **cover** for us when we do something stupid and need not to get caught. Lucifer's job was to **cover** the Garden Project and make sure nothing went wrong. Ironically, stationing Mr. Perfect on earth didn't **solve** the problem. In fact, it may very well have **created** the problem in the first place. No sooner had Lucifer arrived on the planet that it became obvious to him that he was in charge of a couple of first class morons. Although their human brains had potential, they were childish and naive. They were physically mature, yet knew nothing about procreation, the process through which all the other species on the planet reproduced. As he reviewed their prospects, it was clear that they were going to take work. A **lot** of work. At first, the project was amusing, sort of. The Garden was beautiful, in natural terms. But it couldn't compare to what he had left in Heaven. After a while, all of it began to seem more like a **demotion** than a **promotion.** Once the seeds of discord were planted, they were sure to grow just as effectively as the natural seeds of the plants that he observed daily.

(6) You were on the holy mountain of God. At first glance, it looks like the passage is referring to Mt. Zion. But, in reality, there are **several** holy mountains of God. We already know that Mt.

Sinai is a holy mountain. But there is a third, less known holy mountain, and its location matches perfectly with this prophecy. It is **Mt. Ararat**. You may not know where Ararat is located. Don't feel bad. Most people don't. It is located on the border of Turkey and Russia, and ownership of the mountain is divided between the two countries. It is, of course, where the Ark of Noah touched down after the Flood. But there is another, far more important part of the history of Ararat that almost no one knows about because they fail to do their Bible research. If we go back into Genesis to the narrative about the Garden, Moses provides us with great geographic triangulation to help us pinpoint exactly where the Garden of Eden was. Most "scholars", ignoring the Biblical account, place the Garden somewhere in the relatively fertile region between the Tigris and Euphrates River, somewhere near ancient Sumer or Accadia. Nothing could be further from the truth. To understand where the Garden was located, we need to turn to Chapter 2 in Genesis:

" ⁸ *The LORD God planted a garden **eastward in Eden**, and there He put the man whom He had formed.* ⁹ *And out of the ground the LORD God made every tree grow that is pleasant to the sight and good for food. The tree of life was also in the midst of the garden, and the tree of the knowledge of good and evil.* ¹⁰ *Now **a river went out of Eden to water the garden, and from there it parted and became four riverheads.*** ¹¹ *The name of the first is **Pishon**; it is the one **which skirts the whole land of Havilah, where there is gold.*** ¹² *And the gold of that land is good. Bdellium and the onyx stone are there.* ¹³ *The name of the second river is **Gihon**; it is the one **which goes around the whole land of Cush.*** ¹⁴ *The name of the third river is **Hiddekel**; it is the one **which goes toward the east of Assyria.** The fourth river is the **Euphrates.**"*

-- Genesis 2:8-14

What God has just given us here is a perfect example of a mapping technique called **triangulation**. In order to find where a particular signal is coming from, you have to be able to pick it up from **three different locations**. Then, when you trace the lines back, the place where they intersect is where your source signal is coming from. When an airplane crashes in some mountainous region and sends out a distress signal, that signal has to be received at three separate locations before the plane can be located. In our case, we have something better than triangulation. We have **quadrangulation**, if such a word exists. We know that a **single, unnamed super-river originated inside the Garden and flowed out of it**. We also know that this single river then **broke into four separate rivers**. We also know the **names of the four rivers**. And we know the **absolute locations of at least two of them**. That's a pretty good start. We already know the location of the **Euphrates River**. It runs on the **eastern side of ancient Sumeria and Babylonia**. And we also know the location of the **Hiddekel River**. We know it today as the **Tigris River**. Genesis says that it goes **toward the east of Assyria**. We know from archeological digs exactly where Assyria was. The other two rivers are a little harder, but not much. Genesis says that the **Pishon** skirted or bordered the whole land of Havilah, **where there is gold**. Remember that Mt. Ararat is located in eastern Turkey. There **just happens** to be a river running in a generally westward direction out of the Ararat mountain chain that goes into an area where there also **just happens** to be **significant gold deposits**. That part of Turkey was once known as **Lydia**, a kingdom with a king named **Croesus**, who was known as the wealthiest man in the whole world before Solomon. So now we have triangulation, but we still have one additional river to tag. Genesis says that the **Gihon** went all around the land of **Cush**. If we take this statement at face value, we seem to have a problem. Notice I said **seem**. In all the ancient maps Cush is shown located where Ethiopia is today, south of Egypt, located along the Nile. If that is true, then two problems present themselves based on our current geography. First, the Nile River runs south-north, not north-south; as it would have to in order to be flowing out of the Garden. Second, the Mediterranean Ocean separates Africa from Asia Minor. That seems to disqualify the Nile as the ancient Gihon. But there is something you must remember. These rivers are described as they existed **before the Flood**. The flood caused major changes in the earth's topography. And we have clear geological evidence that there was a time during prehistory when the Atlantic Ocean did not cross the Straits of Gibraltar, where Spain and Morocco are located. It is clear that the vast region now known as the Mediterranean was once fertile lowland, and very probably inhabited by ancient man. When the flood came, it also ruptured that rock barrier between those lowlands and the Atlantic, and the water of that mighty ocean came pouring in at an alarming rate. Some geologists actually think that the Flood itself

was the breaking of this barrier, but that is not consistent with Genesis, which says that the whole world was flooded and underwater. Given all of that, a river flowing out of the region of the Garden and headed south would in fact pass through these regions which were once land and into the African continent near where the Nile now fans out into a delta. That river would in fact have flowed from the north to the south and would have stretched all the way into the land of Cush. Massive geological changes occurred not only during the Flood but also afterwards. Genesis 10:25 tells us that the **Earth itself was divided** in the days of Peleg, a full generation after the Tower of Babel. This can only refer to the breaking of North and South America off from Europe and Africa. Massive damage would have been done at that time, and tremendous changes would have occurred to the geology of the region.

When we then analyze all four rivers, we find, much to our amazement, that all four rivers end just about 100 miles from Mt. Ararat. If we assume that the super-river ran at least that far, we now know exactly where the Garden was located. It wasn't in some flat river plain. **It was located in a mountain valley within viewing distance of Mt. Ararat, the mountain of God.** It was from Ararat that Lucifer maintained his vigil on the Garden, coming often to visit and speak with Adam and Eve. That is why Eve was not shocked when a serpent spoke to her. Perhaps he maintained that appearance in order not to frighten her. We don't know for sure. But there can be no doubt that Lucifer was stationed on Mt. Ararat, watching over the mountain valley beneath him where the Garden was located. This is, incidentally, why when Adam and Eve were evicted from the Garden, there only had to be a guard placed on the **East** side of the Garden. The north, south and west were blocked by the mountains themselves and thus needed no protection from man. Only the eastern side of the Garden, where the river flowed out, had to be secured. How amazing it is that when we take God at his literal Word, things falls into place instead of falling apart!

(7) You were perfect in all your ways...until iniquity was found in you. How tragic, then, that this **disgruntled employee**, not satisfied with being put in charge of one of the most important projects in the history of the universe, would be the first being to entertain sin in his heart. We must remember neither Adam nor Eve was the first to sin... **Lucifer was.** And, despite the fact that our culture seems incapable of admitting that it ever does anything wrong and that everything that is wrong most have come from some external circumstance, it is clear that **sin originates from within.** Iniquity was found **in** Lucifer. He had no reason to be unhappy with his position. He had been graced with unbelievably good looks, threads to match, marvelous musical skills, and a position of unparalleled authority. But Lucifer had one weakness. **He couldn't stand prosperity.** I have found it to be a rule that the more things people have, the less those things mean to them. Only today, Brittany Spears melted down for the umpteenth time, this time over her ex picking up the kid for scheduled visitation. I have watched people who are just fine until something good happens to them. And then, suddenly, they find that although they were **good as long as things were bad**, that **they become bad as soon as things turn good.** Go figure. In India at the orphanage, all the children were smiling and happy even though they had nothing to eat. As long as everyone was in the same boat together and everyone was equal, there was no problem. But as soon as one little boy got a sponsor and others didn't, he began to lord it over others, telling one little girl that she wasn't loved because he had a sponsor and she didn't! Needless to say, that situation was corrected in a hurry! And as we will learn in our next point, Lucifer couldn't stand prosperity, either!

(8) Your heart was lifted up because of your beauty; you corrupted your wisdom for the sake of your splendor. There it is, folks! Never give a cherub an even break! At least **that** cherub. As long as you keep your focus on what **God wants** and what **others need**, you won't become selfish and self-centered. But the minute your gaze turns inward and you begin to reflect on what you do or do not have, iniquity, covetousness and greed enter in. When Lucifer began to spend too much time in front of the mirror, problems started to erupt. Once a person's perspective has turned inward, selfishness becomes the law of the land and the rule for them and all those around them.

I know that this has been a long journey, and you may be asking yourself why we took this little trip at all. Oh yes, you've learned many things about the enemy that you didn't know before, but in what way is it cogent and related to our topic in Revelation? Here's why: We now know the chain reaction of events that led to his downfall.

First, we find him being created as a cherub of extraordinary beauty, wisdom and talent. Second, we find him being given a task of extreme importance. Third, we find him distaining the privilege that God had given him. Fourth, we find him privately entertaining sin in his own heart. Fifth, we find him launching an all-out attack against the 3rd Heaven itself, in order to break free from the earth, this universe and to gain privilege and position among his peers and overthrow his own Master. He is the original Judas Iscariot. He is the original man of privilege without integrity. Every betrayal that has ever happened in the history of the world stems from this first act of treachery. When the young pastor I had hired to help me betrayed me and took my job while I lay throwing up in the hospital and battling cancer, he was acting under the direct guidance of he who is anti- Christ. When the seven leaders of the church entered into covenant with him to do this behind my back, they were acting in accordance with Lucifer. When the District Superintendent agreed with them yet stood in my hospital room and told me that everything was just fine, he was an assistant to the Unholy One. **Treachery and betrayal always come from within the kingdom, not from without.** But **if they did it to Jesus**, why should any of us be surprised **when they do it to us?**

So far we have the order of events correct. But now comes the problem. Most Christian pastors teach that Lucifer was so beautiful, so eloquent and so wise that he was able to persuade 1/3rd of the Heavenly Host to side with him and launch an all-out attack against the Lord and the remaining 2/3rds of the angels who remained loyal. I was taught that myself. I have also taught it for many years. But where do we get that doctrine? From Revelation 12:4, where it says that **his tail drew 1/3rd of the stars out of heaven and threw them to the earth.** That's it, folks! That is the **only Scripture in the entire Bible that this doctrine is based on!** I thought all matters were supposed to be established in the mouths of two or three witnesses. I have an old saw of a saying that has kept my doctrine in good stead for many years: "**A table ain't stable lest it's got three legs!**" What do I mean by that? Simply that it is wisdom to not teach anything unless you have **three Scripture references in context** that you can support your doctrine from. Here's an interesting challenge to you: get a transcript, audio tape or CD of a message preached to the body of Christ, **any** message, **any** pastor. And then take each thing they say and see if you can find three Scriptures to back up what they are saying. You may be surprised. You may be shocked. You may not like what you find. But you will start to understand the truth.

Now back to our problem. Remember the three fundamental rules? That the Bible is **literal, logical and chronological?** That's where the problem lies! You see, there is absolutely nothing in the Revelation account that justifies Bible "scholars" taking this single verse, ripping it out of the chronological context in which it is found, and placing it arbitrarily back at the beginning of time. But that is exactly what they do. They teach, and I have done it myself, that this single event didn't happen in the timeline where John puts it, that it happened long, long ago. Now that may not prove to be an issue with you, but it is an issue with me. I want to be very sure that what I teach you is absolutely correct, based on everything I have available to me. We who teach shall be judged with greater strictness, and there's already been way too much carelessness down through the ages.

So, here's our quandary: It is generally assumed that Lucifer's rebellion happened before the creation of the universe. Our investigation has proved otherwise. It is obvious that his rebellion was launched from the earth where he was stationed. After his coup attempt failed and he was cast out of the very Heaven that he so longed to return to, he made one final trip into the Garden. He assumed his normal shape, a **serpent with legs** (think long and hard about that one, friends!), and carried on the treacherous conversation with Eve which would eventually result in her fall from grace, Adam's refusal to be separated from his beloved, knowingly eating forbidden fruit and his joining her, and their expulsion from the Garden and subsequent loss of immortality. Having been **fired from his job**, this **disgruntled employee** gained access once more to the corporate facility where he had been working, and **trashed the project out of spite.**

That still leaves us with the question of **when and how he recruited those angels who fell with him and who are now the demons and imps of our own world.** Can the Revelation passage honestly be relocated millennia away from its place in the timeline? We still have much to discuss, but we have run out of time for today. Join us tomorrow, when we watch the Accuser of the Brethren get ***Cast Out of Heaven.***

Day 25 ~ Cast Out of Heaven



“ ⁷ And war broke out in heaven: Michael and his angels fought with the dragon; and the dragon and his angels fought, ⁸ but they did not prevail, nor was a place found for them in heaven any longer. ⁹ So the great dragon was cast out, that serpent of old, called the Devil and Satan, who deceives the whole world; he was cast to the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.”

– Revelation 12:7-9

In yesterday's *E-Pistle*, we examined the chain of events that led up to Lucifer's revolt and subsequent expulsion from heaven. But at the end of the article, we were staring a problem in the face: what to do with the apparent mis-placement of the fall of Lucifer and the angels who sided with him in the time line? As we have walked through the Book of Revelation, we have followed three cardinal rules: that the Word of God is **literal, logical and chronological**. And up till now, everything has fallen cleanly into place. No other book in the Bible contains such a clear, accurate and complete outline of what will occur in future times. But the horse that we have been riding has suddenly decided to throw a shoe on us when we reach Chapter 12. It is this break with the timeline that has stopped me from teaching Chapter 12 for many years. I know I could have glossed over the problem and no one would have been the wiser, but I would have known and the Lord would have known, and I wasn't comfortable with either scenario. To help you see the problem more clearly, I want to break Chapter 12 down into a series of events, and then try and place them in the historical timeline.

- 1. A woman appears, clothed with the sun, the moon under her feet, and a garland of 12 stars on her head.** Assuming that this woman represents a combination of Israel and the Virgin Mary, then this event must be placed in the **past**.
- 2. She is pregnant, and cries out during the childbirth process.** Also in the **past**. Jesus was born almost 2,000 years ago.
- 3. A giant red dragon with seven heads, ten horns and 7 crowns appears.** Based on the symbols connecting this passage to other passages in Revelation 13 and Daniel 7, we would have to say that this even represents a **future** event, connected to the appearing of the Anti-Christ and his end-time empire.
- 4. The dragon's tail draws a third of the stars (angels) out of heaven and throws them to earth.** According to most Bible prophecy "experts", an event far in the **past**, at the beginning of time. These fallen angels today account for the imps and demons on this planet.
- 5. The dragon attempts to devour (kill) the baby as soon as it was born.** Another **past** event, when Herod attempted to kill the Christ Child.
- 6. The woman bears a male Child who will rule the nations with a rod of iron.** Also in the **past**, since Jesus was born in approximately 7 BC, based on current calculations.
- 7. The Child is caught up to God and His throne.** Also in the **past**, since Christ has already ascended into Heaven and will return again from there to judge the quick (living) and the dead.
- 8. The woman then flees into the wilderness.** Oh, brother! Except for that one nasty hiccup on point #3, everything has been neatly lining up in the **past**. But according to most prophecy

experts, this is clearly a **future** event. This event also unmistakably aligns the woman with **Israel**, not **Mary**, because Mary never fled into the wilderness to escape Satan's wrath. According to Chapter 12, God has prepared a special place in the wilderness for the surviving remnants of Israel, and they will be provided for and sheltered there for **1,260 day** or **42 months** or **3½ years**. This also is clearly consistent with what will happen in the future, after the murder, resurrection and ascension of the Two Witnesses. After their 3½ ministry of protecting Israel against the Anti-Christ comes to an end, they are removed from the scene. This leaves Israel helpless and vulnerable to the Anti-Christ. As a result, a way is provided for the remaining Jews to escape from Jerusalem during the final 3½ years of the Anti-Christ's reign of terror. **How** they escape and **who** enables them to escape is as exciting a story as is found in the Bible. We have already discussed this issue in a previous *E-Pistle*.

- 9. War breaks out in heaven between Michael and the angels loyal to God versus Lucifer / Satan and those fallen angels who are loyal to him. The dragon loses the war and he and his angels are cast out of heaven.** Now we find ourselves on the other end of the yo-yo again! According to almost all so-called experts, this is clearly a **past** event. This battle is supposed to have taken place a very long time ago, at the point in the timeline where Lucifer attempted to take over Heaven and supplant God Himself. As you can tell if you just scan back briefly, there is something not quite right with this Chapter. We are bouncing wildly back and forth from the distant past to 2,000 years ago to the future, with no end to this bobble-head doll act in sight. Either the Bible is wrong or our standard interpretation is wrong. Guess which stance I am going to take?
- 10. A loud voice announces that the kingdom of God has come because the accuser of the brethren has been cast down and that they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb and the word of their testimony.** Back and forth we go! This is clearly perceived by most experts as a **future** event!
- 11. Having been cast down to the earth, the devil is in a rage, because he knows that his time is very short.** Also a **future** event.
- 12. The dragon attempts to persecute the woman who gave birth to the male Child.** Also in the **future**.
- 13. The woman is given two wings of a great eagle so that she can fly into the wilderness as described in point #8.** A **future** event.
- 14. The serpent (dragon) spews water out of his mouth in an attempt to carry the woman away. The earth opens its mouth and swallows the flood, saving the woman.** A **future** event, and one which I have some serious questions about myself.
- 15. Having failed to persecute the woman (Israel), the dragon goes off in a rage to make war on the rest of the woman's descendants (Christians) who keep the commandments of God and have the testimony of Jesus Christ.** Also a **future** event, when those believers who were not ready for the Rapture find themselves squarely in the gun sights of the armies of the Anti-Christ.

So, having analyzed the Chapter step by step, what have discovered? That of the **15 total events, 7 are past events and 8 are future events, based on current, standard theology!** Yet the entire Chapter is presented as if it were a single, continuous narrative, with one event logically following after another! Can you see now why I have always struggled with this chapter? By being honest with myself, I could no longer in good conscience pick and choose what I wanted to go where I wanted it to go without regard for the integrity of the Word of God. Clearly, something is very, very wrong with our current interpretation of this Chapter and our placement of these events. In the light of all of this, I am going to prayerfully, respectfully present an **alternate, literal, logical and chronological** rendering of this text. Again, I know that this will fly in the face of everything that you have been taught, but if we are going to give the Word of God the due that it rightfully deserves, we have to admit that we can no longer teach this passage the way that it has been taught for many years. I will not knowingly

distort the Word of God or bend it to suit my fancies. All I ask you is that you compare my **interpretation** with what the Word **actually** says.

What do we do with this mess? One way to get around the obvious inconsistencies, at least in interpretation, is to call Chapter 12 a **Flashback**. Flashbacks are a standard feature of modern movie making. Some movies, like *Big Fish*, are written almost entirely in the form of flashbacks. You could argue that the Lord wants to take a break here to show the entire panorama before returning to the blow-by-blow action in Chapter 13, when the Anti-Christ makes his appearance on the stage of world politics. Does that argument hold water? Maybe. It is true that a lot of prophecy in the Old Testament kinda bounces around from topic to topic. We really do some interesting and creative things with Scripture to make it suit our purposes. Time after time, I look at a passage that is suppose to be Messianic, for example, and I scratch my head and wonder what kind of interesting plant they were smoking when they made that decision. The same holds true for the translation of some of the Hebrew and Greek words that are in the original text. And my favorite, or least favorite subject is what I call the **extra words** that the translators have inserted. If you have a good translation the Bible, you will find Jesus' words in red. That helps you to understand what He said versus commentators like Luke. You will also find certain words in the Old and New Testament are *italicized*. When you see an italicized word that means that the word was **added into the text to aid the readability of the passage**. At least that was the original intent of the translators. Unfortunately, particularly in the New Testament, the added words often **obscure** the meaning of the passage rather than **clarifying** it. There are several riveting examples of this in the Gospel of John, where words added by the translators **totally change the meaning of the passage**, moving it away from the powerful original Greek meaning and watering it down.

So, is Chapter 12 a flashback? I used to teach it that way, but I am no longer comfortable doing so. I suspect that I took that approach because people expected me to have the answers, and, frankly, I had none. As I get older, I am more concerned with what God thinks, and far less concerned with what people think.

If Chapter 12 is intended to be **literal, logical and chronological**, then you and I are both in deep trouble. I can agree that the woman clothed with the sun is the nation of Israel, out of whom would come the Christ. The woman cannot be Mary. Period. Too many things happen to her that never, ever marginally happened to the mother of Jesus. I have absolute confidence in our interpretation of the identity of the sun, moon and the 12 stars. Scripture interprets Scripture, and that principle works perfectly in this case. The dragon is also a no-brainer, as you will see when we tackle Chapter 13 in depth, and come to understand the remarkable linkages between Revelation 13, Matthew 24 and Daniel 7. Verse 4 is another matter. The only way to shoehorn it in and make it fit is to say that it represents the ongoing, continual resistance of Satan to Israel and the eventual appearance of the Christ. There is, however, an alternate way to look at this verse, and I just want to bounce it off of you and get **your** thoughts on the matter. This is one of the few passages in the Bible where I do not feel comfortable with either the standard interpretation or my previous efforts on the matter.

I would like to propose a theory (not law!) of **Incremental Demotion** in regards to Satan. We know from studying Isaiah and Ezekiel that Lucifer was created beautiful, brilliant and talented. We also know that he was specifically assigned to watch over the Garden and protect it and its inhabitants. We further know that he launched some form of attack against the 3rd Heaven and against the Almighty. Standard theology states that he is then **cast down from Heaven to the earth**. But I'm not so sure that this happened all at once. Here's what I think **actually** happened:

After his failed attempt to overthrow the existing government of Heaven, he had **all authority in the 2nd and 3rd Heavens removed from him, but he was still not denied access to the 3rd Heaven**. Why do I say that? Because Job clearly documents the matter. In fact, it is his access to the 3rd Heaven that triggers the whole contest between God and the Devil over Job's integrity.

" ⁶ Now there was a day when **the sons of God came to present themselves before the LORD**, and **Satan also came among them**. ⁷ And the LORD said to Satan, 'From where do you come?' So Satan answered the LORD and said, '**From going to and fro on the earth, and from walking back and**

forth on it.' ⁸ Then the LORD said to Satan, 'Have you considered My servant Job, that there is none like him on the earth, a **blameless** and upright man, one who fears God and shuns evil?' "

Job 1:6-8

Without going into the extensive research I have done on this passage, suffice it to say that **the sons of God** are clearly the angels who did not fall from grace. It also strongly supports the concept that there are meetings in heaven, times of accountability, and organizational structure. In the midst of this meeting of accountability, Satan decides to make a personal appearance. Remember that he has already triggered the disaster in the Garden. He has already attempted to overthrow the Almighty. **Yet he is still allowed access into the 3rd Heaven.** If I were God, that would never have happened, but I'm not. What the Lord's motives were in permitting Lucifer, now merely called "*The Adversary*", to have access to the Throne are beyond me. And if you look past the phony religiosity with which we read and view Scripture, a very interesting picture emerges. It is as if Satan is deliberately showing up **where he is not welcome or wanted.** It has all the overtones of someone who has deliberately come to cause trouble. When the Lord sees him, He asks him, "**What have you been up to?**", with a clear touch of distaste in His Voice. And then Lucifer does what he came to do: cause trouble. In response to God's question, he brags, "**Oh, just walking here and there, all around my earth!**" Even though Scripture says that the Earth is the Lord's and the fullness thereof, there is a nasty hitch elsewhere in the contract. God had granted **dominion or rule, administration and authority** of the Earth over to man. When Adam and Eve fell, that dominion **defaulted to Lucifer.** So **by law, the Earth belonged to him!** That is how he has been able to successfully apply the Law of Sin and Death to not only all men, but also all life on our planet. It is currently **his planet**, and he rules it. At the same time, although he has authority on earth, he has it **nowhere else.** His initial punishment was that the authority which he had originally carried in all three Heavens was now partially stripped from him. Although he didn't lose **access** to the 3rd Heaven, he did lose **authority** there. That condition continued on without change until Christ came. Lucifer did not completely understand **why** the Word would want to come to earth and take on human form, but he knew it did not bode well for him. This is why he repeatedly tried to destroy Israel down through history. To kill the bloodline of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob would prevent the Messiah from being born. Assassination attempt after assassination attempt is made against Israel. Pharaoh tries to kill off all the males, thus potentially forcing the Hebrew females to intermarry with the Egyptian culture and thus lose their ethnic identity. God issues a severe warning to the children of Israel as they are about to come into the Promised Land: under no circumstances are they to **intermarry with the people living there.** In fact, they are encouraged to completely drive out or destroy the peoples living in Canaan. At all costs, the bloodline must be kept pure! Even after exile and return, God keeps watch over His people, restoring and returning them to their Promised Land. Finally, Herod attempts to duplicate the carnage of Pharaoh by killing all the boys under the age of 2. Eventually Satan can stand no more. He personally engineers the murder of Christ. In so doing, by following his own bloodlust, he inadvertently violates the very legal agreement that he has been relying on for all these thousands of years. Adam and Eve fell by violating the simple terms God had outlined for them. Satan had only one rule he had to obey: **He could not kill an innocent man.** But since all men were **born sinners** and had the Law of Sin and Death already operating in them, it was impossible for them not to sin. And the moment they sinned, Satan had the right to kill them. But not Jesus. He had been born without sin courtesy of the Virgin Birth. That's why it was necessary. Since the sins of the **fathers**, not the **mothers**, are visited on the children, there was no way that someone could be born without sin unless they were born **of** a woman, but without the intervention of a male. Jesus was born sinless. He lived His entire life without sinning. So when Lucifer incited the Jews and the Romans against Him, he broke the **one cardinal rule that he had to obey in order to retain ownership of the planet!**

Frankly, he should have seen it coming. He had already seen his authority over the atmosphere of the planet compromised by Jesus' disciples. In Luke Chapter 9, Jesus had commissioned the 12 to go out, healing the sick, raising the dead and casting out unclean spirits. They had dutifully gone out and performed their task. In so doing, they had wreaked havoc in the kingdom of darkness which ruled the planet. Most of us assume that demons are somehow restricted to Hell. Nothing could be further from the truth. A certain number of demons are currently imprisoned in the Abyss. We talked about them earlier in this book. A few more appear to be imprisoned on the surface of the planet. We know of 4 that are chained near the Euphrates River. But the vast majority of them are active **on the surface of**

this planet or in the atmosphere. After the 12 returned with a very positive report, Jesus quickly commissioned another 70 and sent them out in Luke Chapter 10. When they returned, they brought this thrilling report:

"¹⁷ Then the seventy returned with joy, saying, 'Lord, even the demons are subject to us in Your name.'¹⁸ And He said to them, 'I saw Satan fall like lightning from heaven.'¹⁹ Behold, I give you the authority to trample on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy, and nothing shall by any means hurt you.²⁰ Nevertheless do not rejoice in this, that the spirits are subject to you, but rather rejoice because your names are written in heaven.' " -- Luke 10:17-20

Notice what Jesus said? When they said that the demons were subject to them in His Name, he replied and said, **"I saw Satan fall like lightning from heaven"**. To help you understand what He just said in the light of the Three Heavens, let's translate it this way: **"I saw Satan and his demonic forces stripped of their power and fall helpless out of the atmosphere that surrounds our planet"**. How humiliating for Lucifer! Once the object of desire for all who saw him, he was now **bound to the surface of the planet!** All through the exercise of faith in Jesus' Mighty Name! He had been angry over being assigned to the surface of the planet when he had the capability to soar through the atmosphere, into outer space and to the very Throne itself. Now, mere humans, whom he had so despised, were capable of stripping him of his power so that he couldn't even fly!

Unfortunately, this condition of powerlessness did not persist. After a century of taking on the chin, Lucifer and his cohorts began to regain their power as the church slipped into compromise and stopped praying and fasting. Soon he and his demonic adversaries once again had full dominion of not only the planet, but also the **atmosphere or 1st Heaven** again. With the notable exception of great saints of old peppered here and there throughout the history of the church, Lucifer had once again regained his full control of the planet. But in the 15th Century, things began to change. Spurred by the Holy Spirit, the 5 Wise Virgins began to wake up. Now, nearing the end of this age, Lucifer is again enraged as he sees his control of the atmosphere of the planet slipping away. And remember that air superiority is the key to modern warfare. In both spiritual and military matters, **he who controls the sky controls the outcome of the battle.** To help you see how perfectly this analysis matches actual Scripture, let me quote to you the passage in Revelation following what we have just talked about.

"⁷ And war broke out in heaven: Michael and his angels fought with the dragon; and the dragon and his angels fought,⁸ but they did not prevail, nor was a place found for them in heaven any longer.⁹ So the great dragon was cast out, that serpent of old, called the Devil and Satan, who deceives the whole world; he was cast to the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.¹⁰ Then I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, 'Now salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of His Christ have come, for the accuser of our brethren, who accused them before our God day and night, has been cast down.¹¹ And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb and by the word of their testimony, and they did not love their lives to the death.¹² Therefore rejoice, O heavens, and you who dwell in them! Woe to the inhabitants of the earth and the sea! For the devil has come down to you, having great wrath, because he knows that he has a short time.' " – Revelation 12:7-12

As I read this Scripture, an additional thought occurs to me. It is amazing as you meditate and dwell deeply on the Word of God how it opens itself up to you, just like a living thing. Is it possible, I wonder, that there was not **one but two assaults on the 3rd Heaven?** We postulate an initial attack sometime before the incident in the Garden. Is it not possible that Revelation is describing a **second, more desperate attack, just like the Battle of the Bulge in World War II?** In the Battle of the Bulge, we were driving the Germans back, slowly but surely, into their native country. But the German military planned **one last offensive**, hoping to break the back of the Allies and separate them into two divided armies. For three brutal days the battle raged, and the enemy almost prevailed. I had two uncles who were in the battle, and they had some remarkable stories to tell. Only the brave heroism of a small group of Allied soldiers carried the day and turned the German onslaught back. There is a situation that parallels this, also in Revelation. It is a largely unknown fact that there are **two** battles of Armageddon, one at the beginning of the Millennial Reign, one at the end. Didn't know that? I'll talk about that fun fact in **Episode 6 – Invasion from Outer Space.**

Back to the Revelation passage. Notice how it says that **salvation, strength and the kingdom of our God have come?** What are they talking about? **The ultimate relinquishment of Satan's rule over this planet!** Lucifer's evil rule is coming to an end. Christ is regaining His rightful ownership and authority. No longer will the people of the earth suffer under an unjust, unfair and evil king. In case you haven't caught on to the parallel yet, we are talking about the story of Robin Hood, the evil King John, the Good King Richard, who has been away on the Crusades, but who is returning and all the other characters of the story. Almost every great story is lifted, subconsciously or not, directly from the pages of the Good Book. Notice also how very much like a military battle this all is. First, the enemy loses control of the 3rd Heaven. Then he is forced back out of territory which he had appropriated but which wasn't rightfully his in the 2nd Heaven, the very stars and planets themselves. Finally, he is forced out of the 1st Heaven, down to the ground itself. Notice that **the inhabitants of the heavens are instructed to rejoice.** They are no longer in enemy occupied territory. It almost makes you wonder if somehow other angelic beings were forced to be subject to Lucifer while he exercised authority over territories not rightfully his own, just like occupied Europe in World War II. Even through France technically belonged to the French, while the Nazi held control of the country the people who lived there were forced to live under their control. Also notice that the inhabitants of the earth and the sea are warned, because, **having been driven to his last line of defense, the dragon's wrath is terrible. He knows he is going to lose the war. And he just can't stand it!** All those millennia of plotting and scheming. All those thousands of years controlling one tiny planet, hoping for one more chance to try and overthrow his Creator. And how it is too late. The Allies are in Germany, headed straight for Berlin. Hitler has locked himself in his bunker. But instead of taking his own life, which is impossible because Lucifer is, like all the other angels, eternal, he is determined to take as many people with him as he can before it all ends. And he will almost succeed. Outside of the remnant of Israel and a few surviving, repentant Christians who were left behind after the Rapture, the deception of the planet will be complete. In the final two battles, the greatest armies in the history of the world will assemble to march against Jerusalem. Both will be instantly destroyed, and Lucifer will be left standing helpless in the Temple as Christ strides in to remove this insignificant intruder from His Holy House of Prayer.

There will be even more punishment for Lucifer, but that will have to wait till Episode Six to discuss those matters. Until then, keep a close watch over your own heart, for out of it flow the issues of life. Lucifer let his "smarts", his good looks and his talent go to his head. Instead of being eternally grateful for the opportunity to watch over the beings who would eventually judge him, he became eternally resentful because he didn't receive what he thought was his fair due. In trying to exalt himself, he became responsible for his own demise. People sometimes ask me, "*Pastor Ray, if God really loves us as much as you say He does, why does He send people to Hell?*" My response is straightforward and simple. God doesn't send **anybody** to Hell. People send **themselves** to Hell by their thoughts, words, decisions and action. People I minister to sometimes try to justify their ungodly behavior by saying "*God loves me just the way I am!*" I don't deny that. God even loves his enemies. God loves every sinner burning in Hell right now. What God **doesn't** love is the sinfulness and ungodly conduct which so often comes from people who say that they belong to him.

Lucifer began as a wise, beautiful creature of extraordinary talent. But as he continued on in his rebellion to God, he began to morph. Soon he was no longer a bright, shining creature. By the time he had returned from his attempted takeover of Heaven, he was manifesting as a **serpent with legs**, giving lying, unholy counsel. After that he became the **Adversary**, then the **Accuser of the Brethren**. Finally, he managed to mutate into something wicked, evil and foul; a bizarre, mutant **dragon** with multiple heads. All of these **external** changes occurred because of what was going on **inside** of him. Don't let the **inside** of you be caught up in the things of this world. If what is inside of you is **light** and not darkness, the rest of you will eventually start to reflect that. Eventually, you will glow with the same kind of glory that Lucifer once had but lost. Then, the glory inside of you will increase beyond even that point, until it approximates the glory of Christ Himself. The Bible says that we will be like Him, for we will see Him as He is. Make your desire and goal be to be like Christ. Lay aside all that is selfish and carnal inside of you, and let Him cleanse you from all iniquity. Amen and Amen!

Day 26 – The Beast from the Sea



¹ Then I stood on the sand of the sea. And I saw a beast rising up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, and on his horns ten crowns, and on his heads a blasphemous name. ² Now the beast which I saw was like a leopard, his feet were like *the feet of a bear*, and his mouth like the mouth of a lion. The dragon gave him his power, his throne, and great authority.

– Revelation 13:1-2

In addition to writing, we also do a variety of seminars, some on *Unrolling the Scroll*, some on *How to Survive the Coming Crash* and some on our internet Bible College. I just started a new 10-week session on *Unrolling the Scroll* last Friday, and I was talking about how Revelation links to the rest of the Bible by means of key **symbols and phrases**. Never is this truer than in Revelation Chapter 13. The symbols used in this chapter clearly and unmistakably link directly to Daniel in a rather remarkable way. I've already talked about these linkages in **Episode Four – The Crucified Bride** and also in an article earlier in this Episode, but we have come to the major use of these symbols in the Bible, and we will devote a fair number of *E-Pistles* to Chapter 13 before we are done explaining it all. In order to lay the foundation for Revelation Chapter 13, we must go all the way back to Daniel Chapter 7. In Chapter 7, Daniel had a bizarre dream:

" ¹ In the first year of Belshazzar king of Babylon, Daniel had a dream and visions of his head while on his bed. Then he wrote down the dream, telling the main facts. ² Daniel spoke, saying, "I saw in my vision by night, and behold, the four winds of heaven were stirring up the Great Sea. ³ **And four great beasts** came up from the sea, each different from the other. ⁴ The **first** was like a **lion**, and had **eagle's wings**. I watched **till its wings were plucked off**; and it was lifted up from the earth and **made to stand on two feet like a man**, and **a man's heart was given to it**. ⁵ And suddenly another beast, **a second**, like a **bear**. It **was raised up on one side**, and **had three ribs in its mouth** between its teeth. And they said thus to it: 'Arise, devour much flesh!' ⁶ After this I looked, and there was **another**, like a **leopard**, which had on its **back four wings of a bird**. The beast also had **four heads**, and **dominion was given to it**. ⁷ After this I saw in the night visions, and behold, a **fourth beast**, dreadful and terrible, exceedingly strong. It had **huge iron teeth**; it was devouring, breaking in pieces, and trampling the residue with its feet. It was different from all the beasts that were before it, and it had **ten horns**." – Daniel 7:1-7

In Daniel's strange and troubling dream he saw four beasts coming up out of the sea. Now historically whenever we have seen the **sea** (sorry for the bad pun!) in other visions, it has always been representative of the peoples of the **world**. So with that in mind, we can safely begin our analysis by saying that we are looking at **four world empires**. That interpretation is common to almost all Biblical expositors, but who they think those empires represent is another thing altogether. If we were to travel all the way back to *Episode One – The Revelation of Jesus Christ*, we would encounter the **Three Rules of Interpretation** that I established for myself when I began, under the prodding of the Lord, to study the Book of Revelation. They state that Scripture should be interpreted as **literal, logical** and **chronological** unless otherwise clearly indicated by the text. A supplemental rule was that, in regard to matching Scripture to Scripture and generating interpretations, you linked passage to passage by their **matching symbol or phrase**. Most Bible prophecy experts do not follow this logical, orderly rule and end up with strange and bizarre linkages of Scripture. Many experts have tried to link these four beasts to the empires listed and explained in the dream that Daniel had about the statue. But in order to do so, you have to **cross-link dissimilar symbols**. Fortunately, when I began to study Daniel, I

was not away of the "standard" interpretation for it and avoided being misled by well-intentioned but incorrect scholars.

Instead, I asked myself, "What world empires have been linked **by symbol** to these images?" The Lion was not immediately helpful, nor were the Eagle's Wings, but when we hit the **Bear**, everything fell into place. In the entire history of the world, there has only been one empire or super-power that has been associated with the symbol of the Bear, **Russia**. The match was perfect, even down to the description of the animal. It could only **raise up on one side**. Russia is **frozen along its entire northern border**, thus unable to "rise up". The only movement of commerce and military can occur to the south, and the Russians have had a long-standing ambition to "dip their toes in the Indian Ocean", by whatever means necessary. The bear had **three ribs in its mouth**. These represent two separate things. First, the fact that Russia grew to its full size **by "eating" the other nations around it**. Second, there are **three nations**, Estonia, Latvia and Lithuania, who broke off from the former USSR when it shattered. They have not rejoined the reformed union that came later on. Mother Russia is not very happy about their proclaimed independence, and would gladly "eat" them all over again, and probably will at some time in the near future. Hence, the three ribs in the bear's mouth. Once the identity of the Bear was established, it was easy to go back in time to identify the Lion and the Eagle's Wings. The **Lion** had to be the **British Empire** during its heyday, when it was boasted that the sun never set on the empire. During the great Wesleyan revivals, England was made to stand up like a man and was given the heart of a man as vast social and moral reforms swept through the country. And if the Lion was Great Britain, then the **Eagle's Wings** attached to the Lion and then ripped off had to be **America**. Even though we consider ourselves to be independent from England, we are nonetheless the spiritual, economic, cultural and military children of the Lion. In both of the previous world wars, one of the primary motives for entering the war was to protect our "parent", the Lion. Those three empires were relatively easy. I struggled for a while regarding the identity of the **Leopard** until it dawned on me that it is probably (notice I said probably!) a **Muslim, Pan-Arabic Union consisting of Iran, Iraq, Syria and Saudi Arabia**. The four sets of wings are logically symbolic of the four air forces of the countries, just as the four heads indicate four heads of state, one in each country. The fact that it is given dominion is a fairly scary thing, considering how totally intolerant and brutal most Middle Eastern Muslims seem to be, but history is starting to bear this assumption out as well. The "how" of their dominion is fairly simple: the control of the vast percentage of the world's oil resources. I received a telling email just the other day discussing the vast disparity in prices for gasoline across the world. Right now we are grumbling about paying over \$3.00 a gallon. Let me remind all you youngsters out there that in 1973 when the first Arab oil embargo hit, we were paying the "exorbitant" price of **30 cents a gallon!** That will give you a clear historical perspective on how badly we are being gouged by the Arab world and our very own oil companies, the vast majority of whom were actually birthed in this all-men-created-equal haven of industry. They have rewarded America for its nobility by their carnality and greed. But we're not the only ones getting gouged. As of January 2008, here's what other countries across the world are paying for their fuel, with all prices expressed in US dollars as the price for one gallon of regular fuel.

Oslo, Norway	\$6.82
Hong Kong, Rep. of China	\$6.25
Brussels, Belgium	\$6.16
London, UK	\$5.96
Rome, Italy	\$5.80
Tokyo, Japan	\$5.25
Sao Paulo, Brazil	\$4.42
New Delhi, India	\$3.71 (notice that the closer to the source, the cheaper the price is)
Sidney, Australia	\$3.42
Johannesburg, South Africa	\$3.39
Mexico City, Mexico	\$2.22 (lets you know where Mexico's oil is going, doesn't it?)
Buenos Aires, Argentina	\$2.09 (also taking care of their own first, aren't they?)
Riyadh, Saudi Arabia	\$0.91 (now you can plainly see how bad we are being gouged!)
Kuwait	\$0.78 (remember that place that Saddam tried to blow up in 1991 during the Gulf War and we protected? Thanks a lot, guys!)

Caracas, Venezuela \$0.12 (are you kidding me??? The heck with the Middle East! Let's invade **them!**)

You can see the huge disparity in prices. You can also see that the cost of fuel is directly proportional to how far that fuel has to be shipped before it is refined and distributed. And you can also clearly see the **huge** gouging we are receiving at the hands of the Arab world. All of this money is flowing directly into **their** pockets and the pockets of the most of the US petroleum companies. And that money is being squandered by the Arabs, who have absolutely no common sense about building up a stable economic infrastructure for when their little bag of goodies runs out. And it will run out. We are already projecting severe oil shortages by 2050. I have it by good authority that there have already been four individuals who perfected an engine that could run on water. Three of them were murdered mysteriously, and the fourth is hiding in the 3rd World. I have seen the prospectus on his internal combustion engine, and, folks, it works! If we could switch to water for fuel, it would wreck the world economy and probably plunge us into the 3rd World War (gee, that's what we're talking about anyway, isn't it???) But the world economy that would arise from the ashes, assuming that some of humanity survived with their knowledge of this technology intact, would be totally set free from Arab dominion, or, for that matter, the dominion of anyone else. Unlimited energy would allow us to solve the vast majority of the world's problems with inequality, both political and economic. I have another book in print entitled *How to Survive the Coming Crash* which outlines many of these economic factors and how they contribute to the political stability or instability of the various nations of the world.

One final note before we get back on track. I want to be fair to the oil companies. Right. Sure. No, seriously, there are some oil companies which take **none** of their oil from the Middle East. Don't believe it? Well, at the same time that I received the email outlining the prices of gasoline worldwide, I received another email outlining which oil companies were taking their resources from the Muslim world, and how badly the Arabs had their hooks into them. Here, without any doctoring, is a clear record of **who is owned and operated by the very people who despise and hate us with a passion.**

Shell	205,742,000 barrels
Chevron/Texaco	144,332,000 barrels
Exxon /Mobil	130,082,000 barrels
Marathon/Speedway	117,740,000 barrels
Amoco	62,231,000 barrels

Citgo Gas comes from South America, from a Dictator who hates Americans. I think if you check the prices above, you can figure out who we are talking about.

If you add all of those numbers up, these imports amount to the staggering total of over **660 million barrels of crude oil!** Multiply that quantity by **\$100.00** a barrel and you will find that the very people who hate us and want us dead are pocketing the staggering sum of **66 BILLION DOLLARS of OUR money each and every year!** And you wonder where the terrorist organizations get their pocket change and how the Arabs can afford to recreate Alaska in the middle of the desert? Think again. **We** are giving them that money! **We are paying them for the privilege of trying to kill us!** All because our leaders and our country lack the moral fiber to tell the Arabs and their oil to go crawl back underground where they came from and never come out again! There, is that nice enough for those among you who are faint of heart? You were afraid that I was going to say something else referencing another place underground, weren't you??? Truthfully, they deserve it. And so do we. Since the very first oil embargo in 1973, our dependence on Arab oil has not **decreased**, but rather **increased!** Dear friends, **what is wrong with that picture???**

Now comes the other side of the coin. There are a good number of oil companies who don't buy **one penny** of their oil from the Arabs. Here they are.

Sunoco	0 barrels
Conoco	0 barrels

Sinclair	0 barrels
BP/Phillips	0 barrels
Hess	0 barrels
ARCO	0 barrels

All this information is available from the Department of Energy. Now, you don't have to be a rocket scientist to figure out that if we really wanted to bust the Arabs in the chops, all we would have to do is **stop buying our gas from companies that are tied to them**. If this effort went worldwide, we could drop the Middle East sheiks to their economic knees. We would also effectively put an end to world terrorism. Why? Because all of these lunatics need **money** in order to stock, arm and train their men. Where exactly do you think they get their money from? Duh! It's just like the Mafia. Every tin-horn, two-bit terrorist organization pays periodic visits to Saudi Arabia, Kuwait and the Arab Emirates and does their little shake-down routine. "*Support our noble cause, Allah be praised,*" they say, "*and we will ensure that no wicked men attempt to blow up your oil fields!*" Well, **double duh!** If they don't have any money, they can't pay any protection money. Saudi Arabia is the absolute worst at this. The corrupt Saudi administration is propped up on bribe and payoff money. That's the only way that they can stay in power in that unstable region. Political power goes to the highest bidder. In the meanwhile, the Saudi's are busy plowing their profits into such things as giant super-air-conditioned buildings right in the middle of the desert where the rich and famous among them can go **snow skiing!** I've seen extensive pictures of these buildings, both inside and out. Yes, they keep this winter wonderland of theirs going 24x7, 365 days a year. Can you imagine the cost of running something like that? Snowmen don't come cheap in 120 degree temperatures.

One final note, and then we'll move back to topic. Special thanks go to our dear friends Mildred Oakley of Florida and Vicki Black of Ohio for the information I have just given you. Mildred is a precious retired Black lady and Vicki is a White suburban editor and free-lance publisher. Mildred sends me tons of good stuff all the time. Little does she know how much ends up in these books sooner or later. And Vicki was the driving force behind our very first book being published. Vicki works for a micro-publisher in the Cincinnati area where we live. It was divine timing that this information came when it did, and helped me to connect the "dominion" statement about the Leopard to the oil industry that thrives in that part of the world. I guess that's a triple duh on my part, but a God bless you and thank you to my two special ladies, who are miles apart physically but one in the Spirit. Now, back to that mean ole monster!

That left me with only one "critter" to figure out. Although this monster is different from all the rest according to Daniel, there were still some clues to follow. The fact that it had **iron teeth** was reminiscent of the old Roman Empire, which is also linked to the two **iron legs** of Daniel's statue. That much I'll concede. The fact that it had **ten horns** also clearly indicated that **ten nations or heads of state** would be involved in the empire. It would be even more brutal and terrifying that the Muslim Leopard. It would devour all the nations around it, and trample their people into the ground. Most Bible scholars see this as one of two things: Either the **Roman Empire** of times past or the **Anti-Christ's Empire** of times future. Since we have established the chronological location of all the other empires, these symbols cannot primarily point to past events, but must rather point to events in the not-too-distant-future. Daniel doesn't just provide us with these details, however. There is more of the story to be told.

⁸ I was **considering the horns**, and there was **another horn**, a little one, coming up among them, **before whom three of the first horns were plucked out by the roots**. And there, in this horn, were **eyes like the eyes of a man**, and **a mouth speaking pompous words**. ⁹ I watched till **thrones were put in place**, and the **Ancient of Days** was seated; His garment was **white as snow**, and the **hair of His head was like pure wool**. His throne was a fiery flame, its wheels a burning fire; ¹⁰ A fiery stream issued and came forth from before Him. A thousand thousands ministered to Him; **ten thousand times ten thousand** stood before Him. The court was seated, and the books were opened. ¹¹ I watched then because of the sound of the pompous words which the horn was speaking; I watched till **the beast was slain**, and its body destroyed and given to the burning flame. ¹² As for **the rest of the beasts**, they had their **dominion taken away**, yet their **lives were prolonged** for a season and a time. ¹³ I was watching in the night visions, and behold, **One like the Son of Man**, coming with the

clouds of heaven! **He came to the Ancient of Days**, and they brought Him near before Him. ¹⁴ Then to Him was given **dominion and glory and a kingdom**, that all peoples, nations, and languages should serve Him. His dominion is an **everlasting dominion**, which shall not pass away, and His kingdom the one which shall not be destroyed." – Daniel 7:9-14

As Daniel was looking at the **ten horns** or nations, one of the horns, a little one, rose up. It had **eyes like a man** and a **mouth speaking pompous things**. Clearly this is referring to a leader in one of the ten nations who has great oratorical abilities, not unlike Adolph Hitler. It was said of Hitler that he had a mesmerizing effect on the crowds that listened to him, and that he could induce them to do nearly anything. Based on the monstrosities committed by the Nazis, he had to have been a very eloquent man. It would also appear that after he rises to power within his own country, he will gain control of **two other surrounding nations**, thus giving him a **three-nation confederacy**. This will in turn expand into the **ten-nation empire** which will gain control of the whole world. As I have documented in great detail in *Episode Four – The Crucified Bride*, I firmly feel that the initial nation out of which the Anti-Christ arises will be **Austria**. Austria is responsible for birth the men who started the last two World Wars, and currently has as one of its major leaders a man named **Georg Haider**, an admirer of Hitler, a staunch neo-Nazi, and a violently anti-Semitic. He is my current candidate for the unenviable title of Anti-Christ.

Despite all the bad news, there is still some good news to be had. We do win, after all, although not by our own devices. After the time in which the Anti-Christ has dominion over the world, the Lord will personally intervene. The ten nation empire will be struck, and its **body destroyed**. I don't even want to think about the level of devastation, probably atomic, which will be wreaked on that 10-nation confederacy that casts its lot with that most evil of all men. As for the other empires, it says that they are allowed to retain their sovereignty but lose their power and influence, probably for the duration of the 1,000 year reign of Christ. It's fascinating to think that there might still be a United States of America during the Millennial Reign, but not unreasonable. Even though the world will be administered both politically and spiritually from Jerusalem, there will still have to be national, regional and local centers for that administration, and Isaiah clearly says that the **nations** will come to Jerusalem to worship and to receive administration and instruction.

Even though we technically have already arrived at the point in the dream where the good guys win, we aren't quite done with that fourth beast just yet. Some additional details are given about him later on during the dream that we need to know about.

" ¹⁹ Then I wished to know the truth about the **fourth beast**, which was **different from all the others**, exceedingly dreadful, with its **teeth of iron** and its **nails of bronze**, which devoured, broke in pieces, and trampled the residue with its feet; ²⁰ and the **ten horns that were on its head**, and the **other horn** which came up, **before which three fell**, namely, that horn which had eyes and a mouth which spoke pompous words, whose appearance was greater than his fellows. ²¹ I was watching; **and the same horn was making war against the saints, and prevailing against them**, ²² until the **Ancient of Days** came, and a judgment was made in favor of the saints of the Most High, and **the time came for the saints to possess the kingdom**. ²³ Thus he said: ' The fourth beast shall be a fourth kingdom on earth, which shall be **different from all other kingdoms**, and shall **devour the whole earth, trample it and break it in pieces**. ²⁴ The **ten horns** are **ten kings** who **shall arise from this kingdom**. And another shall rise after them; **he shall be different** from the first ones, and **shall subdue three kings**. ²⁵ He shall **speak pompous words against the Most High**, shall **persecute the saints of the Most High**, and shall **intend to change times and law**. Then the saints shall be given into his hand for a **time and times and half a time**. ²⁶ But the court shall be seated, and they shall take away his dominion, to consume and destroy it forever. ²⁷ Then the kingdom and dominion, and the greatness of the kingdoms under the whole heaven, shall be given to the people, the saints of the Most High. His kingdom is an everlasting kingdom, and all dominions shall serve and obey Him.' ²⁸ This is the end of the account. As for me, Daniel, my thoughts greatly troubled me, and my countenance changed; but I kept the matter in my heart." – Daniel 7:19-28

In this second narrative about the fourth beast, we find some additional things about him that we didn't know about in the first part of the dream. We already knew that this world empire would be **different**

from any other world empire ever. We also knew that it had **teeth of iron**, reminiscent of the Roman Empire. But we didn't know that it had **nails of bronze**, harkening back all the way to Alexander the Great and the Hellenic Empire of the Greeks. These references to iron and bronze imply several things about this empire. First, it will have the military strength of Imperial Rome, along with its remarkable ability to move legions wherever the need arose. It will become very difficult to fight against the Anti-Christ. America will unfortunately be subjugated for a period of time, and will be shattered into multiple regions, just as in the Kris Kristofferson TV miniseries, *Amerika*. The bronze claws of Macedonia also tell us something about this world empire. It will, just as Alexander the Great and his four successor generals did, attempt to impose a **single world culture and religion** upon the peoples of the world. And it will darn near totally achieve that goal. Christians will, of course, be beheaded for their faith if they do not convert to the religion worshipping the Beast. Jews will eventually have to go into hiding to avoid the same fate, and, as I have pointed out in an earlier article, it will be the re-united States of America that will provide the military impetus to accomplish this. We also now know clearly that initially **three of the nations will fall before the Anti-Christ**. It's important to remember that the Anti-Christ doesn't appear to be the Anti-Christ at first. At first, he is just an eloquent and persuasive leader who just happens to gain control over a few like-minded nations around him. These three nations, in my opinion, can only be **Germany, Austria** and the **German-speaking part of Russia**, which will lobby for and receive its freedom. In fact, it is not impossible that **Russia itself** or the **Ukraine** is the third party to join in, given that there are great many Germans living in both areas. It's not really clear whether this first merger is military or diplomatic in nature. I suspect that it is diplomatic, just as with Hitler, who gained most of his objectives at first by skillful manipulation of the political situations in the countries involved. People were willing to grant him dominion and control over themselves if he could just provide them with peace, order and prosperity in return.

One thing will be very clear about this man, though. He will be **violently Anti-Semitic**. His stance regarding the church will probably be neutral at first. Hitler was nominally a Christian and legitimately thought that he was doing the will of God, just like the Muslim world does today. Sure, lady! God really wants you to send your 12-year-old only son off to blow himself up with a suicide bomb strapped to his chest! Something is seriously, deadly wrong with people who can think like that. And when those thought patterns are attached to a religion, then there is something deadly wrong with that religion, too.

Once the three nations are under his belt, he will quickly move to consolidate his core empire into the expanded format of ten. I discussed at great length in Episode Four who those ten nations probably are. Most of them are exact matches, based on the Scripture references. A few are maybes. The ten nations will be broken out into two sets of five each. Five of the nations will be European, and will originate from the Western, Roman Catholic leg of Daniel's Statue. The other five will be Middle Eastern, originating from the Eastern, Byzantine Greek Orthodox / Muslim leg of the statue. It will be a bizarre combination of nations normally violently opposed to one another. Their common bonds will be a blind adoration for the man they truly think is the savior of the world and a shared hatred for the real people of God, the Jews. We will come back to the topic of who these nations are in an *E-Pistle* coming up shortly, so I don't want to steal that article's thunder. Suffice it to say that you will be shocked and ashamed when you finally find out who this murder's row of ten nations is.

Once the ten nations are firmly entrenched in his camp, the rest of the world will quickly fall into line. Doubtless there will be some military resistance at first, but as his power grows, the entire world will be convinced that he is unstoppable. The funny thing about him is that world domination is only a secondary issue to him. This world is only part of his battle plan. Energized by the chief prince of demons himself, his long-range goal is to secure this planet so that he can mount one final assault on heaven itself. He tried this once before and failed. It has galled him ever since, and he is not the kind of person to let go of an offence, real or imagined. Think of a very powerful, very cruel gang lord. Then multiply that mindset by a million and you have Satan. Having gained control of the planet, he will launch an attack against the one nation that still inexplicably stands in his way, Israel. After having been stymied for 3½ years by the Two Witnesses, he will finally be able to rage against the Lord from Jerusalem, and will have control over the nation for the final, horrible 3½ years of his unholy reign.

There is more to this story, but it will have to wait until tomorrow, because the Scriptures we need to complete the puzzle are not here in Daniel, but rather in our jumping off point in Revelation 13. There is one minor side trip that we need to make today, however. In Revelation Chapter 1 we are introduced to Jesus as He appears now. Brother, He sure doesn't look like He used to! Before, He was just the Son of Man, limited and strapped by His human earthsuit. Those restrictions don't bother Him any more, now that He is comfortably housed in the first and at the moment only resurrection body in existence. That will change when the dead in Christ rise and we join them in the air, all possessors of the same kind of body that right now only He has. And when we first meet Him again in Revelation, we think that maybe something strange has happened. His hair is now white, glowing with a level of energy that we simply can't begin to understand. But if we look back at Daniel 7, we get to meet His Heavenly Father, and we find, much to our amazement, that Father and Son look very much alike. In Daniel, the Father is referred to as **the Ancient of Days**. When we meet Him in verse 9, we find that His garment is **white as snow**, and that the color of His hair is **pure white**, as pure as the whitest wool. I have some Black friends who mistakenly believe that this reference to hair like "wool" makes Him a "brother", but we aren't talking about the **texture** of His hair, we are talking about the **color** of His hair. How do I know that? By simply comparing Scripture to Scripture, as found in Revelation Chapter 1 when we get to meet His Boy.

*"¹² Then I turned to see the voice that spoke with me. And having turned I saw seven golden lampstands, ¹³ and in the midst of the seven lampstands One like **the Son of Man**, clothed with a garment down to the feet and girded about the chest with a golden band. ¹⁴ **His head and hair were white like wool, as white as snow**, and His **eyes like a flame of fire**; ¹⁵ His **feet were like fine brass**, as if refined in a furnace, and His **voice as the sound of many waters**; ¹⁶ He had in His right hand seven stars, out of His mouth went a sharp two-edged sword, and His **countenance was like the sun shining in its strength.**"* – Revelation 1:12-16

Like Father, like Son, I always say! Jesus in His full resurrection glory has exactly the same kind of hair as his Father does in Daniel 7. How do I know that the Ancient of Days isn't Jesus Himself, and that we're really just looking at the same person in both Scripture passages? Simple. If we turn back to Daniel 7 quickly and read just a bit further, we find Jesus Himself making a guest appearance.

*"¹³ I was watching in the night visions, and behold, **One like the Son of Man**, coming with the clouds of heaven! **He came to the Ancient of Days**, and they brought Him near before Him. ¹⁴ Then to Him was given **dominion and glory and a kingdom**, that all peoples, nations, and languages should serve Him. His dominion is an **everlasting dominion**, which shall not pass away, and His kingdom the one which shall not be destroyed."* – Daniel 7:9-14

There we have it! The only Scripture reference I know of in which **two of the three persons in the Trinity are present at the same time!** The Father is there. He is **the Ancient of Days**. But the Son is there too. He is called what He called Himself all during His earthly ministry, **the Son of Man**. I did a quick study on those two terms; the **Son of Man** and the **Son of God**. It turns out that of all the times that Jesus referred to Himself in the Gospels, He referred to Himself as the **Son of Man every single time except for three occurrences in the Gospel of John**, late in His ministry when His identity had finally been fully revealed and there was no longer any use playing stupid games with the Scribes and Pharisees. They had been trying to trap Him all along, trying to trick Him into saying that He was the Son of God. Even though they claimed that they were eagerly awaiting their cherished Messiah, they were nonetheless perfectly willing to kill anyone who had the audacity to say that he really **was** the Messiah! In Jewish law, it was tantamount to perjury to testify on behalf of one's own self. This is why Jesus and John the Baptist continually did a kind of tag-team effort, with John firmly bearing witness to Jesus but refusing to bear witness to who he really was, and Jesus steadfastly bearing witness to John the Baptist as Elijah who was to come, but steadfastly referring to Himself as the Son of Man rather than as the Son of God. Had He openly said that He was God's own son, the Pharisees would have ripped Him to shreds for committing blasphemy. How bizarre! This is why Jesus finally went off on them so badly in Matthew Chapter 13, when He issued the deadly **8 Woes**, which effectively stripped Israel of its special assignment as a chosen people of God and transferred that title and position over to the Gentiles who would believe in His Name.

On another subject, I was fortunate enough many years ago to receive a significant insight into the fact that His **voice** has the sound of **many waters**. For many years that analogy made no sense to me. Then, one day as I was reading a book by Billy Graham, the interpretation was given to me by that great man of God. He said that while he was in India on an evangelistic crusade one of the services was held in a large soccer stadium. The stadium was filled to capacity with Indian believers. Once he was on the stage, a large chest was brought to him. When he inquired as to what was in it, he was told that it contained untold thousands of prayer requests, written down by the faithful Indian believers. They viewed him as a mighty man of God and asked him to pray for the thousands of slips of paper. Rev. Graham declined to pray for it personally, but instead volunteered the idea that **everyone there** pray for the needs all at one time. Everyone agreed, and Rev. Graham led the entire coliseum in prayer. In most Western culture churches, when we say we are going to pray, it normally means that one person prays and everyone else keeps quiet and listens. Not so in the 3rd World. As Rev. Graham began to pray, the entire coliseum began to pray with him **out loud**. The combined sound startled Rev. Graham, because it sounded to him like a **waterfall**, or the **sound of many waters**. When Christ speaks in His full divinity, He is speaking with every voice that has ever proclaimed the Gospel down through the ages, and so all of those voices combined together sound just like the mighty Niagara Falls, a thunderous roar that drowns all other sounds out. How cool! How awesome! How overwhelming! It is also significant to note that although Billy Graham has never claimed to have a healing ministry, thousands of miracles and healings were reported as a result of that collective prayer. We have not yet fully understood our power as the body of Christ. There is such enormous power in the prayer of agreement, and we have not yet fully understood or tapped into what Christ has given us. Just this past weekend, an event called *The Call* came to Cincinnati. It gathered 20,000 believers in a single stadium for prayer, fasting, intercession and a call back to repentance and godly living. Members of our church who attended the event said that the power of God was so tangible in the meeting that the hair on their arms stood straight up when they walked into the building. I wonder what would happen if a minister would have had the guts to direct such a gathering to pray in unity and unison for the healing of a particular individual? Most pastors shy away from such a task for fear of the individual not being healed, and the possible discouragement and backlash that might happen. I say, "*What have we got to lose?*" The individual was sick when they came there. If we pray as one man, the probability of them being healed increases dramatically. If we do nothing, they will definitely leave the building unhealed. And perhaps even if we do pray, nothing will happen. But we are supposed to walk by faith, not by sight, and certainly not by fear or unbelief. Most of the miracles I have seen in my ministry occurred because I said, "*What the heck! Let's go for it!*", and started to pray. When you take the walker away from a woman and command her to walk to you, it takes a little courage. When you pray for a girl who has never spoken a word in her life and has no tongue in her mouth and command her to say, "*Momma*", you are effectively walking on water. You are treading on a substance called faith that cannot be seen. Only the results can. But faint heart ne'er won fair maiden, and God is still scanning this planet waiting for someone on whose behalf He can show Himself strong!

But there still remains one unsolved puzzle. Why in the world is their hair **white**? It almost seems to imply that they are old, and we know that this could not be true of the resurrection body of Christ. For years I struggled with that issue. And then one day my wife inadvertently solved the mystery for me. We were walking down the hallway in our home, me leading the way and she trailing behind me. For some reason I stopped to turn and say something to her. As I spoke, she, too, stopped to answer my question. And then as I looked up, I was blinded momentarily by **her hair!** Beverly has beautiful blonde hair anyway, so it is a light color. But at the angle she was standing, the ceiling light of the hallway was directly in the line of sight behind her head. And so, as I looked at her hair, it seemed to be **radiating light**, literally glowing. And it looked for just a moment as if she had **white hair**. Now in her case, that light was radiating out from **behind** her. But in the case of the Father and the Son, that light will be emitted from **within** them. Every pore of their bodies will glow with an unearthly splendor. And, based on the Revelation narrative, the glory seems to be greatest around the head, gradually diminishing as you move downward toward the feet. Jesus' feet only look like bronze, but His **eyes are like fire** and His face is like **looking straight into the sun**. When I was a young boy, I was walking home when a classmate dared me to look into the sun all the way home. Being young and stupid, I took his dare. I looked straight into the sun all the while as I walked home. At first, it was blinding. Gradually, my eyes adjusted as best they could and I was able to look at the sun a little more

directly. Trying to look into the earthly glory of the mid-range star that lights and heats our world is hard enough. Later on, when I was 16, I had an incredible experience with the Lord which I have alluded to elsewhere. There is one aspect of that meeting that I have not shared up until now. When the Lord came into that old country church and showed us His glory, the previously darkened sanctuary suddenly lit up like a Roman candle. But the light wasn't really coming from any given direction. Normally, we can determine a source for lighting. Only with indirect lighting do we modify that effect, and then not totally. But in this case, the light wasn't come from anywhere. **The air itself literally glowed and emitted light.** I had never seen anything like it, nor have I ever seen anything like it since. The Father's hair is white like wool because His glory is pouring out of it. The Son is the same way. If Jesus were to deliberately damp down his glory so that He can appear fully human again, as he often does in visions, His hair would once again appear as a dark brown color, just as it did so many thousands of years ago. But when He turns up the power again, His hair takes on the appearance of being white. And to think that you and I will someday possess the same kind of body as He does. Incredible. The Bible says that we don't yet know what we will look like, but we will be like Him, for we shall see Him as He really is!

I know by faith that I will be there on that momentous day when the Father, the Ancient of Days, transfers control of the kingdom over to His Son, the Son of Man and Son of God. Oh, what a glorious moment that will be! Imagine the splendor and power that will be displayed! And imagine what we, as believers in the Lord Jesus Christ, will look like! Surrounded by His glory, what will my heart feel? Will I dance before You, Jesus, or in awe of Him be still? I only know that I can't wait for that Day to come. Even so, Maranatha! Lord Jesus, come quickly!

Day 27 ~ Strange Critter, Strange Bedfellows



¹ Then I stood on the sand of the sea. And I saw a beast rising up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, and on his horns ten crowns, and on his heads a blasphemous name. ² Now the beast which I saw was like a leopard, his feet were like *the feet of a bear*, and his mouth like the mouth of a lion. The dragon gave him his power, his throne, and great authority.
~ Revelation 13:1-2

In our last *E-Pistle* we began to examine the strange and bizarre **Beast from the Sea** in Revelation chapter 13. To understand the “roots” of this creature, we had to go back to Daniel chapter 7 to understand what each of the different beasts in his dream represented. Remember how I said that things in the Bible and particularly in Revelation are linked by **symbol** and **phrase** to other passages in the Bible that supply the meaning and interpretation of the referring passage? This is a classic example of this principle. **If you get the meaning of the root symbols wrong, your interpretation of the whole passage will be wrong.** It is a long-standing principle in logical debating that if your **premise** or foundational statement is wrong, then, no matter how brilliant your logic is from that point on, no matter how compelling your arguments are, **you are wrong!** This is always the inherent flaw with every cult. They have to get you to **buy into the lie**. Once you buy into their initial statement of doctrine, everything else will be logically and often brilliantly laid out. The problem with all of that is that it is based on false assumptions. That’s why you have to know the Word of God for yourself. We have entered into an age in which simply taking what your pastor or the TV preacher or Grandma Ettie said is simply not enough. They may have been acting from a position based in ignorance of the Holy Book. You need to know for yourself. The old Blood, Sweat and Tears song goes like this: *“Momma may have, poppa may have, but **God bless the child that’s got its own**”*. Never have truer words been spoken!

Now, however, having carefully and logically looked at our base assumptions regarding the various components of this strange beast, it is safe for us to proceed in analyzing the national composition of the Empire of the Anti-Christ. We already know that this creature will come **out of the sea of humanity**, have **seven heads or national leaders**, and **ten horns and ten crowns representing ten nations and titles**. This creates a few mathematical problems when you do the math provided us in Daniel. Daniel tells us that a **little horn** will arise in the midst of **three other horns** and **uproot them**. In so doing, three former leaders of countries will be deposed by the Anti-Christ as he begins his slow rise to ultimate power as ruler of the whole world. If **one** ruler deposes **three** other rulers that still leaves **seven countries** that still retain their normal leadership. Adding the **three-nation confederacy** into the mix ends up giving us **eight rulers of ten countries**. That implies that **two other countries in the empire will be ruled by a single ruler** prior to the Anti-Christ’s takeover. If you had trouble following my logic, just take out a piece of paper and draw ten circles representing the ten nations. Put an “H” in the middle of each circle, representing the Horn or leader of that country. Then just scratch out two of the “H”es and count. You’ll see that the consolidation of three countries under the leadership of one person still leaves eight leaders. It is puzzling to me why the Bible doesn’t mention this fact or account for the difference. It’s equally puzzling to me why I’ve never heard anyone teach on or even mention this fairly obvious fact. Oh, well! You heard it here first!

There is one more way to interpret the passage, and it never even occurred to me until I was doing the final proofing on the book. Perhaps the one little horn overthrowing the three other horns actually means that the Anti-Christ will have control of **one** country, and then gain control of **three additional**

countries, giving him an initial tally of **four**, not **three**. If that is the correct interpretation, then there is no need for any of the other six countries to have a shared ruler. Either way, if you are still stuck on this planet at that time, you had better head for the hills when you see that coalition come together. Once the Anti-Christ has successfully assembled his secular power base, there will be nothing stopping him from achieving world dominion.

In yesterday's article, I alluded to the fact that I would share with you the composition of this ten nation empire, and who I am firmly convinced will be in the empire, based on the strange composite creature that we see mentioned in our keynote Scripture above. Remember that in Daniel's dream we identified the **Lion as England**, the **Eagle's Wings as America**, the **Bear as Russia** and the **Leopard as a 4-nation Pan-Arabic Union consisting of Iran, Iraq, Syria and Saudi Arabia**. If you add them up, it means that we now know the identities of **6 of the 10 nations** in the dominion of the Anti-Christ. Missing from this unholy union is our very own United States of America. We are absent for at least two good reasons. The first is that we will be the only nation in the world not to abandon Israel in its time of greatest need. How do I know that? Because in Revelation Chapter 12 the woman, representative of Israel, is given the **two wings of an eagle** in order to escape from the Dragon. Take a close look at our historic involvement with Israel and the key position our nation played during the administration of the much maligned but very courageous **Harry Truman** in establishing Israel in 1948. In addition, under the equally maligned but divinely mandated administration of **Richard Nixon**, we were the only nation to stand up and help Israel when Syria and Egypt launched a combined offensive during the Yom Kippur war of 1973. Time and time again, the United States has been Israel's only ally. Now, there may come a time in the near future under an ungodly administration when the US temporarily turns its back on the Jews. I see this coming, and I know with dread in my heart that it bodes ill for the US. The Lord has shown me prophetically that at some time in the near future **America will be struck and divided into four parts**. Somehow we will overcome this, rally ourselves, and rise in defense of God's people one final time. So, as far as the Anti-Christ is concerned, count us out of the picture. I thank God that we will not be active participants in this abomination. We will, however, be conquered by the Anti-Christ and made to submit to his dominion for a period of time, because the Bible says that the whole world will worship him and submit to him. It may very well be that we insanely submit to him voluntarily. A vision which I had less than a year ago clearly showed me this. I have shared this vision with our readers in Episode Four in an article called *The Lying Leopard*. I also went into great depth regarding the sequencing and coordinating of Daniel's dreams in an article in the same episode called *Ten Toes to Go, Please!* I know that's its lousy marketing to make you buy one book to understand another, but I see no other way to handle it. It was necessary to take a close look at Daniel's prophecies in order to understand the positioning of the Anti-Christ in relationship to the Rapture. Be that as it may, this assignment and alignment of nations produces a very strange picture indeed. In looking at the remaining six nations, it certainly appears that they make strange bedfellows, just as the title of this article hints. The four Arabic, Middle East nations all logically belong together. And Russia has long helped various countries in the Middle East because of its ongoing need for oil. But the inclusion of **Great Britain** into the mix is a troubling thought. Except for the initial period of time when the colonies first broke loose from England during the Revolutionary War and then the "coming of age" war in which a teenage America fought with his father, Great Britain, in the War of 1812, America and England have been inseparable allies. We have come to the rescue of our parent at least twice, in both World Wars. England has stood by us as our staunchest ally in subsequent conflicts such as Korea, Vietnam, the Gulf War and even in our most recent ill-timed invasion of Iraq, when no one else was in agreement with us but them. I have to add some thoughts to this article about that matter. In 1991, when Saddam Hussein displayed his complete insanity and megalomania by turning on his own Arab allies and invading Kuwait, the whole world united against him and with us. Even the Arab world itself knew that this mad dog had to be curbed and leashed. When we entered the Gulf War under the excellent leadership of "Stormin' Norman" Schwarzkopf, we had all of Europe sharing the military burden with us in some fashion or another. Russia had already made it clear that it would not intervene. As Saddam destroyed and burned the oil fields of Kuwait, the whole world was literally pleading with us to play the role of Global Policeman and stop this criminal. Our whole world is hopelessly addicted to oil, and the addiction is increasing, not decreasing. With the rapidly emerging economies of India and China placing an unprecedented demand on the global supply of oil, we are rapidly headed toward yet another confrontation over this black gold. During the Gulf War, despite all the rhetoric of Hussein, the

Iraqi military forces soon proved to be no match for our overwhelmingly superior technology and firepower. We flew one precision strike after another over Baghdad, taking targets out at will, and even showed our actions to the whole world on TV as we did it, being very careful to take out only militarily relevant targets in the process. General Schwarzkopf was only 50 miles away from a defenseless and totally helpless city when George Bush Sr. inexplicably called off the dogs of war and make Schwarzkopf halt the advance of our troops. A peace was negotiated, and we withdrew from the region. Saddam, allowed to escape the certainty of total military defeat, somehow parlayed his narrow escape from destruction as a sign that the allies and American in particular were afraid of him and the "might" of the Iraqi army. The old saying that if you repeat a lie long and loud enough people will begin to believe it was certainly true in this case. Quickly, much of the Arab world began to echo this insanity. Saddam quickly reconsolidated his position in Iraq, and brutally tried to exterminate the Kurds, who had been promised by the US that if they revolted against Hussein that we would stand by them. We betrayed them without feeling a pang of remorse. That left the removal of this lunatic admirer of Josef Stalin up to Bush Jr., who felt morally compelled to finish the job that his father had left undone. Right now it is popular politics to blame all the international woes that we find ourselves in on our current president. Although I am not happy with the performance record of his administration and feel that far too many issues have been left unattended to, I place the blame for the situation in Iraq squarely on the shoulders of his father. **Had George Bush Sr. had the intestinal fortitude and the moral courage to finish Saddam Hussein off when he had the chance and the support of most of the world, his son would not have felt the burden of lifting this stain off his father's record.** Instead, his decisions have stained his own record as president. I feel sorry for him in this regard.

Meanwhile, we still have the mystery of why and how England could possibly turn on us when the Anti-Christ comes to power. The answer is simple: **immigration**. For quite a while now, a steady stream of Muslims have been immigrating into England. Their swelling ranks have been a steady source of concern in England, because the current rate of immigration and childbirth among the Muslims of England and, for that matter, all Europe, will produce a **predominantly Muslim England and Europe** within 50 years or less. Now that the English are no longer walking with God, they no longer have any moral fiber of their own remaining, and have repeatedly capitulated to fundamentalist Shiite demands. Recently, a young girl in England was either disciplined or dismissed from her school because she dared to wear a cross on the outside of her blouse. It didn't matter that all of the Muslim children were allowed to dress according to Sharia law and proudly display symbols of their faith. That type of display was politically correct. Christianity was not. I also found out that schools in the UK are no longer teaching children about the Holocaust because it "*offends*" their Muslim students, who claim that the event never even happened. How long do you think will it take for the Formerly-Great Britain to totally succumb to this kind of "*cleansing*"? And let not the church humor itself that this is not going to happen to America. Only this evening my daughter told me of a situation in Southern Indiana where someone she knew decided for various reasons to allow herself to be placed under the administration and case management of a supposedly neutral social agency. Instead of her case manager being helpful and supportive, she **openly mocked the woman for her Christian faith**. The case manager told our friend that her God obviously had done nothing for her, since she was living in HUD housing while the case manager had no need of God since she had a husband, a nice home, a good job and everything she wanted in life. The case manager additionally refused to allow our friend to put any references to Christianity in her apartment, all the way down to a Christmas tree or even writing the name of Christ on a piece of paper and placing it on a wall. Suffice it to say, a lawsuit has been filed and a court action is currently being pursued. But how in the world can a nation that says, "*In God We Trust*", on our coinage possibly degenerate so badly that even a Christmas tree is now somehow politically incorrect? It will take no small act of God to keep America even a nominally Christian nation.

If we add Iran, Iraq, Syria, Saudi Arabia, Russia, England, Austria and Germany into the mix of the empire of the greatest monster of all time, who is left? What additional nations are probably going to be included in the final ten nations? We only have room for two other candidates, and one of them must be from the Middle East and the other must be from Europe. Why do I say that? Because of Daniel's toes. If we were to go back to Nebuchadnezzar's dream of a statue, we would find **Babylon** as the **Head of Gold**, the **Medes and the Persians** as the **Arms and Chest of Silver**, the **Hellenic**

Empire of Alexander the Great and his successors as the **Loins of Brass**, the **Roman Empire** as the **Legs of Iron**, and **Europe of the Middle Ages to the present** as the **Toes of Iron and Clay**. That interpretation is pretty well agreed upon by most Bible scholars, and I find no reason to quibble. However, we are not concerned with all of the statue. Our concern is limited to the **Legs of Iron** and the **Ten Toes of Iron and Clay**. During much of the Roman Empire's history, it was a united empire. But as time went on, the empire split in two. The **Western, European, Catholic** part of the empire was based in **Rome**. The **Eastern, Middle Eastern, Orthodox** part of the empire was based in **Constantinople**. When scholars discuss the 10-nation confederacy of the End Times, they generally link the **10 nations or horns of the beast** with the **ten toes of the statue**. Again, no problem. I agree. But then they proceed to populate the list of ten exclusively from Europe, arguing incorrectly that the empire of the Anti-Christ is a resurrected Roman Empire. In this matter, they are partially right and partially wrong. Because most of us originate from Europe, we are naturally predisposed and prejudiced in favor of European things. The Middle East somehow never enters into our thoughts as belonging to the Roman Empire. But it clearly did. Had it not, why would Israel, Syria, Egypt and most of the territory formerly belonging to the Persian empire have been included in the empire? We blindly ignore the fact that Jerusalem was under Roman occupation, and Jerusalem is by no means a part of Europe. The simple truth is that the Roman Empire consisted of **two** legs, not one. And those two legs ended in feet that had **five toes each**, not in some bizarre mutation where all ten toes were to be found on one foot, and none on the other. No, dear friends, if the analogy between the ten horns of the beast and the ten toes of the statue is correct, then five of the horns must be in Europe and the other five must be in the Middle East.

Given that, then with eight of the ten nations already identified, we must choose one nation from Europe and one from the Middle East. My nominee for the European candidate is **Italy**, almost totally because of the presence of **Rome** there and the multitudinous, inescapable references to Rome in Revelation as we continue on. My nominee for the Middle Eastern Candidate has surprisingly changed since I wrote Episode Four. Actually, I've had to do some rethinking on the entire Middle East contingent since I had the vision I described earlier. I originally felt that **Iran, Iraq, Syria, Turkey and Libya** were the probably candidates. I included Turkey because it is specifically mentioned in Ezekiel Chapter 38 and is referred to there as **Togarmah**. Libya is also mentioned in the same chapter and is referred to there as **Put**. Frankly, I thought I had the five down pat until I had that very disturbing vision from the Lord, which was confirmed only a few days later. That left me in an awkward position. **I actually had to admit I was wrong about something**. Most "*prophecy experts*" have a really tough time doing this. If you follow their writings carefully, you will find that a good number of them have repeatedly made predictions or "estimates" regarding the return of Christ and other cataclysmic events down through the years. Most of the time, they are wrong. Yet I never see any of them issue an apology. They know that most people have a very short memory span. Only with our politicians do we continually bring up their previous voting records, as if changing their mind or position on an issue is a bad thing. What if they didn't have all the information that they have now? What if they had experiences which made them change their mind? Since, James says that **we all make many mistakes**, I find no shame or embarrassment in admitting that I have had to reconsider my current opinion about the Middle Eastern Five based on the vision that I had. Since we who teach shall be judged with greater strictness, I also find it to be basically dishonest when "*experts*" won't own up to their failures. Folks, **if I miss it, I'm going to tell you so!** It is this stubborn refusal to allow oneself to be embarrassed or corrected that is the beginning of apostasy in every religious figure that I have ever studied. I would much rather admit my failure, repent and be forgiven as opposed to try and cover up my mistake and be judged by Christ at the Great White Throne Judgment for lying. And there is **no** doubt about the ultimate destination of all liars. I have no intention of going there. Better to be wrong and repentant. My brain still tells me that Saudi Arabia is going to be a non-player, but the Lord has told me otherwise. That means that either Turkey or Libya must be bumped from our list. Which one? Eenie, meenie, miney, moe... Actually, it's a little more scientific than that. Turkey may or may not actually be the Togarmah of Ezekiel. The actual location of the tribe may be further north in steppes of Asia and be associated with the Mongol horsemen of Genghis and Kublai Khan. I'll have to do a little more research on this matter as time goes on. Frankly, I am continually learning. Just last night I was handed a very interesting little tract which, if verifiable, confirms the prophecy the Lord gave me many years ago about America being broken into four pieces as part of her judgment. All of my books are a work in process, and I'm not ashamed to admit that. If I stop learning, I stop growing.

And I don't ever want to do that. I want revelation on Revelation for me to be a continually unfolding story until the day I die. And then, when I hit heaven, with or without a resurrection body, I know I will learn a great deal more in a real hurry! The pastor of the church that we attend paid me a real left-handed compliment in church today during the announcements. In discussing our currently running *Unrolling the Scroll* seminar at the church, he said, "I never knew that there was so much I didn't know I didn't know about Revelation!" Everyone chuckled, and I felt deeply honored. Yet, when I finally know even as I am known, I will find out that I never knew how much I didn't know I didn't know. I'm just like the rest of us. I'm trying to do the best I can with the light I have while constantly praying for more.

So, does Turkey drop out of the running? For the time being, yes. **Put** is clearly identifiable as **Libya**, and so they must retain their unholy membership. Only time will tell.

After all that thunder and fury, what are we left with? Here's the list:

The Five Toes of the West /	Italy	(Gotta be! Because of Rome)
Rome / "Christian" Foot:	Germany	(The Aryan Iron of the Sons of Japeth)
	Austria	(The last two WW's started there)
	Russia	(Gog Magog, Rosh, Tubal)
	England	(The head of the Lion)

The Five Toes of the East /	Iran (Part of <i>Peras</i> /Persia and the Leopard)
Istanbul / "Muslim" Foot:	Iraq (Part of <i>Peras</i> or Persia with Iran)
	Syria (Israel's most hated neighbor)
	Saudi Arabia (based on the vision I had)
	Libya (Known in Ezekiel as <i>Put</i>)

Might some of this list be wrong? Possibly. Probably. But not by much. I am very certain of my facts about the European five, and fairly certain of my facts on the Middle East. Only time will tell.

We have exhausted our material for the Scripture quote today. I don't want to move on to the fake resurrection of the Anti-Christ until tomorrow. Instead, in keeping with the defense of America and the vision I saw decades ago of her being fractured into four pieces, I present to you a transcribed piece of literature I received just last night entitled *The America George Washington Saw*. It may or may not be real. As I researched the matter, I found opinions on both sides of the issue. Nonetheless, I found none which categorically proved the testimony supposedly given by a former officer of Washington's to be false. I present it to you with a grain of salt. No matter what, it is well worth considering. I have added some commentary of my own into the article. It is, by the way, contained in the Library of Congress, thus lending it some level of credibility.

The America George Washington Saw

NOTE: The following was originally published by Wesley Bradshaw in the *National Review*, Vol. 4, No. 12, December 1880 (and handed down to me by my grandmother).

The last time I ever saw Anthony Sherman was on July 4, 1859, in Independence Square. He was then 99 years old, and becoming very feeble. But though so old, his dimming eyes rekindled as he gazed upon Independence Hall, which he came to visit once more.

"Let us go into the hall," he said. "I want to tell you an incident of Washington's life - one which no one alive knows of except myself; and, if you live, you will before long, see it verified."

"From the opening of the Revolution we experienced all phases of fortune, now good and now ill; one time victorious and another conquered. The darkest period we had, I think, was when Washington, after several reverses, retreated to Valley Forge, where he resolved to spend the winter of 1777. Ah! I have often seen our dear commander's care-worn cheeks, as he would be conversing with a

confidential officer about the condition of his poor soldiers. You have doubtless heard the story of Washington's going to the thicket to pray. Well, it was not only true, but he used often to pray in secret for aid and comfort from God, the interposition of whose Divine Providence brought us safely through the darkest days of tribulation."

"One day, I remember well, the chilly winds whistled through the leafless trees, though the sky was cloudless and the sun shone brightly, he remained in his quarters nearly all the afternoon alone. When he came out, I noticed that his face was a shade paler than usual, and there seemed to be something on his mind of more than ordinary importance. Returning just after dusk, he dispatched an orderly to the quarters of the officer I mention who was presently in attendance. After a preliminary conversation of about half an hour, Washington, gazing upon his companion with that strange look of dignity which he alone could command said to the latter:"

"I do not know whether it is owing to anxiety of my mind, or what, but this afternoon, as I was sitting at this table engaged in preparing a dispatch, something seemed to disturb me. Looking up, I beheld standing opposite me a singularly beautiful female. So astonished was I, for I had given strict orders not to be disturbed, that it was some moments before I found language to inquire the cause of her presence. A second, a third, and even a fourth time did I repeat my question, but received no answer from my mysterious visitor except a slight raising of her eyes."

"Presently I heard a voice saying, 'Son of the Republic, look and learn', while at the same time my visitor extended her arm eastwardly. I now beheld a heavy white vapor at some distance rising fold upon fold. This gradually dissipated, and I looked upon a strange scene. Before me lay spread out in one vast plain all the countries of the world---Europe, Asia, Africa, and America. I saw rolling and tossing, between Europe and America, the billows of the Atlantic, and between Asia and America lay the Pacific."

" 'Son of the Republic,' said the same mysterious voice as before, 'look and learn.' At that moment I beheld a dark, shadowy being, like an angel, standing, or rather floating, in the hollow air, between Europe and America. Dipping water out of the ocean in the hollow of each hand, he sprinkled some upon America with his right hand while with his left hand he cast some on Europe. Immediately a cloud raised from these countries and joined in mid-ocean. For a while it remained stationary, and then moved slowly westward, until it enveloped America in its murky folds. Sharp flashes of lightning gleamed through it at intervals, and **I heard the smothered groans and cries of the American people.**" (This has to be a reference to the Revolutionary War or the War of 1812)

"A second time the angel dipped water from the ocean, and sprinkled it out as before. The dark cloud was then drawn back to the ocean, in whose heaving billows it sank from view. A third time I heard the mysterious voice saying, 'Son of the Republic, look and learn.' I cast my eyes upon America and beheld **villages and towns and cities springing up one after another until the whole land, from the Atlantic to the Pacific, was dotted with them.** Again I heard the mysterious voice say, 'Son of the Republic, the end of the century cometh, look and learn.' " (This is obviously our growth across the face of the North American continent.)

"At this the dark shadowy angel turned his face southward, and **from Africa I saw an ill-omened spectre approach our land.** It flitted slowly over every town and city of the latter. The inhabitants presently set themselves in battle array **against each other.** As I continued looking, I saw a bright angel, on whose brow rested a crown of light, on which was traced the word 'Union', bearing the American flag which he placed between the divided nation, and said, '**Remember ye are brethren.**' Instantly, the inhabitants casting from them their weapons became friends once more, and united around the National Standard." (The evil from Africa is clearly slavery, and this conflict must be the Civil War)

"And again I heard the mysterious voice saying, 'Son of the Republic, look and learn.' At this, the dark, shadowy angel placed a trumpet to his mouth and blew **three distinct blasts**; and taking water from the ocean, he sprinkled it upon **Europe, Asia, and Africa.** Then my eyes beheld a fearful scene. From each of these countries arose thick, black clouds **that were soon joined into one.** And throughout

this mass, there gleamed a dark red light by which I saw hordes of armed men, who, moving with the cloud, **marched by land and sailed by sea to America**, which country was enveloped in the volume of cloud. And **I dimly saw these vast armies devastate the whole country, and burn the villages, towns and cities that I beheld springing up.**" (The three blasts on the trumpet represent three World Wars, the two which have already occurred, and the Third which has not happened just yet. Also notice the successful invasion and subjection of America by a combined foreign power which I interpret to be the armies of the Anti-Christ.)

"As my ears listened to the thundering of the cannon, clashing of swords, and the shouts and cries of millions in mortal combat. I again heard the mysterious voice saying, 'Son of the Republic, look and learn'. When the voice had ceased, the dark shadowy angel placed his trumpet once more to his mouth, and blew **a long and fearful blast.**" (This fourth blast must be the Final Trump referred to by both Jesus and Paul)

"Instantly a light as of a thousand suns shone down from above me, and pierced and broke into fragments the dark cloud which enveloped America. At the same moment the angel upon whose head still shone the word 'Union', and who bore our national flag in one hand and a sword in the other, descended from the heavens **attended by legions of white spirits.** These immediately joined the inhabitants of America, who I perceived were **well-nigh overcome**, but who immediately taking courage again closed up their broken ranks and renewed the battle. Again, amid the fearful noise of the conflict, I heard the mysterious voice saying, 'Son of the Republic, look and learn.' "

"As the voice ceased, the shadowy angel for the last time dipped water from the ocean and sprinkled it upon America. Instantly the dark cloud rolled back, together with the armies it had brought, **leaving the inhabitants of the land victorious.** (This would reunify the shattered United States and put us into a position to use our remaining military might against the Anti-Christ and to rescue the remnant of Israel in Revelation 12)

"Then once more I beheld the villages, towns and cities, springing up where I had seen them before, while the bright angel, plating the azure standard he had brought in the midst of them, cried with a loud voice: '**While the stars remain, and the heavens send down dew upon the earth, so long shall the Union last.**' And taking from his brow the crown on which was blazoned the word 'Union', he placed it upon the Standard, while the people, kneeling down, said 'Amen'." (Remember me mentioning that the nations would remain in place with identifiable boundaries during the Millennial Reign? This seems to support that idea)

"The scene instantly began to fade and dissolve, and I at last saw nothing but the rising, curling vapor I at first beheld. This also disappearing, I found myself once more gazing upon the mysterious visitor, who in the same voice I had heard before, said, 'Son of the Republic, what you have seen is thus interpreted. **Three great perils will come upon the Republic. The most fearful is the third.**' "

"(The comment on his word 'third' is: The help against the THIRD peril comes in the shape of Divine assistance; passing which, the whole world united shall not prevail against her. Let every child of the Republic learn to live for his God, his land and Union.)"

"With these words the vision vanished, and I started from my seat and felt that I had seen a vision wherein had been shown me the birth, progress, and destiny of the UNITED STATES."

"Such, my friends," concluded the venerable narrator, "were the words I heard from Washington's own lips, and America will do well to profit by them."

Pretty interesting, huh? The jury is still out for me regarding the authenticity of the story, but it is well worth considering. That concludes our discussion for today. Come back tomorrow, when we examine the ultimate **Cheap Imitations** of the Real Thing!

Day 28 ~ Cheap Imitations



³ And /saw one of his heads as if it had been mortally wounded, and his deadly wound was healed. And all the world marveled and followed the beast. ⁴ So they worshiped the dragon who gave authority to the beast; and they worshiped the beast, saying, “Who *is* like the beast? Who is able to make war with him?”– Revelation 13:3-4

What??? An **Elvis Imitator**??? I thought this book was all about the End Times? Well, dear friends, that’s true. And in dealing with the Anti-Christ and the False Prophet no symbol could be more appropriate in discussing the subject than an Elvis impersonator. Why? **Because he is pretending to be something that he is not, and never in his wildest dreams, can ever hope to be.** So it is with the Anti-Christ. He isn’t just **against** Jesus. He wants to **replace** Jesus and **take his place.** So also is it with the False Prophet. It isn’t just enough for him to be a false prophet. He wants to take the place of **Elijah/John the Baptist** as the demonic equivalent of the **Messenger of His Coming** (Malachi 3:1, 4:5-6). Both of these men are not the genuine article. They are just **cheap imitations** of the real thing. Let’s look first at the ultimate cheap imitation, the Anti-Christ.

“³ And I saw one of his heads **as if it had been mortally wounded**, and his deadly wound was healed. And all the world marveled and followed the beast. ⁴ So they worshiped the dragon who gave authority to the beast; and they worshiped the beast, saying, ‘Who is like the beast? Who is able to make war with him?’” – Revelation 13:3-4

In comparing Christ to the Anti-Christ, we will find one amazing parallel after another. Notice that the Anti-Christ **appears to be mortally wounded.** Why would that ruse be necessary? Because **he wants to imitate** what Jesus **actually** did upon the cross in removing our sins through the shedding of His precious blood. Isaiah describes better than anyone what was involved in the process in the passage about the **Suffering Servant.**

“¹ Who has believed our report? And to whom has the arm of the LORD been revealed? ² For He shall grow up before Him as a tender plant, and as a root out of dry ground. He has no form or comeliness; and when we see Him, there is no beauty that we should desire Him. ³ He is **despised and rejected by men**, a Man of **sorrows** and **acquainted with grief.** And we hid, as it were, our faces from Him; He was **despised**, and we **did not esteem Him.** ⁴ Surely He has **borne our griefs** and **carried our sorrows**; yet we **esteemed Him stricken, smitten by God, and afflicted.** ⁵ But He was **wounded for our transgressions**, He was **bruised for our iniquities**; the **chastisement for our peace** was upon Him, and **by His stripes** we are healed.” – Isaiah 53:1-5

That’s a pretty grim list, isn’t it? Words like **despised** and **rejected** and **sorrows** and **grief** and **afflicted** and **wounded** and **bruised** and **chastisement** and **stripes** dot the landscape of this most famous passage about the suffering of Christ. Last of all, the Apostles Creed tells us that He was **crucified dead and buried.** Obedient to the Father even unto **death.** Now, to ask a human to die is one thing. The old joke about there being only two sure things, death and taxes, is close to being absolutely correct. Its one thing to ask a being who knows that he is temporary to die. From the moment we are born, we are constantly bombarded with the ugly fact that things die. Our pet hamster dies. Goldie the goldfish dies and has a burial at sea in the bathroom. Our precious little doggie dies

and we are forced to bury our bestest friend ever. I know about that one in particular. I had two dogs that I loved dearly, Ginger and Schnuggles. Ginger was an African Basenji, a strange barkless dog who eventually developed cancer and had to be put to sleep. We were there when the injection was administered. It was swift, and, if death can ever be termed merciful, it was merciful. She let out a single yelp and then collapsed on the vet's table, dead before she hit the surface beneath her. I picked her dead body up in my arms and wept all the way home. I wept as I dug her grave behind the house, underneath a beautiful tree. I wept as I placed her body in the grave, and I wept as I covered it up. My little dog Schnuggles was a beautiful but bizarre blend between a cocker spaniel father and a Scottie mother. She looked like a Scottish terrier in the face, but had the short stocky body of a cocker spaniel. Her tail had been cut short at birth, but she wagged that little stump with all the vigor her body could muster. She never met anyone she didn't like. She was loving and affectionate, yet not uncontrollably so. She could bark when necessary, but was more quiet and reserved. Her intelligence was superior. I can still remember the shocked look on her face when things didn't go as usual. She was a faithful friend and companion. But because of a difficult set of circumstances, I had to give her up for a little while. I entrusted her into the hands of another person, who left her at their cabin alone. When thieves broke into the house, it must have terrified her nearly to death. When the owner of the cabin arrived, Schnuggles was nowhere to be found. I couldn't stand it. I jumped into my old Dodge van and headed for the rural lake where the cabin was located. I had no idea what I was going to do. I just knew that I had to find my doggie. It wasn't rational, I know. It was strictly a response of the heart. As I drove, I prayed as fervently as I have ever prayed in my life. *"Dear Lord", I said, "please let my little doggie be alive. Don't let the wild animals tear at her body. Please!"* As I drove, I wiped tears from my eyes. When I arrived at the lake, I drove first to the place where the cabin was. I walked all over the wooded area around the house, calling out her name, but to no avail. Finally, I got back in the van and began to drive aimlessly around the area. I had no idea what I was doing. I was crying and praying and speaking in tongues all the while. Finally, I pulled up into the driveway of a beautiful home which was unoccupied. It must have been a summer home for someone very wealthy. I stopped the van and walked all around the property. Defeated and broken, I began to walk back to the van, having abandoned all hope of finding my little doggie. And then, as I turned to my left to look one last time, there she was, sitting underneath a tree. I cried out to her and ran to her to pick her up and hold her. But when I got to her, there was no sign of recognition in her eyes. They were glassy and blank. The trauma of the break-in and the stress of the rapidly approaching winter weather had been too much for her little body. She had suffered a stroke and that part of her that knew me and understood things was irreparably gone. Still, she was alive! God had heard my prayer of desperation. Don't ever think, dear friends, that the Almighty isn't concerned with small details. And don't ever be afraid to ask Him for things both great and small. He knows what you need. Quickly, I scooped my precious little puppy up in my arms, wrapped her up in a blanket and put her in the van. I cried and prayed all the way home. God had given me my doggie back. Perhaps He would spare her life for just a little while longer. We rushed her to the local vet, and he quickly administered medicine and food to her. But, alas, it was too late. Schnuggles died that night. Her little body had simply suffered too much adversity. Bev, Ben, Emily and I made a little wooden cross and dug a grave for her. And we all cried and cried and cried.

Not all stories have a happy ending. We would like them to, but they don't. In fact, so many real life events have an unhappy ending that we need stories which do have a positive conclusion just to keep our hope and faith up. That's what keeps us going to the movies, watching TV, and, yes, reading our Bibles. Our Bible is full of stories that took a nasty turn, but faith in God turned them around at the very end. So it was with Schnuggles. About a year after she died, we were busy having a church service in our home. I was busy worshipping the Lord when suddenly I found myself in an open vision. I saw myself and my five children, all walking hand in hand in heaven, with joy written across our faces. I was thrilled. It was the Lord showing me that my prayers regarding my children would be answered. I still stand on that vision, even though at the moment they aren't walking with the Lord. But at the end of the line was someone I hadn't counted on seeing. Starting with my oldest, Carmen, and moving in succession through Robert, Melanie, Benjamin and Emily, there, at the very end was my precious little puppy, wagging her tail and happy as could be. Now, I had been taught for years that there were no animals in heaven. When asked if dogs and kitty cats went to heaven, I replied that I didn't think so. Yet despite all my doctrine, there stood my little puppy. I was astonished. *"Lord!"* I said, *"Schnuggles in heaven?"* *"Why not?"* the Lord replied, *"I've got horses, don't I???"* His final

comment stopped me short. I had never thought of the matter, but the Bible was full of heavenly horses. There were the chariot and horses of Elijah, who ushered him into heaven. There were the four horsemen of Zechariah, with each set of horses a different color. Tied to them are the Four Horsemen of the Apocalypse, with the same color horses. And finally, there is the vast army of Revelation 19 on horseback, led by the One Whose Name is the Word of God. And if there were horses in heaven, which Scripture certainly said there were, then it stood to reason that there might be other kinds of animals as well. After praying about the matter for quite some time, it dawned on me that since giving each of us a resurrection body was not a big deal, it would be no big deal to also resurrect those animals which were near and dear to us. I rather suspect that we can pretty much have whatever we want, both in heaven and when we return to the earth to rebuild it. Perhaps even the Heavenly City will have such small pleasures. Only time will tell.

For most of us, death is a matter that we come to begrudgingly accept. The death of our pets prepares us for the death of our grandparents. Those deaths, in turn, prepare us for the passing of uncles, aunts, cousins, nephews, nieces, and, eventually, the two deaths that we fear more than any but our own, the passing of our parents. Sometimes, death comes to those to whom it shouldn't come. I have had to bury twin sons, one stillborn and one who lived eight hours after his twin. Bev and I have had to bury her 17-year-old daughter, Charity. When we received news of her death, Beverly collapsed into a heap on the floor. We rather expect those who are elderly to die. We just know it to be a matter of time, since time spares no one in its icy grip. But to bury a child is the most difficult of all. All logic dictates that they should have at least had a chance to see what they could do with life, success or failure. Charity's death was so traumatic that it broke our marriage apart. Yet God was gracious and merciful and put us back together, despite the statistics that said that over 70% of parents who lose a child go through the process of divorce and never get back together. Instead, the Lord has strengthened us and drawn us closer and closer together as the years have gone by.

All of that being true, death is expected but hardly ever embraced by our pragmatic culture. To ask a **temporal** being to die is one thing. But to ask an **eternal** being to die is altogether something else. Death has no meaning to someone who lives forever. Yet that is exactly what the Lord, a.k.a. the Father, asked the Word, a.k.a. the Son, to do. In order to redeem these temporal beings with an eternal spirit inside of them, it was necessary that an eternal being would have to become temporal, and hence, temporary. Jesus would have to experience the full range of human activities, including death. And His death would not be easy. It would involve rejection by the very people that He had come to save. It would involve bruising, beating and torture. His face would be so brutally beaten that he would barely be recognizable as a human being. His back would be shredded into so much hamburger. They would pierce His hands and His feet. He would be crucified. And finally, He would release His spirit from the mortal shell that had held it, crying with a loud voice, "*Father, into Your hands I commit (release) My Spirit*". Jesus' lifeless body would be taken from the cross, wrapped in a burial cloth, packed with various spices and oils to mask the odor of decay, and placed in the unused tomb of a rich man. Yet three days later, He would miraculously burst forth from the grave, forever defeating death and obtaining the prototype of an eternal yet physical body which would live forever. Someday we, too, will possess such bodies. I can hardly wait. And, frankly, I'm not afraid of death any more. Having suffered through what I have been through in the last several years, facing down a heart attack and malignant, inoperable cancer, I know that when my time comes, I have a savior and redeemer waiting on the other side for me, along with countless members of my family who have gone on before me. I'll get to see mom and dad again. I'll get to hug my grandpa and grandma and tell them how much their just being there for me meant to me when I was growing up. The only thing I fear is not being able to finish what the Lord has sent me here to do. That's why, when my body was wracked with pain day and night, I somehow managed to rise up through the pain and begin to write this series of books. I must go throughout the US and the world, teaching what I know about the End Times and the terrible Crash that is coming to America. I must be a prophet to America and an Apostle to the Third World, reaching out through our E4India organization to convert the continent of India before it is too late. Even with all the physical problems I have, I still have a mission which I must complete. It was that same sense of divine destiny that drove Jesus through the Garden of Gethsemane, the kangaroo court of the Sanhedrin, the terrible beatings which He suffered, the Via Delarosa, the Cross and death itself. All believers share that same sense of destiny with Him. But not so with the ultimate pretender.

The Anti-Christ, personally indwelt and empowered by Satan himself, has no desire to embrace any of the things which the perfect, sinless Son of God embraced while in His mortal body. He has no desire to be rejected or scorned. Instead, he wants to be applauded, honored and glorified. Instead of coming as a humble servant, he wants to come as a King and ruler of all he surveys. Jesus understood that one of the primary laws of this universe is the **Law of Paradox**. In order to gain something **eternally**, you must let go of it **temporarily**. The **first** shall be **last**, and the **last**, **first**. By trying to **hold onto your life** in this realm, you end up **losing it** instead. Lucifer never understood or accepted that Law. And the Laws of this universe are just as immutable and unchanging for him as they are for us. That's something that most people don't understand about the devil and his unholy minions. They, just like the angels who didn't fall, are **created beings**, and as such as bound to the universe in which they were made. They cannot move forward or backward in time, just like us. There are consequences for their actions, just like there are for us. And they will burn eternally in the Lake of Fire, just as unsaved, rebellious humanity will burn, dying but never able to die, because we will be trapped in eternal bodies incapable of ever being fully destroyed. Just as we who love the Lord will **live forever**, in a condition of **continuous life**, so they will **die forever**, in a state of **perpetual, ongoing death** which cannot and will not ever end. What a horrifying thought!

No, dear friends, Lucifer has no desire to embrace a cross of any sort, and so, in order to **seem** to duplicate the works of the Christ, he must **appear** to receive a fatal wound. And, according to Verse 14, that apparently fatal wound must occur **by means of a sword**. I clearly remember some years ago on May 13, 1981 when Pope John Paul II was shot in the head by a Turkish gunman and nearly died. I can also clearly remember how most of the so-called "prophecy experts" just went nuts, loudly proclaiming that this was clearly the sign that John Paul II **must** be the Anti-Christ, because he had sustained a **near-fatal wound to the head**. Excuse me? The Bible doesn't say **gun**, does it? It says **sword**. At that point in my understanding of the End Times, I gave me cause to stop and wonder. But then John Paul recovered, grew old, and died of natural causes many years later. Well, so much for the "experts" screaming about him being the Anti-Christ. It's incredible to me how often these guys can be wrong, and how quickly the body of Christ forgets that they were wrong, **again!** Yet they flock to these same men time and time again, as if they were the very fount of revelation. I know I'm grumbling, so please forgive me. I just don't get it. Or maybe that's the price you pay to be a **true** prophet of God. **Nobody** wants to hear the truth. **Everyone** wants their ears tickled. And that's exactly what these fellows do. A Pre-Tribulation Rapture is nothing more than good old fashion ear-tickling, with a lot of window dressing added on it. When their Pre-Tribulation Rapture turns into a Mid-Tribulation Disaster, they will fall away from the church in droves. For those myriad backslidden former Pentecostals and Charismatics who have fallen away during the Tribulation of the 5th Seal, the apparent resurrection of the Anti-Christ will be a "high sign" to them. I've talked about this extensively in Episode One, but I need to help you understand again in case you haven't read that book. Let me explain briefly what I am referring to.

Right now in America and much of the 3rd World affected by American doctrine, there are a large number of people, mostly Charismatic and Pentecostal, who firmly believe that the church will be raptured **before** the Tribulation occurs. I also firmly believed that for 15 years myself, and taught it and preached it with great passion and enthusiasm. But when the Lord challenged me to teach Revelation myself instead of relying on the second hand opinions of others, I was forced to read through and study the book myself. When I did, I was forced to conclude that by studying either Revelation or the Olivet Discourse in any of the three Synoptic Gospels, it was impossible to support a Pre-Tribulation Rapture without taking the Scriptures completely out of context. Nothing I have discovered since then has changed my mind one tiny bit. In fact, each and every piece of information I unearth only serves to confirm what God has shown me. I now know better. And I am endeavoring to tell as many Christians as I can, at least those who will take the time to listen to what I have to say. Unfortunately, there are a great many so-called Spirit-filled Christians who hold their hands up to their ears when they hear anything concerning suffering for Christ. It doesn't matter to them that the Tribulation is actually going on right now in most of the 10-40 Window, egged on by the fanaticism of Islamic groups. Heaven forbid that **they** should have to suffer! It's all right if the rest of the Christians all over the world are suffering. But not them.

Now, what is going to happen to all those people when suddenly they find themselves being persecuted for the fact that they say they are followers of Jesus Christ? What will be their opinion of those pastors and TV ministers who spent billions of dollars telling them that it would never happen to **them**? Will they, for the most part, not become offended and fall away? Will they not betray one another? And then what becomes of all these people, who want something **supernatural but not holy**? When a charismatic world leader suddenly emerges on the stage of world history and begins to build a mighty empire, uniting most of Europe and the Middle East, will they not hail him as a great spiritual as well as political leader? And when an assassin appears to nearly take his life, what will their reaction be when he suddenly appears, alive and well, with no perceptible damage from the near-fatal wound?

Do you get the picture? The Muslim world is poised for the advent of the **Mahdi**, their version of the Christian and Jewish Messiah. Mahmoud Ahmadinejad, the current president of Iran, is a firm believer in this messianic Muslim figure, and also believes himself that he **just might be the man to usher the Mahdi in to power**. For that matter, if he has any more success politically, he might just start to believe that he is the Mahdi himself. It is not without significance that most Muslims believe that their "messiah" will come **up out of a well**. For those of you who have been paying attention, you will remember that one of the most powerful demons of all time, **Abaddon** or **Apollyon**, the **Destroyer**, will come **up out of the Abyss** once the seal over it has been broken. He will also be responsible for killing the Two Witnesses of Revelation Chapter 11. I strongly suspect that he will personally inhabit a human during the time of his terrible reign. Since Satan will inhabit the Anti-Christ, it would be no surprise to me if Abaddon inhabited the False Prophet. There is clearly a link there. I am continuing to pray about the connection, asking the Lord to provide more light on the subject so that I can see clearly how it all ties together.

Once this ultimate false messiah fakes his own death and resurrection, the whole world, including a huge chunk of former Charismatics and Pentecostals, will embrace him as the man of the hour. After all, they will reason, if no one can kill him, how can anyone wage war against him?

Up until now, the Lord has provided very few date timetables that we can reliably trust, despite all the fanaticism which some Bible scholars evidence over some of Daniel's latter prophecies. But the reign of the Anti-Christ in its final form is clearly delineated. Remember, he will first arise as the leader of **one** nation, presumably **Austria**, for reasons that I have outlined earlier in this book. The clock will not start ticking at that point in time. Then he will assume the leadership of **three** nations, presumably **Austria, Germany** and the **Ukraine**. The clock still is not ticking. When he successfully assembles the greatest confederation of nations since the Roman Empire itself; his 10-nation, European-Middle Eastern Empire, it will mark him as the target of an assassination plot. It's hard to tell if the plot will be real or staged. He may have decided to fake his own assassination. When he miraculously recovers from his supposedly fatal wound, the world will fall at his feet. **Now** the 7-year clock will have started ticking, according to Revelation. This global adulation will free him to launch an intensified global attack against all the "People of the Book", as Mohammed called them, the Christians and the Jews.

*"⁵ And he was given a mouth speaking great things and blasphemies, and he was given authority to continue for **forty-two months**. ⁶ Then he opened his mouth in **blasphemy against God**, to blaspheme **His name, His tabernacle, and those who dwell in heaven**. ⁷ It was **granted to him to make war with the saints and to overcome them**. And **authority** was given him over **every tribe, tongue, and nation**. ⁸ All who dwell on the earth will worship him, whose names have not been written in the Book of Life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world." – Revelation 13:5-8*

This will be a terrible time for the world in general and certain peoples in particular. To re-establish the timeline for you, remember that the **Rapture** of the prepared portion of the Church, called the **Bride**, will take place at the **end of the Great Tribulation, the 6th Seal**. Also remember that the **Tribulation** itself occurs during the **5th Seal**. During that terrible 6th Seal, we see a **global earthquake, a global blackout, a partial blow-off of the earth's atmosphere, the sealing of the 144,000 male virgin Jewish evangelists, the removal of the Holy Spirit from the Gentile world**, and finally, halleluiah, the **Rapture** itself, in which 50% of the Christians in the world are caught up to meet the Lord in the air. This event is preceded by the **Believer's Resurrection**, when the dead in Christ rise first and then we who are yet alive meet them in the air. At that point, Christ

and the resurrected/raptured Bride **withdraws from the earth**. Immediately after that is a mysterious 20-year period on earth when **absolutely nothing at all happens**, much like the calm before the storm. Then the **7th Seal, the Wrath of God**, breaks out in all its hideous fury. The Resurrection/Rapture takes place in Revelation 7:9, as clearly identified in Revelation 7:13-14. That same two verses also clearly identify this event as taking place at the end of the **Great Tribulation**, also clearly identified by Jesus in Matthew 24:21, and event-by-event documentation as the 6th Seal, found in Revelation 6:12-7:17. In Revelation 8:1, the 7th Seal, the Wrath of God, begins. Remember, **the Anti-Christ is hindered in his activities until "He who restrains is taken out of the way"**. "He who restrains" is clearly a reference to the Holy Spirit, as I have explained elsewhere. The Anti-Christ may be running one nation by then, but certainly no more. And I would be genuinely surprised if he is even in charge of one nation until the Holy Spirit's restraining influence is removed from him. Then and only then can he begin his demonic advancement. Please remember, **if you are in the Rapture, you have NOTHING to fear from the Anti-Christ**. Christians get so confused on that issue. Remember, **if you are ready, you leave at the end of the 6th Seal**. The Anti-Christ does not attain global domination until the 7th Seal, all the way in Revelation Chapter 13. A lot of stuff happens between those two events, stuff I'm going to go over again.

There is one event that I need to elaborate on, though, and that is the rescue of the survivors of Israel by American air might in Revelation Chapter 12. Notice that this event happens **just before the rise of the Anti-Christ to GLOBAL domination**. For America to pull off a military feat like that will require that America is **still in one piece politically**. The Lord showed me many years ago that our country will be **broken into four pieces**. I can't see this happening when the Anti-Christ is only in charge of Austria. Nor can it happen when he assumes control of the three-nation confederacy. But when he is able to consolidate his ten-nation empire, things will get a little dicey for the rest of the world. I suspect that the United States will be broken up sometime after the assassination plot. Why do I say that? Because it is clear from Revelation 13:7 that he is given **global** domination from that point on. That would include, by definition, the former United States of America. And, just as in the clearly prophetic TV mini-series *Amerika*, we will be shattered into four pieces. It is also probable that both our East and West coasts will be severely damaged, probably by nuclear weaponry. Atlanta and the state of Minnesota will also be partially destroyed. I have already shared that scenario when I talked about the vision the Lord gave me about the upcoming times.

There's another interesting way in which the Anti-Christ mimics the earthly ministry of Jesus, and that is in regard to the **time frames** involved. Jesus' earthly ministry was very brief, lasting only **3½ years**. In the same way, the Anti-Christ's period of dominion will only last **3½ years**, even though his full span of activity will last for seven. During the first 3½ years, he will be seriously hindered by the Two Witnesses.

In addition, there is one final way in which the Anti-Christ mimics the true Christ, and that is in the **chain of command**. The heavenly chain of command begins with **the Father**, who then exercises authority over but gives dominion to **the Son**. And **John the Baptist/Elijah** is the Messenger of the Covenant, who announces the Christ and testifies to His authenticity. The demonic chain of command is a mimic of that exact order. First comes **Lucifer himself, the Devil, the Dragon**, acting in the place of **the Father**. Next comes the **Anti-Christ, the Beast out of the Sea**, acting in the role of **the Christ**. And finally comes **the False Prophet, the Beast out of the Earth** acting in the role of **John the Baptist/Elijah**. One thing can be said for certain about Satan. He is not a **creative** individual. Everything he does is a **twisted copy of the original**. You see, dear friends, in attempting to overthrow the Lord of Glory and become God in His place, he has become the ultimate, original **cheap imitation**. How sad. How pathetic. And, in a perverse sort of way, how humorous. To think that a single, solitary angel, no matter how beautiful, no matter how wise, would have the audacity to think that he could stand in the place of the Ultimate Source of All Being and pretend to be Him. What a joke! Even more ludicrous is it, then, when mere men posture and strut and proclaim themselves to be gods. There's a wry, sarcastic cartoon series done by Steven Spielberg called *Pinky and the Brain*. In the show, two genetically altered lab mice, Pinky, who is a complete idiot having a wonderful time just being who he is, and the Brain, a megalomaniac genius who schemes on a nightly basis to take over the world, try again and again to devise plots to rule mankind. I have found that all the great stories are found in the Bible, and that there are no greater storytellers than the Jews, the original people of

the Book. Think for just a second about how many people in Hollywood who are writers, directors and producers have a Jewish ancestry. Without realizing it, Spielberg (literally *Mountain of Playing* in German) has captured the irony of any man or even an angel attempting the conquest of the world, much less heaven itself. Satan has no more chance of ruling heaven and the Anti-Christ has no more chance of ruling this world than the Brain has. To God, all of us are genetically altered lab mice. Our ways are not His ways. Our thoughts are not His thoughts. As high as the heavens are above the earth, a near infinite measurement, so that much higher are His thoughts than our thoughts and His ways than our ways. It would be better to be Pinky, and just enjoy our lives in Him than to be the Brain, constantly striving to attain that which is unattainable and desire what could never be ours in a million, million years.

Despite the impossibility of the situation, in Revelation 13:5-6, the Anti-Christ is **given authority to blaspheme**, or to utter terrible things against (1) **God Himself**, (2) **His Name**, (3) **His Tabernacle** and (4) **those who dwell in Heaven**. Now there's an interesting list, if I ever saw one! Go ahead, Devil, give it your best shot! Go ahead, Satan, I'm exposing my chin. Go ahead and take a swipe at it. You think you can rule the world? I'll even give you the chance to try. Let's see how you do, Lucifer, when I finally grant you what you've always wanted: a chance to play God for a little while. Let's see what he'll do when he gets the chance. Clearly, he will belittle **YHWH**, or, as we know Him, **Yahweh** or **Jehovah**, the mistranslated name of the Old King James version. Now, does that mean that he will exalt himself as God instead? Could be. I'm not sure. But probably not just yet. Why? Because it would absolutely infuriate the five Muslim nations of his empire. He's going to save his *coup de grace* for the very end of this horrible period. My best guess is that he will probably extol the virtues of *Allah*, who is **not** the same god as *Yahweh*. That's a whole 'nother topic, and we don't have time today to get into it. One thing is for certain, though. He will speak constantly against the *People of the Book*, Christians and Jews, and will state repeatedly that neither Yahweh nor His Son Jesus presents any viable solutions to the problems of the world. Never mind that virtually every hospital and university in the United States and elsewhere in the free world was founded by a minister of the Gospel. Never mind the fact that the United States is virtually the only country in the world that sends help to other countries. Never mind the fact that it is **Christians, and no one else** who reach out to the widow and the orphan because our Book says so. In India, for example, there are **one billion** people. Of those one billion, 40% or **400 million** are under the age of 14. And many of those children are orphaned, homeless and hungry. Who cares for them? Certainly not the Hindus, who believe that it is their *Karma* which has put them in this terrible state. Certainly not the Muslims, who believe that everything is *Kismet*, or the will of Allah. Only the Christians care. And a staggering **75%** of those orphans who are taken in, loved and cared for by Christians become ministers of the Gospel of Jesus Christ. But becoming a Christian involves surrendering your will to Another. And sinful, rebellious mankind wants nothing to do with that. So it must reject the Gospel, and He who died for it so that we might have eternal life.

When Revelation says that the Anti-Christ will blaspheme **His Temple**, does that refer to the **Heavenly Temple**, referred to in Revelation 15:5-8 or does it refer to a **rebuilt earthly temple**, constructed on Mt. Zion? Frankly, I'm not sure. There have been a good many temples. The first was designed by David through the Holy Spirit and constructed by Solomon. The second was constructed by Ezra and friends and was much smaller and less glorious, so that at the dedication ceremony half of the crowd, the younger set who had not known the glory of Solomon's Temple, cheered, while the other half, made up of the old-timers, wept because so much had been lost. By my count, the third temple was constructed by Herod in a futile attempt to appease the Jews. That is the temple referred to by Jesus in His prophecy in Matthew 24:2. The temple that must be rebuilt and then defiled by the Anti-Christ just prior to the return of the true Christ is the one that is currently causing so much controversy. Many scholars believe that the Muslim Dome of the Rock is built on the former site of the temple, so building this 4th temple would involve demolishing the Dome of the Rock, an event which would enrage all Islam and plummet Israel into a major war. However, it is my understanding that this second most holy of Muslim shrines is actually built on top of Herod's temple. If this is true, then we have a loophole. It seems that Herod's Temple was not built on the same site as Solomon's Temple. Herod was acting on flawed information and was not really concerned with historical, Biblical accuracy so much as he was with the political ramifications of appeasing the Jews. The actual site of Solomon's temple is still on the Temple Mount, but off to one side of the Dome of the Rock, and so the two

buildings could technically co-exists with one another. After the destruction of that temple, there remains one final temple to be built, that of Ezekiel, a facility so huge that it dominates the entirety of Mount Zion, which has itself been elevated to the highest mountain in the world by the events that lead up to the 1,000 year reign of Christ.

The final thing the Anti-Christ rails against are **those who dwell in heaven**. Who is John talking about? Well, there are several candidates. The list obviously has to begin with the **Father and the Son**, who are seated side-by-side in divine majesty. Next in line are the **angels who did not fall**. And I suspect that it is in this group that we find our key. Satan, a.k.a. Lucifer, was once an angel himself. I would suspect that untold thousands of years of warfare have keened his hatred for all the loyal angels to a fine edge. Now that he is personally inhabiting the body of the Anti-Christ and thinks that his goal of world dominion is about to come to pass, it would be small wonder if he took time to boast against those faithful soldiers who have battled against him in the heavenlies all these millennia. The final candidate in the list is the **Bride**, consisting of all the Old Testament saints, those who down through the years have died in Christ, and those of us who joined their brethren in the air shortly after their resurrection. I could see anger on the Anti-Christ's part against her because of two reasons: (1) She has escaped his wrath (ha, ha!) and is now truly seated in heavenly places with her Beloved Lord Jesus Christ and (2) because she has the favor of the Almighty, and he does not. Perhaps he is just angry at all the inhabitants of heaven, because he got his sorry you-know-what pitched out of heaven for dereliction of duty and conduct unbecoming an officer of the King. We've talked about his failure before. No need to elaborate on it again.

How long will this madness last? The total time span of his dominion, according to Scripture, will be 7 years. The first phase, during which he slowly builds and consolidates his power base, will last 3½ years. During that time he will be seriously hindered by the Two Witnesses of Revelation Chapter 11. Finally, in desperation, he will call on Abaddon/Apollyon to kill them. Once they have been murdered and then resurrected and ascended, there will be no further hindrance to him completing his unholy plan. The final phase, which we have just described, will also last **forty-two months** or **3½ years**. It will be during this final 3½ year period that he will establish a fragile but unique global "peace", based on some of the most horrific methods ever employed by mankind on itself. It will also be during this period that America will probably lose its freedom and unity, shattered into four pieces so as not to pose a threat to his empire, based in Europe and the Middle East. During this time, there will be very little that the Jews and the Christians who were left behind in the Rapture can do except hide and flee into the mountains. Doing business covertly and trying to hide their faith will not work, for reasons that we will investigate in our next *E-Pistle*, entitled **Fire from Heaven**. Stay tuned for tomorrow, when we meet the **False Prophet**, the ultimate Elijah/John the Baptist wanna-be. Until then, walk with God, seek righteousness, speak the truth, and love the brethren. God bless!

Day 29 – Fire from Heaven



“¹¹ Then I saw another beast coming up out of the earth, and he had two horns like a lamb and spoke like a dragon. ¹² And he exercises all the authority of the first beast in his presence, and causes the earth and those who dwell in it to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed. ¹³ He performs great signs, so that he even makes fire come down from heaven on the earth in the sight of men. “ – Revelation 13:11-13

In yesterday's *E-Pistle*, we began to investigate the two greatest phonies of all time, the Anti-Christ and the False Prophet. We looked carefully at how the Anti-Christ stages key events and circumstances in his life and career to emulate the Only Begotten Son of God. And just as he has carefully planned his life around creating a false Christ, so the False Prophet also carefully scripts his life so that he seems to duplicate the lives of Elijah and John the Baptist. Why both Elijah and John the Baptist? We've already discussed that topic elsewhere, and we will revisit it briefly again in this *E-Pistle*, but for the moment, let's take a closer look at what this unholy clone will be like.

As I also mentioned in yesterday's article, we have a clear-cut demonic chain of command involved in the end times. The **Dragon**, a.k.a. Satan, Lucifer, Slewfoot, etc. is the supreme Commander-In-Chief behind all the doings of the End Times. Personally indwelt by him and totally subordinate to him is the **Beast coming up out of the Sea**, the Anti-Christ. And finally, we have the **Beast coming up out of the Earth**, the False Prophet. Notice that he has **two horns like a lamb**. What an obvious rip-off! Who is the real Lamb of God, Who taketh away the sins of the world? Also interesting to note is that the Beast coming up out of the Sea has **ten** horns. Now, we've said in earlier articles that those horns are symbolic of **nations under his control**. If that is true and consistent, then it would be realistic to predict that the False Prophet himself will have authority over two nations of his own. Whether these nations are included in the ten of the Anti-Christ, I cannot say. It is possible. And given what is happening in the Muslim world right now, I would have to say that both **Iran** and **Iraq** would be logical candidates, since the greatest fervor for the Mahdi, the Muslim Messiah, is centered in those two nations. If that is true, then there would be an overlap between the ten horns of the Anti-Christ and the two horns of the False Prophet. Only time will tell.

Also noteworthy is the fact that this Beast coming up out of the earth **speaks like a dragon**. Since the Dragon is the Devil himself, this fellow will have all the eloquence and persuasive powers of Satan himself. Now, remember that the artist formerly known as Lucifer was so eloquent and persuasive that he successfully convinced 1/3rd of the heavenly host to side with him in his rebellion against the Almighty. It is this enormously powerful and seemingly hypnotic speaking ability which leads me to believe that Satan has attempted to engineer the advent of the End Times at least once before, in our own lifetimes. Who am I referring to? The one and only Adolf Hitler. His ability to sway the masses in Germany and Austria was unparalleled in human history. How on earth could such a hard-working, logical, rational people such as the Germans be persuaded to buy into the myth of the *Übermensch* or Superman concept of the German philosopher Nietzsche? Only an orator of unparalleled eloquence could have so successfully swayed the masses. And, in keeping with the emulation of the Divine Plan, Hitler's primary objective, far beyond the Final Solution which intended to exterminate all Jews, Gypsies, idiots, the elderly and the infirm, was the establishment of the **Third Reich**, which was intended to last for guess how long? That's right! **1,000 years!** This would, of course, replace the **Millennial Reign of Jesus Christ**, which is also going to last for a thousand years. I had always

wondered why Hitler intended to call Germany's intended rule what he did, so I did a little research. Every time I write an article, I learn something new and astonishing. It seems that the First Reich (or Empire) was the Holy Roman Empire which existed from the time of Charlemagne to 1806. The Second Reich was the German Empire of 1871-1918 created by Otto von Bismarck. Hitler's reign, of course, was intended to be the Third, and last much longer than the first two.

As I've thought about this scenario, it would appear that one of Satan's primary methods is **to force something to come to pass prematurely**. Let's take the Garden of Eden, for example. Remember that in past articles I have explained how with the Lord one day is as a thousand years, and a thousand years are as one day? (II Peter 3:8) With that in mind, it means that the **7 Days of Creation** are not **man-days**, as we would reckon them, but rather **God-days**, equal to 1,000 years each of temporal time as we measure it. That would mean that the actual creation of the physical universe as we currently know it took roughly 6,000 temporal man-years of time. Creating light, the fundamental building block out of which both matter and energy are drawn, took a full thousand years. Creating the rest of the physical universe and the shaping of the barrier (firmament) which separated the waters in outer space **above** the barrier (which acted as a perfect shield against the lethal radiation which pours from our sun) from the waters **below** the barrier (which formed the seas out of which life sprang) took another thousand years. Once these fundamental tasks were complete, the creation of the rest of life took another 3,000 years plus. Near the end of the 6th Day, the Trinity took counsel among itself/themselves and decided to make someone **in their own image**. Out of that decision came the first man. But remember that the man was the only living thing on the planet without a mate. For a period of time, he seemed to be satisfied with that situation. But after a while, he grew lonely as he compared his own existence to that of the lower creatures. As a result, **after he had been alive for some considerable period of time, perhaps several hundred years**, the Lord took the proverbial rib out of his side and fashioned woman as a suitable helpmeet and companion for him. What does that imply? That the woman was **younger** than the man, **more immature** and hence, **more gullible**. She had not had the privilege of sitting under the counsel of the Lord Jesus Christ for the hundreds of years that Adam had. I think it can be safely assumed that when the Lord walked in the Garden in the cool of the evening, after the normal work day was done, that it was not a one-time affair. Rather, I suspect that He had been coming every day since the very first day of Adam's life, teaching him, line by line, precept by precept, here a little, there a little (Isaiah 28:10) as his brilliant but immature mind was capable of absorbing the knowledge. The admonition against eating from the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil was not intended to be **permanent**, but you don't give a loaded revolver to a five-year-old, nor should you be introducing 10-year-olds to sexual information which they are neither capable of nor ready to assimilate into their lives. The simple truth was that neither Adam nor Eve was ready for the information contained somehow in the fruit of that amazing but deadly tree. As I have thought about it, I suspect that the juices of the fruit of that tree somehow activated a portion of their brains that was hitherto dormant. Up until that fateful day, they were **incapable** of discerning good from evil. Things simply **were** to them, just as they are to the dumb animals. Animals have no sense of right or wrong. As we say in our culture, **"it is what it is"**. I strongly suspect that access to the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil would have been granted to Adam and Eve after the ending of that First Shabbat or Sabbath, the 7th Day of Rest. It was, incidentally, on the Lord's **day off** that the betrayal by Lucifer occurred. He knew that the Lord of glory would not be visiting the Garden that particular day, and so it would be an ideal time to attack the integrity of the innocent and unsuspecting Eve. There is a certain sadness involved in the loss of innocence. We prize that in our children. That's why we keep the myth of Santa Claus alive for our children long after it is realistically sustainable. We want to see again that child-like innocence to **believe anything** that once existed in the Garden of Eden. And today, when I preach in many American churches, there are no miracles, signs and wonders because we Western Christians have been so poisoned by the doctrine of scientific rational skepticism that we automatically **disbelieve everything** that is presented to us for the first time. The wealthier and more well-to-do the congregation, the more rational skepticism I find. Only among the poor do I find that **automatic child-like faith** that produces spontaneous healings. This is one of the reasons that I love to preach in African-American churches. I love the passion and zeal in the worship, and I have found that it is much easier to "get them healed", if you will, than it is in most Indo-European churches. This is also true of the 3rd World. I had this confirmed to me by an individual who has spent much time in Mexico as a missionary and now pastors the church that we attend. He said that even a "maybe" to a group of Mexicans is automatically interpreted as a promised "yes", and they full expect

the individual who made the statement to keep the promise. This is also true in India and in the rest of the 3rd World as well. This is why the serpent did not go to Adam, but rather to Eve. He knew that, being younger than her husband, more immature and less knowledgeable; she would be more inclined to **believe him without question and act immediately upon that misplaced faith**. When Eve brought up the existing admonition about not eating from the tree, he quickly disparaged it and, being naïve and un-skeptical, she automatically **transferred her faith from the Word of God to the word of Satan**. And, to be fair to her, **she had never encountered a lie before in her entire life**. **Everything** that she had been told up till then had **always** been **totally true!** We look at her from our cynical position after the fall and criticize her. But what if we had been in her place? Would we, given the same set of circumstances, have fared any better than she did? After the discovery of the betrayal later on during that 1,000 year period, it was not Eve who was held ultimately accountable (Genesis 3:8-19). Granted, she received a two-pronged punishment. She was demoted from being a suitable helpmeet, equal to her husband in the decision-making process, and was told that from now on **he** would rule over **her**. That was the logical consequence of her devastatingly wrong decision. In addition, she was told that she would have pain in childbirth from that point on, unlike the rest of the animal kingdom, whose females seem to birth their young without a second thought to the matter, and, after perhaps cleaning up the newborn, go right on without a moment's hesitation. But Adam was a different matter. The Lord turned to him and told him that the entire **Adamah** was cursed because of **him**. You see, dear friends, while Eve was deceived about this fruit deal, **Adam was not** (I Timothy 2:14). This is why God held him ultimately responsible, and it was he, not Eve, who caused a terrible curse to enter into the *Adamah*. Now, as is often the case, the Hebrew word *Adamah* has a multitude of meanings. It can mean *the earth beneath your feet*. It can also mean *the land or country in which you live*. And last, but certainly not least, it can mean *the entire world or planet*. It is this third meaning that the lord had in mind, not the first, despite what our traditional translators have said. As I have researched the original Hebrew, Aramaic and Greek in which the Bible is written, I have discovered passage after passage which I believe has been unintentionally mistranslated, sometimes with no harm, but sometimes with great theological impact. In fact, I just discovered another one today, in regard to what Jesus had to say in Matthew Chapter 5 about divorce and remarriage. Tomorrow I am going to share what I discovered with the precious woman who asked me the question. And the **correct** translation is going to set her free from years of self-condemnation and help her and her husband to move forward in ministry for the Lord. What is the correct translation? Naah! Not gonna tell you! For that and other such cool things, you will have to buy yet another book! Since that book does not yet exist as of the writing of this book, let's just make up a title right now. How about "*And the Truth Shall Set You Free*"? Works for me! Let's call it that. Look for it at our web site and in Christian book stores across America (by faith!).

After all that rambling and preliminary information, you can see why it would be to Satan's advantage to **prematurely introduce information** into the lives of Adam and Eve. By doing so, it twisted and warped their understanding and world view of the information which they had already received. Consider this for just a moment: just as we are told in Daniel 12:4, knowledge has increased in a geometric fashion. We now know more than we have ever known in human history. Yet we are no closer to finding true peace and prosperity. Why? Because we have no **wisdom**, or a rational framework into which we can fit our knowledge. Information is either useless or deadly when it is not coupled with a firm understanding of **when** and **how** to use it. As a result of the poisoning of our minds in the Garden by the premature introduction of knowledge that we were not mature enough to assimilate, we are now closer to the brink of utter annihilation than we have ever been before.

But even that was not enough for Satan. After the expulsion from the Garden, we still lived just shy of one God-day, or 1,000 years (Genesis 2:16-17). The average age of the ancient fathers before the Flood was, excluding Enoch who was raptured because he pleased God, an amazing 912 years. And one would think that a human, given almost a thousand years, might come to some reasonable semblance of wisdom. But the Bible says that their thoughts were continually upon nothing but evil (Genesis 6:5). Guess who was behind that little project? And so the Lord was forced to almost totally wipe mankind off the face of the earth and start again with only eight people. He was also forced to incrementally reduce the lifespan of man from 900+ years to the 600 of Shem, Noah's son. From there the lifespan collapsed into the 400's and then all the way down below the 120 which the Lord had said he would reset our lifespan to (Genesis 6:3). That meant that the advent of sexual maturity would now

come slightly after the **tenth** year instead of after the **one hundredth** year, as it was prior to the flood. Don't believe me? Simply check each of the patriarchs to see how old they were when their first child was born. Just grab your Bible and turn to Genesis Chapter 5 and start reading and taking notes. Amazing, huh? Then turn to Genesis 11, to the genealogy of Shem, and chart the free-fall of man's longevity. Pretty appalling, huh? That free-fall continued straight through the Middle Ages until the average life span of men was a mere **35 years!** Only the advances in medicine and nutrition of the last 500 years have turned the tide in our favor, but with improved nutrition has come a dramatic increase in height and weight in those fortunate enough to benefit from it and, in our young girls, a dramatic increase in the speed at which a little girl turns into a young woman. Now, it is not uncommon for young girls to reach full physical development and puberty as early as ten years old. With puberty comes the hormonal desire to have children. And so now, exactly as Satan planned it, we have **children raising children**, with absolutely no understanding, wisdom or maturity to know **how** to raise those children. How much better to simply be children for a hundred years or so, gradually gaining wisdom and knowledge at your parent's feet. Then, when you were around 100, your body would begin to change. Young boys would start to notice a deepening in their voices, hair would begin to grow on their chests, and suddenly those yucky little stick creatures called girls would no longer be sticks, but rather rounded and, gulp, beautiful and desirable. That would be better than what we have today. And who knows? Perhaps our species is not meant to mate until we are around a God-day old, or about 1,000 years. So long? Why not! It doesn't matter when you have children if you are built to **live forever**, which was the original plan of Eden and remains the plan today, only now we will accomplish that goal through the Resurrection/Rapture and the Great White Throne Judgment.

Having said all that, we find ourselves once more back at the failed painter of Austria. The enemy is even in a hurry to start the End Times. His thinking is that if he can **throw off the timetable of God**, he has a chance to circumvent the plan of God for all mankind and the earth upon which we dwell. By golly, if he can't have Heaven, at least he will have control of the earth instead! But every time that he tries to prematurely speed things up, the Lord makes sure that his plans are spoiled and thwarted. Even now, the lunatic president of Iran along with legions of fanatical Muslims intends to push the Middle East and the rest of the world into a premature Armageddon, in order to hasten the appearing of the Mahdi. Even we are admonished by Peter to **hasten the day of His appearing** (II Peter 3:12). The Muslims assume that by creating chaos and disaster, they can hasten the day of the appearing of their Messiah. But for us, it is a much more benign matter. Paul tells us that a hardening has come upon all Israel **until the full number of the Gentiles has come in** (Romans 11:25). When that happens, **the times of the Gentiles will have been fulfilled** (Luke 21:24). If the church had only been about its business of **making disciples of all men** (Matthew 28:19), instead of falling asleep on the job for more than a thousand years, I would not be writing these words, exhorting you to preach the Gospel to all the world. Yes, dear friends, the return of Christ has never depended on what **He** did. His job was fully completed on the cross. He Himself said, "*It is finished (completed)!*" (John 19:30). It depended on what **we** did, or, in this case, what we **didn't do**, which was to make disciples of **all** men. Then the full Gentile quota to be carried in that great starship/city called the **New Jerusalem** would have been satisfied, the Lord would have turned His full attention on Israel so that the remnant of them might all be saved during the 6th and 7th Seals, and the matter would have been brought to successful closure.

God has a timetable in all these matters, and no matter how hard Lucifer tries to engineer his own timetable, it will fail every single time. But in the meanwhile, his tampering with the timeline has caused enormous hardship and heartache for humanity. We will never know what we could have been as a race until we enter into the Millennial Reign, when we get to see what we can do with eternal, indestructible bodies, with a mindset and a timetable designed by the Divine Mind, and not our own, tiny, in-a-hurry little ant brains.

Now that we've dealt with that subject, we'll try to tackle another one. Revelation says that the Anti-Christ is a Beast that comes out of the **Sea**, but that the False Prophet is a Beast that comes out of the **Earth**. Why the difference, and what does it mean? I don't have an absolute lock on this, and so I did a little research on the matter to see what other folks were saying about the matter. I came away shaking my head in amazement. Never in my life have I ever seen wackier interpretations than on these two beasts. The two that ranked highest on the crazy scale had George W. Bush and an official

in mainland China as the Beast out of the earth, respectively. Of course, many people probably think that my identification of Austria, Germany and the Ukraine as the three initial horns of the Anti-Christ is just as wacky. Be that as it may. I am going to hold true to the **literal-logical-chronological** guideline that the Lord established for me when I first began to study Revelation. With that in mind, the Beast out of the Earth must be an **individual**. He is, after all, referred to as a "he". There is reason to believe that he is fully human, unlike the Anti-Christ, who is indwelt by Satan himself. This would also match him up with his divine counterpart, John the Baptist/Elijah. One source I read suggested that he is a resurrected individual, hence the phrase "out of the earth". I almost bit on that one until I remembered that only God has the power to raise the dead. Remember that the Anti-Christ had a **seemingly** fatal wound. We already discussed that in our last article. He really can't come back from the dead. He can only fake it. So that automatically disqualifies the phrase "out of the earth" as a resurrection. So for the time being, we are going to leave this issue alone. I really don't know what to think about the symbol involved, and manufacturing an opinion of which I am not sure would be dishonest and unbiblical.

On verses 12 and 13, however, I have no such reservations. They are clear and absolute, with multiple linking Scriptures to explain and defend the interpretations. In verse 12, it says, "*And he exercises all the authority of the first beast in his presence, and **causes the earth and those who dwell in it to worship the first beast**, whose deadly wound was healed.*" This matches perfectly with the role that John the Baptist played in relationship with Jesus. John's ministry, although he began sooner, was totally focused and submitted to the ministry of Jesus. Before Jesus even arrived on the scene, John was already preaching that "*I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance, but **He who is coming after me is mightier than I, whose sandals I am not worth to carry.** He will baptize you with the Holy Spirit and fire.*" (Matthew 3:11). John said of his own ministry that "*He must **increase**, but I must **decrease***" (John 3:30). When Jesus first came to the Jordan seeking to be baptized, John, when he saw Him, said "*Behold! **The Lamb of God who takes away the sin of the world!***" (John 1:29). Now **that's** bearing witness! John had no illusions about his own ministry and life in relationship to Christ. When Jesus requested that he baptize Him, John replied "***I need to be baptized by You, and are You coming to me?***" (Matthew 3:14). Clearly, no one was ever more submitted to the ministry of another person. In an era of relentless self-promotion among ministers, wouldn't it be nice to find someone who was truly out to be a blessing to someone other than themselves? Unfortunately, that model of selflessness isn't found often in the church, but ironically the False Prophet will be totally submitted to the one person in the history of the world to whom submission should **never** be given.

In verse 13, we find a troubling reality: once the Holy Spirit has been withdrawn from the Gentile world at the end of the 6th Seal, there will be absolutely no restraints left against Satanic demonstrations of power, even to the ultimate display of so-called divine power, "*He performs **great signs**, so that he even makes **fire come down from heaven on the earth in the sight of men***". At the moment, significant signs and wonders are generally restricted to those who walk in the power of the Holy Spirit. Granted, I have heard of some remarkable demonstrations of demonic power, particularly in the 3rd World, but certain things seem to be reserved for those who serve the Lord Jesus Christ. But in these final days of our planet, the False Prophet will be able to deceive the entire world with a display of demonically driven power. Of particular interest will be his ability to call **fire down from heaven**. When I think of the phrase "fire from heaven", I tend to think of massive lightning strikes, like the kind that you see in a thunderstorm. Perhaps it really is fire, which would make it all the more impressive. But when we start talking about folks calling fire down from heaven, we are looking at a very exclusive set of individuals. Fire and brimstone are summoned down from the heavens (outer space) by the **two angels** who destroy Sodom and Gomorrah. I rather suspect that their fire and brimstone was actually a meteorite shower, which would have given the same appearance. And it was no small coincidence that it landed on a choice piece of ground, the Vale of Siddim, which had vast underground deposits of asphalt, coal, oil and natural gas. The Vale of Siddim, according to Genesis, had a large number of **bitumen pits**. That same root word is used to describe bituminous coal, one of the two kinds of coal that we burn for energy to this day. The resulting explosion blew a hole 1,200 feet into the ground. The Dead Sea, which now covers the former site of the Valley of Siddim, is so shallow that you can wade across it at most places. But at the very southernmost tip, where Sodom and Gomorrah were located, the sea suddenly plummets to a depth of 1,200 feet. Hmmm... Wonder why? In Chapter 1 of the Book of Job fire falls from heaven and burns up the sheep and the servants of Job. In Exodus

Chapter 9, **Moses** calls for a massive thunderstorm, with hail and terrible lightning strikes. In Leviticus Chapter 10, **Nadab** and **Abihu** are struck dead when fire comes out of the Pillar of Smoke and Fire and incinerates them. In Numbers Chapter 11 the Lord becomes angry with the people and the fire of the Lord burns among them. In Numbers Chapter 16 during **Korah's rebellion**, fire comes out from the Lord (presumably the cloud again) and incinerates the 250 men who aligned themselves with Korah and had censers with incense in them. And we can't forget that the top third of **Mt. Sinai** was consumed with holy fire while the Lord was there. After that, we don't find supernatural fire falling again until the days of **Samson**, when fire arose out of the tip of the staff of the Angel of the Lord when he spoke to Samson's mother. Fire fell once again during the reign of **David** in I Chronicles 21, when he purchased the threshing floor of Ornan the Jebusite and his oxen and erected an altar to forestall the plague which had already struck down 70,000 of the men of Jerusalem. Later on, fire would fall from heaven in II Chronicles Chapter 7 in response to **Solomon's 1,000 sacrifices** at the dedication of the First Temple. But the most note-worthy fire-fall of all time was at the famous **Showdown at Mt. Carmel** between the solitary **Elijah** and the 450 prophets of Baal and the additional 400 prophets of Asherah found in I Kings Chapter 18. Elijah then becomes the **only person to call fire down from heaven more than one time** when in II Kings Chapter 1 he calls fire down **two more times** to incinerate the two arrogant captains and their respective 50-man SWAT teams. And even at his exit from this planet, fire is present when a **chariot and horses of fire** separate him and his successor Elisha by the Jordan as he is swept up into heaven in a whirlwind, shades of Dorothy and Toto of Kansas and Oz fame. **Elisha** prays for his servant to see the forces arrayed in their favor in II Kings Chapter 6, and the servant gets to see that the mountains are ringed with horses and chariots of fire. But after that, supernatural fire falling from heaven in a physical form simply seems to cease. On the day of Pentecost in the Book of Acts, Jesus baptizes the 120 in the Upper Room with the Holy Ghost and fire, but those tongues of fire were probably not actual, physical fire, but simply had the appearance of fire. Certainly there were no reports of first, second or third degree burns among the congregants that day.

So as we exit the Old Testament, the association of fire from heaven is clearly linked to the **prophet Elijah** more than any other individual. Then, when we fast-forward to the end of the Old Testament, we find God making a very specific promise to His people, followed by 400 years of silence.

*"⁵ Behold, I will send you **Elijah the prophet** before the coming of the great and dreadful day of the LORD. ⁶ And he will turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the hearts of the children to their fathers, lest I come and strike the earth with a curse."* – Malachi 4:5-6

And Jesus clearly identified John the Baptist as Elijah in the Gospel of Matthew.

*"⁷ As they departed, Jesus began to say to the multitudes **concerning John**: "What did you go out into the wilderness to see? A reed shaken by the wind? ⁸ But what did you go out to see? A man clothed in soft garments? Indeed, those who wear soft clothing are in kings' houses. ⁹ But what did you go out to see? **A prophet?** Yes, I say to you, and **more than a prophet.** ¹⁰ For this is he of whom it is written: 'Behold, **I send My messenger before Your face, who will prepare Your way before You.**' ¹¹ Assuredly, I say to you, among those born of women there has not risen one greater than John the Baptist; but he who is least in the kingdom of heaven is greater than he. ¹² And from the days of John the Baptist until now the kingdom of heaven suffers violence, and the violent take it by force. ¹³ For all the prophets and the law prophesied until John. ¹⁴ And if you are willing to receive it, **he is Elijah who is to come.** ¹⁵ He who has ears to hear, let him hear!"* – Matthew 11:7-15

I find it both humorous and frustrating that when I try to explain this to Christians, they refuse to believe or accept the fact that someone could be reincarnated, when the Bible clearly says that for Elijah this will be true. However, since it is also true that it is "*appointed unto a man once to die and then the judgment*" (Hebrews 9:27), that means that Elijah is one of only two men in the history of humanity to qualify for the job. After taking care of that issue, I then have to turn around and argue with those who seem willing to resurrect both Moses and Elijah as the Two Witnesses, and anyone else they feel free to resurrect without examining Scripture to see if there just might be some rules associated with the process. But Satan certainly has no problems with the concept, for the False Prophet, who is designed to be a clone of Elijah/John the Baptist, echoes the principal characteristics of

both men in their respective ministries. Elijah was the man associated with calling fire down from heaven, not just once, but **three times** in total. Elijah was one of only two men bodily brought into heaven without experiencing physical death. Elijah was the man promised by the Father to be returned to earth as a harbinger of the Messiah in both Malachi 3:1 and Malachi 4:5-6. And John the Baptist was the man who heralded the coming of Christ, persistently refusing to take any of the glory for himself, but constantly extolling the virtues of He who was to follow. All of these characteristics the False Prophet faithfully models. It's sad when the Devil knows the Word of God better than God's people, but it's the norm, not the exception.

There is one more very frightening thing that the False Prophet will be able to do. Let's look at the next few verses and see what tricks he has up his sleeve.

" ¹⁴ *And he deceives those who dwell on the earth by those signs which he was granted to do in the sight of the beast, telling those who dwell on the earth **to make an image to the beast** who was wounded by the sword and lived. ¹⁵ He was **granted power to give breath to the image of the beast**, that **the image of the beast should both speak and cause as many as would not worship the image of the beast to be killed.**" – Revelation 13:14-15*

I had always assumed that this passage referred to the creation of a single image which could be animated to both speak and cause people to be killed, but as I researched this matter some years ago, I turned my attention to a very interesting work by the now-deceased Robert Van Kampen called *The Sign*. Although I don't agree with everything Brother Robert has to say, he was nonetheless instrumental in helping me to see clearly that the Rapture occurred at the end of the 6th Seal. I had actually discovered the truth myself some time before, but was rebuked by everyone I shared this with and told I was completely wrong, that we were headed for a Pre-Tribulation Rapture. Then, without warning, Van Kampen's book showed up on my doorstep, straight from his organization. I had never heard of him before. **Somebody** knew I needed that book to confirm that I wasn't crazy. For that reason, I belong to a group of people who call themselves *Pre-Wrath*, because the 7th Seal, which follows immediately after the Rapture, is called the Wrath of God. In Van Kampen's research, he stumbled across the work of **another** brother whose name I have forgotten who looked closely at the original *Koine Greek*. Greek is a funny language in some respects. Every language has its own peculiarities which make it difficult to translate at times. English, which is a polyglot language made up of just about everything that has ever existed, is a nightmare to translate into other languages. We claim that we have strict rules for forming sentences, but yet we violate those rules at every turn. Greek is no exception. For example, every language has **pronouns**, words which refer to individuals or groups, such as **he, she, him, her, their** and **them**. In English, there is a proper time and place to use each of those pronouns. You would never, for example, refer to a man as a "*she*". Well, normally never, if you get my drift. In Greek, however, many of the pronouns are **gender generic**, drawing their gender from the context of the sentence in which they are being used. So, if in a sentence I am talking about a **man**, I will use the Greek pronoun **autos** to talk about **him**. But if I am talking about a **woman**, I will also use **autos** to refer to **her**. It's up to the reader to figure out if I am talking about a **he** or a **she**. But what if I refer to both a **man and a woman in the same sentence**? Then it becomes a bit trickier. I just gave you a hint about the passage that I referred to earlier in this article. Hint: take a close look at the original Greek in Strong's Concordance regarding Matthew 5:31 and you will get a real eye-opener. I'll let you do the research on this one yourself. Let me know if you figure it out. It will forever change your understanding about what the Bible says about divorce.

These same problems exist in Greek when we are dealing with this passage in Revelation. Let me explain. The Greek word translated as **image** is the word **ikon**, from which we get the English word **icon**, meaning **statue**. Now, this word in Greek can be either **singular** or **plural** depending on how it is used in the sentence, so the correct translation of the word in Verse 14 could be either **statue (1)** or **statues (many)**. In India, as in many countries, there are many **ikons** or **icons** or **statues** or **idols** to many gods in one household. It is not uncommon for a family to worship a number of gods, each one with its own specialty. One god might be worshipped when fertility is needed. Another might be worshipped when financial deliverance is required, and so on. Many businesses in India have pictures or statues of the Hindu god of prosperity, *Ganesha*, somewhere on the premises in plain view. If we take the use of **ikon** in the Revelation passage to refer to **multiple statues or idols**, we find that each

household would therefore be required to make or purchase their own **ikon** representing the Anti-Christ. That's not really so far-fetched when you consider how many Christians around the world today have **statues of Jesus** in their homes or on their car dashboards. In fact, there's a mean-spirited old song that goes like this: "*I don't care if it rains or freezes, 'long as I got my plastic Jesus, up on the dashboard of my car!*". Where does veneration and respect turn into idol worship? That's a good question, and a tough one to give an honest answer to, since it depends so much on the individual involved. Let me give you an example. Our house is simply **loaded** with Christian symbols and pictures of Jesus. Are those pictures **ikons**? Not to me or my wife, they're not. We just love Jesus so much that we want as much in our home as possible to **remind us of Him**. In my office alone, I have a beautiful velour painting of an outline of Christ's face, one of his outstretched arms, and the cross behind Him, a large statue of Jesus on top of one of my bookshelves, and a very special painting of Christ right above my desk, slightly to the right and above my head. The picture was done by a precious Sister Mary Angelica, who I will have to wait to meet until we all arrive safe and sound in heaven. On His chest is the standard Catholic symbol of the Sacred Heart. I don't have a problem with that at all. And, above and behind His head are three shafts of light, one going to the left, one going to the right, and one going straight up. Adding Christ's body into the picture forms a perfect cross. It is my absolute all-time favorite picture of Jesus. And when I pray, there are a lot of times that I look at the picture and pray to **Him. Not** to the picture. The picture merely acts as a **point of contact** for me that helps me focus on **Him**. There are also a lot of times when I simply close my eyes and pray to Him, not looking at anything at all. Some Christians out there are probably having a heart attack right now. How could I, as a Pentecostal, have an **idol** in my house? Well, buddy, if it were of anything **other than my Jesus**, I would agree with you. It most certainly would be an idol. But these pictures and statues that we have, along with angels, crosses and doves by the ton, all simply let the Lord know how much we truly love Him.

In the meanwhile, we now have, instead of some solitary statue like Nebuchadnezzar's mighty statue in ancient Babylon; an **ikon** of the Anti-Christ in **each and every household in the entire world!** What is the advantage of that? Well, it has to do with an alternate translation of **another** Greek word. Verse 15 proceeds to tell us that the False Prophet is given power to give **breath** to the image(s) of the beast, so that it (they) can speak and command those who will not worship it (them) to be killed. But how is the Spiritual Gestapo of that time going to know whether I am worshipping the Beast or not? Well, the word which is translated **breath** in Verse 15 is the Greek word **pneuma** which can mean **breath, life or spirit**. So, in a perfectly legitimate alternate translation of the verse, the False Prophet doesn't simply cause the statues to **come alive**, he causes a **demon** or **unclean spirit** to enter into each of the statues all over the world, in every home. Now we have the perfect "*Soul Patrol*" in place. Every household is required by law to have an **ikon** of the Anti-Christ somewhere in plain view in their home. Each **ikon** is inhabited by a **pneuma**, a minor demon or imp. So, if Monday comes and goes and all of the family fail to gather at the shrine to the Anti-Christ and worship at the feet of the **ikon / pneuma**, the **elemental spirit** in charge of patrolling that household quickly reports back to its superior, either a human or demonic strong man, that there has been a worship violation in the household of thus and such a person. Talk about Big Brother! There would be a swift and brutal reprisal for the failure to comply, and the devastated household would stand as a mute reminder of why worshipping the Beast out of the Sea is a darned good idea. This is why Christians and Jews will have to flee to the wilderness, to the mountains, or hide in underground bunkers, surviving on a purely barter system for obtaining basic food stuffs and other necessities of life. Now, I'm not saying that this interpretation is the absolutely correct interpretation, but it is a viable alternative that makes a whole lot of sense.

All of these measures have slowly and surely stripped away all of the basic freedoms which we take for granted here in the United States. But the two Beasts are not quite done yet. Just like cattle, we are going to be branded with an identifying mark. But that is not a subject for today, for we have run out of time. Stay tuned for tomorrow, when we examine carefully, without getting one ourselves, **The Mark of the Beast**.

Day 30 – Mark of the Beast



“¹⁶ He causes all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and slave, to receive a mark on their right hand or on their foreheads, ¹⁷ and that no one may buy or sell except one who has the mark or the name of the beast, or the number of his name. ¹⁸ Here is wisdom. Let him who has understanding calculate the number of the beast, for it is the number of a man: His number is 666.” – Revelation 13:16-18

In today's *E-Pistle* we examine the final, ultimate indignity which the Anti-Christ and the False Prophet will foist upon all mankind, having to be **marked like cattle being led to the slaughter**. And slaughter it will be, once the terrible 7th Seal has completed itself, and one 200 million man army lies dead south of Jerusalem in the Valley of Jehoshaphat and another massive army lies dead north of Jerusalem in the Valley of Megiddo, a.k.a. Armageddon. As a 30-year veteran of the computer industry, I have watched the steady march of our technology and culture toward this point for a very long time. I am sure that as Christians down through the ages read this passage, they could not imagine any circumstance under which they would allow themselves to be branded in such a way. My response to them and to any others today who question that mankind should willingly undertake such a project (we are talking about **global** branding or implantation of all peoples, you know!) is that it is **just like the old Bedouin tale about the camel and the sandstorm**. What? Haven't heard it? OK. It goes like this: Once upon a time, there was a solitary Arab Bedouin who owned only the clothes on his back, a raggedy tent, and a flea-bitten old camel. As they were traveling across the desert, a sand storm came up suddenly. Hurriedly the Bedouin erected his tent and made it safely inside just as the storm struck. It was a terrible storm, and as it raged in all its fury, he could hear the sound of the old camel outside groaning under the pelting grains of sand. Then a voice pierced through the howling winds. "*Master, oh Master*", it said, "*Please have mercy on your poor old camel! While I can close my eyelids and protect my eyes from the sand, my sensitive nose hurts so from the stringing sand. May I please just stick my nose under your tent till the storm passes?*" The Bedouin thought and thought. He had never, under any circumstances, allowed the camel into his tent. But the thought of his faithful mount suffering in the storm overwhelmed his good judgment, and so he permitted it to be so. For a few minutes, everything was fine. But then the camel spoke again, this time requesting permission to protect his ears. Reluctantly, the Bedouin granted permission. Now the whole head of the camel was inside the tent, with its body kneeling just outside. I'm sure that you know the rest of the story. It wasn't too long before the entire camel was safely inside the tent, and our poor Bedouin buddy was sitting outside in the howling sandstorm, wondering how he had gotten himself into such a mess.

Now let me tell you a true story about merchandise branding that parallels that story, one that I know from my days working for NCR, the National Cash Register Corporation. It used to be, not too many years ago, that each can on the supermarket shelf was marked and priced **individually**. Every smart shopper prided herself on digging through the cans on the shelf until she reached the **oldest** cans in the far back. Why the oldest? Because they had the **lowest prices** on them! I can still clearly remember the hue and cry that went up when supermarkets began to put products on the shelf **without a price on them**. Why were there no prices? Because each individual can had a **UPC** (Universal Price Code) on it. That UPC was tied to a database inside the store's computer, and every cash register was also attached to the computer. All the store manager had to do once the initial inventory was set up was to maintain price and product changes. I can still remember Don Surber, the head of the Evansville NCR Retail Division, shaking his head and saying, "*The ladies are never gonna accept this!*" Well, as good a businessman and individual as Don was, he was nonetheless wrong.

Once the ball began rolling, there was no stopping it. Soon, master inventory programs were being marketed to retailers which could allow the maintenance and update of all inventory chances and pricing for an entire **chain** of stores, all from one central location. Then, additional modules were allowed so that stores could be grouped into regions, with local pricing adjusted to whatever the market would bear. I developed a great deal of software for the grocery industry, and so I watched and participated in this electronic snowball cascading down the mountain, growing ever larger as it rolled downhill. The electronic mark now had moved from being a **novelty** to a **luxury** to a **commodity** to a **necessity**.

Once marking objects electronically became a standard, acceptable practice, the next logical step was to start marking animals. Enter, stage right, a technology called RFID. According to Wikipedia, the online encyclopedia, "*Radio-frequency identification (RFID) is an automatic identification method, relying on storing and remotely retrieving data using devices called RFID tags or transponders. An RFID tag is an object that can be applied to or incorporated into a product, animal, or person for the purpose of identification using radio waves. Some tags can be read from several meters away and beyond the line of sight of the reader. Most RFID tags contain at least two parts. One is an integrated circuit for storing and processing information, modulating and demodulating a (RF) signal, and other specialized functions. The second is an antenna for receiving and transmitting the signal. A technology called chipless RFID allows for discrete identification of tags without an integrated circuit, thereby allowing tags to be printed directly onto assets at a lower cost than traditional tags.*"

Notice in the previous quote how it calmly states, "**product, animal or person**"? It's interesting to note that the original use of RFID chips was by the Russians to spy on people all the way back in 1948. In recent years, RFID technology uses have literally exploded. Farmers implant RFID chips in their cattle so that they can know where each cow in the herd is located. How is that possible? I'll explain that part when we talk about the next step in the technology parade. Many countries are now embedding RFID's in their passports, with Malaysia leading the way all the way back in 1998. The US followed suit in 2006. Shipping and transportation all over the world are racing to embrace RFID. Now both Wal-Mart and the US Department of Defense have mandated that RFID technology be included in all product shipped to them. The list goes on and on and on. It won't be too long before every credit card you have has an embedded RFID in it, tracking your income, expenses, purchases, preferences and everything else about you on a global scale. In short, there will be nothing about you that big brother (the retailer/the banker/the government) won't know about you. One step closer to not being able to buy or sell without the mark.

There is a strong push to implant all pets with RFID chips, along with all livestock. But it is what has also developed alongside RFID that makes the technology move from helpful to chilling. Welcome to the world of the **GPS**. The **Global Positioning System (GPS)** is the only fully functional Global Navigation Satellite System (GNSS) on our planet. Utilizing a constellation of at least 24 Medium Earth Orbit satellites that transmit precise microwave signals, the system enables a GPS receiver to determine its location, speed, direction, and time. An earth-bound GPS unit needs **four satellites to quadrangulate its exact position on the globe**. Fortunately, the current satellite grid, consisting of 31 active satellites as of 2007, is so comprised that no matter where you are, anywhere in the world, **your GPS unit can "see" six of them at any given point in time**. At the moment, GPS units in fishing boats, cars and the like are a luxury, but it will only be a matter of time before they move through the four-step process we described earlier until they become a necessity. The same holds true in the automotive industry with regards to embedded cell phones and "blind-side" detectors.

Now, let's do a little extrapolation and look just a few years into the future. RFID technologies and GPS technologies have been blended and improved so that any RFID implant can be seen anywhere on earth by the now vastly improved "eye in the sky" GPS system. Both technologies have now become global and universal. Following the successful implantation of all pets, governments all across the world push for and quickly pass legislation for the implantation of all elderly individuals, in order to protect them from wandering off from their various nursing homes. Within a few years, legislation is being passed to implant all children at birth with their own RFID/GPS implant chip, either on their hand or on their head. Since the devices are subcutaneous (under the skin), no one even knows that they are there until a child suddenly shows up missing. Has the child been abducted? Killed? Run away?

No problem! Every child can be located instantly using the network of supercomputers that makes up our very own version of *Skynet*, the self-aware global computer network which eventually declares war on mankind and nearly destroys it in the **Terminator** series movies. Older individuals resist the technology, of course. That is to be expected. But as soon as they grow old, they are implanted against their will, for their own good, of course. And each new crop of babies coming up is automatically implanted, also for their own good and protection. Within a few decades, everyone on the planet who wants to buy, sell or even live within the world economic community is implanted. Only those few rebel Christians and Jews who have fled into the wilderness and choose to live outside the loop by barter and subsistence farming have not yet been drawn in. And then, when economic chaos on a global scale brings to power a new, ruthless dictator who uses this previous benign technology to control and dominate the world, we have finally arrived at the point that John saw us at almost 2,000 years ago, when such technologies were not even thinkable by even the most brilliant of men.

There remains one final piece to be placed in the puzzle. In order to force mankind to take the mark to buy and sell, it is also necessary to **make currency obsolete**. But before that could happen, it was necessary to invent **electronic money and a paperless economy**. NCR also had strong inroads into the banking industry, and so I had frequent conversations with Marilyn Grimwood, the banking programmer for the branch. Banks hate paper. Every time they have to process a piece of paper, it costs them money, albeit only a small percentage of a penny. But banks use money to create money, and they, more than anyone else, know how to squeeze a penny till it screams in agony. And although banks hated paper, they were bound to it. Federal regulations required a more detailed, more accurate **paper trail** or **audit trail** than any other industry in the world. My youngest son works as the head teller for a branch office of a bank in Indianapolis, and his predecessor was terminated for allowing several bogus checks to get by her, thus costing the bank several hundred dollars. There is little or no mercy in the banking industry.

As computers began to invade the world of banking, smart managers realized that it might be possible to replace a **paper audit trail** with an **electronic audit trail**. Instead of 6- and 8- part forms, now everything could be held inside of a computer's removable disk platter and stored electronically. Gradually, as software became sophisticated enough to guard against electronic theft, Federal watchdog agencies began to approve the **electronic transfer of funds (EFTS)** between banks. That was step one. It is ironic, however, that the first computer crime was committed by an NCR programmer who discovered that by simply changing the bank's interest calculation routine to **truncate** results rather than **round** them, he could put untold thousands of dollars into his private account each and every month, a half a penny at a time. Once EFTS was established between one bank and another, the next point of lobbying and software development centered on the electronic transfer of monies between the **bank** and the **retailer**. That didn't take long. One final step remained. Now the consumer had to be convinced to do away with hard currency and even paper money and accept the use of a plastic card with their account number and an electronic stripe containing all his banking industry information. Enter **Visa, MasterCard** and **American Express**. At first, just like the camel's nose, plastic purchasing power was only a mild inconvenience. But as time has gone on, the entire industry has move away from hard currency to the use of plastic. Now, Visa has a series of commercials out that portray the use of a check or cash as a **huge inconvenience** to the retailer and fellow consumers. How long will it be till Abdul is sitting totally outside the tent? And how far do we need to go to be at a point where one can neither buy nor sell without **the Mark of the Beast**?

Now we have to deal with another issue. What on earth does the Bible mean when it talks about the **number of his name**? In order to understand what Scripture means, you have to go back to a group of individuals called the **Masoretes**. They are also known in the Bible as **Scribes**. The word *Scribe* actually means **counter** in Hebrew. Not counter as in a kitchen counter, but as in a person who **counts things**. What do they count? **The numbers of names**. Actually, the numbers of **all** words. Let me explain. Our alphabet consists of 26 characters based largely on the ancient Phoenician alphabet. Each letter in the alphabet has an **ordinal position or value**. What is an ordinal value? Well, the word ordinal comes from the same root word from which we get ordain, ordinance and other similar words. All of them have to do with a **position, place or number**. The ordinal position or number of the letter "**A**", for example, is one, because it is the **first** letter in the alphabet. The ordinal position of the letter "**B**" is 2, "**C**" is 3, and so on. To find the ordinal value of any given word, you

simply take the ordinal values of each of the letters and add them together. For example, let's take my name and use it as an illustration:

Letter:	R	A	Y		Y	O	U	N	G
Value:	18	1	25	0	25	15	21	14	7

Can you see how the ordinal value or **number of the letter** works? Now, how do we arrive at the **number of my name**? Simple! We just **add them together** to get what we call a **checksum** in the computer industry. That's exactly what the Masoretes did. They would transcribe a line of text from the Old Testament, and then laboriously count the ordinal values in all of the letters in all of the words on that line. They would then compare the number they arrived at with the **already known checksum** for that particular line of Scripture. Whew! Can you imagine? That's why the word *scribe* in Hebrew simply means *counter*. But it wasn't enough just to count. If the checksum for that line was in error, there was no such thing as erasing and there was no such thing as a backspace or delete key. **Any** error meant the **immediate** discarding of the **entire** text! I'll guarantee that those boys weren't given to making mistakes! This is why we can be assured of the absolute authenticity of what is called the **Textus Receptus**, or **received text** of the Bible. Unfortunately, in crafting, if I can use that word, many of the newer translations of the Bible, including the New International Version or NIV, the translators made the huge mistake of including two additional texts above and beyond the Textus Receptus. They were called the **Textus Vaticanus** and the **Textus Sinaiticus**. The Textus Vaticanus is called such because it was found on an old shelf deep within the storage areas of the Vatican in Rome. Unfortunately, it is filled with erasures and corrections, the very thing which the Masoretes despised and would not permit. In all probability, it was so badly flawed that it was simply stuck on a shelf, left there and forgotten. The same is true of the Textus Sinaiticus. It was found in the **trash heap** of the Monastery on the supposed Mount Sinai, and is filled with even **more** erasures and corrections. By all Masoretic standards, both texts should have been flung into the fire and burned. In fact, the Monks were busy using the pages of the Textus Sinaiticus for kindling to start fires when a "scholar" "rescued" the worthless piece of scrap from the dump. As a result, many modern translations are based not on the Masoretically accurate version of the text, the Textus Receptus, but on an unholy amalgam of all three texts, with most of the errors of the two flawed texts incorporated into the newer translations, and many key passages now omitted. I taught out of the NIV for almost 15 years before a friend of mine began to point out all the discrepancies to me. After I spent a full afternoon comparing one passage to another, and then to the original Greek, Aramaic and Hebrew, I came away appalled. I could no longer use the NIV to teach, preach or study from, because I could no longer trust the authenticity of its translation or its faithfulness to the original text. In addition, I also discovered that a practicing homosexual and a practicing lesbian were actively involved on the translation committee, and carefully and skillfully mistranslated almost every Scripture passage about sexual perversion so that their own sins were no longer sins at all! For one of the few times in my ministry, I was faced with a real dilemma regarding the Scriptures. I could no longer use the NIV. But the KJV or King James Version had far too many **anachronisms** in it to be useful in teaching the average person. What's an anachronism? It is a word **whose meaning has changed so much over time** that it no longer means **anything vaguely resembling the original meaning of the word**. Let me give you a classic example. In I Corinthians Chapter 13, the famous "Love Chapter", Paul says, in modern English, "*now three things remain constant: faith, hope and love, and the greatest of these is love*". You've all heard this passage in one manner or another. But that's not how the King James Versions says it. Where the modern word to use would be correctly translated **love**, the King James translates it **charity**. What on earth is going on? We think of charity as giving to the poor, usually money. But that's not what the word meant in the 16th Century when King James I of England ordered the translation made. Another classic example is the word **stench**. Today, it means a strong, nasty smell, like the kind that would come from a sewer or the body of a dead animal. But Shakespeare, writing in one of his plays, said that "***the stew doth have a most savory stench***". Duh, what??? I thought **savory** meant **good-tasting**? That's right. **It still does**. That particular word has not changed or mutated in its meaning since the 16th Century. But in Shakespeare's day, the word **stench** merely meant **a strong smell, either good or bad**. Today, the meaning of the word has mutated to mean a **negative strong smell**. This is true of hundreds, if not thousands, of words which were used in the days of James I and are still used today, but with a **totally different meaning**. In studying living languages, scholars have found that a language changes so much that a new translation of any book is required on an

average of every 100 years. And that's where the problem comes into play with the KJV. The scholars who did the translation did a brilliant job, given the resources that they had. In addition, since most of the people of that day were illiterate, the translators came upon a brilliant method to help people sitting in the pew remember Scripture passages that were read to them. They already knew from the Bible that **"faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the Word of God"**. So, as they translated each passage, they **deliberately chose words that had both the correct meaning and had a certain rhyme or rhythm to them**. In other words, the translators of the King James Bible were the **rappers** of their day! They presented the truth with words whose meaning was **technically** correct, but which also had a bounce to them, just like the poetry which abounded in those days. Nowadays, we write really stupid poetry (in my humble opinion). Most of it doesn't rhyme or even make sense. But in those days, ah, the beautiful, melodic rhapsodies which they did weave! (What was **that** all about, dude?) They weren't in as much of a hurry as we are today. They took their time in both composing and writing things, and, frankly, had a great deal more to say than we seem to have today. Consider, if you will, the beautiful penmanship of one Thomas Jefferson, who wrote the Declaration of Independence. And look at the signatures of most of those men, starting with the now-famous John Hancock. When asked why he wrote his name so large on the document, he jokingly said that he wanted to be sure King George III could read it without his spectacles! As a result of this cultural emphasis on the spoken word, the KJV has a wonderful sense of rhythm and rhyme to many of the key passages, such as Hebrews 11:1, the ultimate definition of faith, which says:

"Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen."

Frankly, I find that virtually every passage of Scripture that I have ever memorized is in the original KJV language, for that very reason. I find it also to be virtually impossible to memorize passages in any other translation, because they didn't translate for the easy mental capturing of the passage, either by ear or by eye. What version do I use, then? The **New** King James Version, which has intelligently removed all the anachronisms found in the almost-400-year-old KJV (completed 1611 AD), but which faithfully retains all the lyrical structure of the original text, thus making it relatively easy to memorize. I have found, however, a fair number of mistranslations in both the KJV and the NKJV. That's why I so often go back to the original Hebrew, Aramaic or Greek. The rule of thumb is that if it doesn't make logical sense the way it is currently translated, there's good cause to believe that there has been a translation error, caused either by a misunderstanding of the original usage or meaning of the root word, or by the cultural bias of the translators themselves. They were, after all, human just like you and me. And please understand, I am not questioning the integrity of the Word of God, nor its authenticity. In the original languages, I believe the text to be both **divinely inspired and literally true**. But I do **not** believe the same can be held true for the translators of those texts down through the millennia. That's why I study as hard as I do, so that I can bring you what is, to the very best of my understanding, the **original, literal Word of God!**

Meanwhile... Oh, yes, we were talking about **counting**, weren't we? Sorry about that. Once again I have wandered far afield from our original topic. Let's go back to the original example of my name.

Letter:	R	A	Y		Y	O	U	N	G
Value:	18	1	25	0	25	15	21	14	7

Now, if I add all the ordinal values of all the letters in my name, we find that the **number of my name is 126**. That's the **checksum** of the values. The computer industry took this ancient concept and recycled it in the early days of the punch card. As more and more companies began using computers to track their customers, they began to assign them **customer numbers**, usually about six or seven digits long. But as data entry clerks began to enter this information, two different kinds of errors began to creep into the information. The first kind of error was a **transcription error**. Let's say that your account number at the local men's store was **127571**. But in keying your most recent purchase in, the data entry clerk keyed in **126571**. That's a **trans (through) – scription (writing) error**. She simply keyed in an incorrect digit. Perhaps her finger accidentally hit on both keys, and the six registered instead of the seven. The other kind of error was a **transposition error**. Let's take your account number again, **127571**. When the clerk keyed it in, she had a momentary micro-stroke and entered **125771**. See what happened? She **trans (through) – posed (position)** the two digits.

Either way you look at it, unless the error was detected, you just got a free suit, dude! How? Because if another person had a **legitimate** account number identical to the number that the clerk just keyed in, your purchase just got charged to their account! Cool, huh? Now, almost all systems use monitors to bring up the account name and address in response to the account number entered, so it's much harder to make a mistake like that, but in the old days, we didn't have monitors, just keypunch machines or cash registers that weren't smart enough to talk to a central computer that could talk back to it. So programmers had to devise another scheme to avoid most of those mistakes, and they arrived at a solution not dissimilar to their ancient counterparts. They developed **check digit verification** schemes. How do they work? They assigned each digit in the account number an **ordinal value**, but using a mathematical formula to determine what the **weight** or **ordinal value** of each digit should be. If I lose you here, don't feel bad. It took me a while to catch on when I first was introduced to the concept. There were many check digit verification schemes, but the 1-3-7 method was the most popular and the most mathematically accurate. Using this method, it assured that some 97% of all account numbers were entered correctly. How did it work? Back to the example board, students! Let's take our friend's account number from the last page and use it to illustrate (you can just **tell** I was a teacher, can't you??? Grrrr!).

Account Number:	1	2	7	5	7	1
Check Digit:	x 1	x 3	x 7	x 1	x 3	x 7
	==	==	==	==	==	==
Multiplied Result:	1	+ 6	+ 49	+ 5	+ 21	+ 7 = 89 (The Check Sum)

Then, the programmer would take the **last digit** of the check sum, in this case **9**, and **append it to the end of the account number**, making it a **seven** digit number. That way, if the data entry clerk mis-keyed the number, the calculated check sum would not match the digit she had keyed in. Even if she got the check digit (9) correct, if **any** of the preceding digits were incorrect, so also would the check digit calculated by the computer be incorrect. How do I know all this arcane stuff? Because I'm a lot older than I look (I hope!) and I actually wrote many a check digit verification scheme myself! And why do I tell you all this nonsense? So that you can appreciate **how important the Word of God was to the Jews and to the Masoretes themselves, because they went through this kind of stuff all day, every day of their lives!!!** So the next time some rock-headed, Biblically ignorant yahoo starts to rail on and on about how the Bible is filled with errors and inaccuracies, even if you can't remember all this stuff I just told you, heck, just take this book or your Bible (whichever is heavier!) and whack the you-know-what out of him and then repent later! Dude! But remember to **count** the number of times you whack them, in order to be Biblically accurate! (Did I just say that out loud? Merciful Heavens! It must be getting late in the evening! Time for my crumpets and tea and then off to bed! Tata!)

After all that, you finally know and hopefully understand how this **number of the name** stuff works. But there's one more hitch. I calculated the number of my name in **English**. And although your Bible was **translated** into English, it certainly wasn't **written** in English. The entire New Testament, including the Revelation of Jesus Christ, was written in **Koine Greek**. So, now, in order to correctly interpret what the **number of the name of the Anti-Christ is, you need to know Greek**. Hey, and you already thought all this stuff was Greek anyway, right??? But there's even more! Since most of the early Christians were originally Jews, it is entirely possible that the name might **not** be in Greek, but in ancient **Hebrew!** Ain't this fun?

Just to drive you a little bit more craaaazy, here are some of the absolutely correct names of the Anti-Christ, all derived by perfect, inerrant methods (yeah, right, sure):

President Bush, The Pope, Alexander Putin, Prince Charles, Bill Gates, Maitreya (final Buddha), the spirit of heresy, the Roman Empire, the resurrected Nero, Emperor Frederick II, a son of Martin Luther, Peter the Great, Rasputin, Paul of Tarsus, Pope Pius VI, Germany, militant Islam, Mary, the supposedly immortal Count of Saint Germaine and the German philosopher Friedrich Nietzsche. But wait, there's more!

Here's my own personal favorite (or **un-favorite**, if you prefer):

I'd like you to meet **Jose Luis de Jesus Miranda**, the latest in a long line of ex-Pentecostal crazies who fashion themselves either to be the Christ, the Anti-Christ, or perhaps **both** at the same time, like Miranda does. **Both???** Yeah, both. Go figure. Who is this guy, anyway? Well, he's a former druggie who got "saved" under a Baptist ministry, then became Pentecostal for a period of time. It's hard to say when the wheels on his wagon came all the way off, but before long he began to focus exclusively on the teachings of Paul, and came to the conclusion, as almost every cultic leader before him has, that only certain portions of the Bible were divinely inspired, and that certain books, notably those not written by Paul, were to be excluded altogether. He calls his "ministry" **Crescendo en Gratia** or **Growing in Grace**. He has a large Latin American following, and now claims not only to be **Christ**, but at the same time **the Antichrist**. He claims that the Bible is mistranslated and that it really states that **the Antichrist is Jesus Christ's replacement on Earth**. Miranda also preaches that sin and the devil no longer exist and heaven can be found on Earth. He also has SSS, standing for 666, tattooed on multiple places on his body. He teaches that since all of his supporters were chosen by God from the foundation of the world and that they are predestined for heaven, they can live in any way that they choose, since it is "All Grace". This matches up with the **Doctrine of Balaam** and the **Doctrine of the Nicolaitans** mentioned in the Seven Letters to the Seven Churches. In addition, all other religions, including Christianity, are old and worn out. He is, of course, Christ come again and the Anti-Christ, and since now that he is here, the old Christ, Jesus of Nazareth, should no longer be worshiped. His followers, mostly ex-Catholics and ex-Charismatics, are violently opposed to all other religions and have staged numerous violent rallies against all established churches. And lest you think that he is just a crazy chipmunk holing up in a tree somewhere, let me share with you that this unholy lad has ministry bases in over 30 countries, more than 350 churches, more than 300 TV and radio programs, more than 100,000 followers and over 450 businesses, all of whose profits are donated regularly to finance his ministry. Of course, if I were a carnal, unsaved businessman and someone told me that I could go to heaven and still lie, cheat, steal, swindle and do whatever I want to do to make a buck, I'd probably join up and turn the keys to the cash register over to him myself. Scary, huh? Could this lunatic really be the one, true, final Anti-Christ? (Remember that Jesus and John both said that there would be a whole bunch!). It's hard to say. Certainly, he has all the credentials. If he's not the real thing, he's certainly a near-match. Maybe there's only a digit or two off on him. Something is certainly off. And that's the really scary part for me. You see, dear friend, there are **two levels of deception** regarding Satan, sin, the Anti-Christ and everything else that is ungodly and unholy. The first level of deception is when **you know you are lying and you know that you are deceiving others**. Car salesmen, door to door vacuum cleaner salesmen, telemarketing agents and the like all generally fit into this box. Heck, they know what they are selling is bogus. As long as it makes them a buck, they don't give a hoot. But there is another level of deception, and it is far more deadly. The second level of deception is when **you are lying but you believe that you are telling the truth**. **Self-deception is the ultimate form of deception**. Lucifer has been using it on himself for so long he can no longer distinguish the truth from a lie. He really does believe he's going to win. He really believes that he will conquer and keep planet earth. He really believes that he will ultimately sit on the thrones reserved for the Father and the Son. And that's what makes him so compelling for those who do not know who he truly is. **He believes his own lies**.

And so, dear friends, we come to the end of *Episode Five*. As we leave the planet, we are forced to sigh. The earth is a shattered wreck. The true church, the Bride, has been removed long ago. Now the world is gripped in the greatest time of fear, terror and insanity in all of its history. **But wait, there's more!** This is **only the beginning of sorrows**. There is so much more to come. By the time that Jesus Christ, the Only Begotten Son of God, splits the Eastern Sky followed by the Armies of Heaven in Chapter 19, the world will have been driven to the brink of utter annihilation, to the point of an Extinction-Level Event or ELE. Part of the damage will come from on high, during the remainder of the 7th Seal, as the Father completes the punishment of rebellious, evil men. Part of the destruction will come from men themselves, driven mad by fear, greed, lust, witchcraft and every manner of evil thing. And in the midst of the sea of madness, there will still be small islands of devout Jews who now have come to know and believe in **Jeshua Messiach**, along with a remnant of now-repentant but formerly backslidden Christians who have come to the inescapable conclusion that since they were not willing to **live** for Christ, their only hope of salvation lies in being willing to **die** for Him. They will not be disappointed. Yes, they will have to die for Him, but they will also live again, resurrected shortly

before the Millennial Reign begins. But that is the tale of another book. Where do we go from here? Why, to ***Episode Six – Invasion from Outer Space***, of course! I hope to see you there. I pray that you might come to know the fullness of the measure of the stature of Christ in your personal life. And I pray that you might be found worthy and ready to escape all of this which has already transpired and will yet transpire in our next episode. Until then, may God richly bless you as you walk in faith and obedience to Him!

Unrolling the Scroll

Revelation Master Timeline

- I. Introduction
 - A. Blessed is he who reads, hears and keeps (1:3)
 - B. Who is and who was and who is to come (1:4)
 - C. Firstborn from the dead (1:5)
 - D. Kings and Priests (1:6)
 - E. Coming with clouds (1:7)
 - F. Alpha and Omega (1:8)
- II. John in the Spirit on the Lord's Day (1:9-10)
 - A. Write what you see in a book and send it to the Seven Churches (1:11)
 - B. Seven Gold Lampstands (1:12)
 - C. Christ appears & His appearance (1:13-18)
- III. The "Hinge on the Door" (1:19) -- divides Revelation into two sections
 - A. The Things Which ARE (Current Events)
 - B. The Things Which WILL TAKE PLACE AFTER THIS (Future Events)
- IV. The THINGS WHICH ARE – Seven Letters to Seven Churches
 - A. Ephesus – Repent and do the first works (2:1-7)
 - B. Smyrna – You will have tribulation (2:8-11)
 - C. Pergamos -- The Doctrines of Balaam and the Nicolaitans 2:12-17)
 - D. Thyatira -- The False Prophetess Jezebel (18-29)
 - E. Sardis -- Hold fast and repent (3:1-6)
 - F. Philadelphia -- I have set before you an open door (3:7-13)
 - G. Laodicea -- Neither hot nor cold, spew you out of my mouth (3:14-22)
- V. The THINGS WHICH WILL TAKE PLACE AFTER THIS – The Scroll with 7 Seals
 - A. A door standing open in heaven (4:1) [II Corin 12:1-4]
 - 1. Come up here, and I will show you things which must take place after this
 - 2. John alone caught up in heaven
 - 3. Christ appears on Throne (4:2-3)
 - 4. 24 Elders (4:4)
 - 5. 7 Lamps of Fire / 7 Spirits of God / Cherubim (4:5) [Zech 4:2]
 - 6. Sea of Glass, like Crystal (4:6)
 - 7. 4 Living Creatures / Seraphim (4:6-9)
 - a. Full of eyes in front and in back – Living Sentries [Ezek 1:10]
 - b. 1st Creature like a Lion
 - c. 2nd Creature like a Calf
 - d. 3rd Creature like a Man
 - e. 4th Creature like a Flying Eagle
 - B. Scroll written on both sides with 7 Seals (5:1-14) [Zech 5:1-4, Ezek 2:9-10]
 - 1. 1st Seal – White Horse -- WAR IN NORTHERN HEMISPHERE (6:1-2) [Matt 24:6-7]
 - a. Bow -- Instrument of War
 - b. Crown -- Ruler of Nation
 - c. Conquering and to conquer – War
 - d. [Zechariah 6:1-6] -- Northern Hemisphere
 - 2. 2nd Seal – Red Horse – ETHNIC GENOCIDE IN 10/40 WINDOW (6:3-4) [Matt 24:6-7]
 - a. Take peace from the earth
 - b. That men should SLAY ONE ANOTHER
 - c. A great sword (beheading)

3. 3rd Seal – Black Horse – CROP FAILURE IN NORTHERN HEMIPHERE (6:5-6)
 - a. Pair of Scales – Symbol of trade, commerce in John’s day
 - b. Quart of wheat for a denarius (one day’s pay)
 - c. 3 quarts of barley for a denarius
 - d. Collapse of wheat and barley crops
 - e. Do not harm the oil and the wine – principal crops in the Mediterranean
 - f. Area out of which will probably come the Anti-Christ
4. 4th Seal – Pale Horse – PLAGUE/FAMINE IN SOUTHERN HEMISPHERE (6:7-8) [Matt 24:7]
 - a. Death, followed by Hades (Hell)
 - b. Power given to them over ¼ of the earth
 - c. Kill with sword, hunger, death & beasts of the earth
 - d. Sick, hungry, weak humanity can’t fight off hungry predators (8:7)
 - (1) Destruction of all green grass causes massive death of herbivores
 - (2) Carnivores come after humanity as major food supply
5. 5th Seal – Global Persecution –Tribulation (6:9-11) [Matt 24:9-13]
 - a. World blames Christians for all their problems
 - b. Church delivered up to tribulation / Greek *thlipsis* (Matt 24:9)
 - c. Global execution of Christians (Matt 24:9)
 - d. Hated by all nations for Christ’s sake (Matt 24:9)
 - e. Pre-Trib church becomes offended and falls away (Matt 24:10) [II Thes. 2:1-3]
 - f. Betray one another, hate one another (Matt 24:10)
 - g. Many false prophets arise and deceive many (Matt 24:11)
 - h. Lawlessness abounds (Matt 24:12) [II Thes 2:6-8]
 - i. Love of many grows cold (Matt 24:12)
 - j. Those slain for the Word of God and their testimony (6:9)
 - k. How long till they are avenged? (6:10)
 - l. Wait until REMAINDER OF FELLOW SERVANTS ARE KILLED (6:11)
6. 6th Seal – Great Tribulation / Greek *megas thlipsis* (6:12-17)
 - a. Global Earthquake (6:12) [Matt 24:7]
 - b. Sun black as sackcloth (6:12) [Matt 24:29]
 - c. Moon like blood (6:12) [Matt 24:29]
 - d. Stars of heaven fall to earth (6:13) [Matt 24:29]
 - e. Atmospheric blow-off (6:14)
 - f. Tectonic plates disrupted – islands and mountains moved (6:14)
 - g. Mankind panics (6:15-16)
 - h. Announcement of upcoming Wrath of God /7th Seal (6:16-17)
 - i. Wind held back globally (7:1)
 - j. Sealing of the 144,000 (7:2-8)
 - (1) Joseph = Ephraim
 - (2) Dan excluded for sin of Golden Calf (I Kings 12:26-30)
 - k. Rapture of First Portion of the Bride / Prepared / Enough Oil (7:9-17)
 - (1) Matt 24:29-31 – Wise and Foolish Virgins, half go in, half left out
 - (2) I Thes. 4:13-18 – We who are alive and remain shall be caught up in the clouds
7. 7th Seal – The Wrath of God (8:1-19:21)
 - a. ½ hour of silence in Heaven / 20 years of peace on Earth (8:1) [II Peter 3:8]
 - b. Announcement of the 7 Trumpets (8:2-6)
 - c. 1st Trumpet (8:7)
 - (1) Hail, fire and blood (8:7)
 - (2) 1/3 of all trees burned up (8:7)
 - (3) All green grass burned up (8:7)
 - d. 2nd Trumpet (8:8-9)
 - (1) Great mountain thrown into sea (8:8)
 - (a) Possibly meteor/asteroid
 - (b) Possibly Mt. Tabor [Matt 17:1-21, Mark 11:11-26]

- (2) 1/3 of sea becomes blood (8:8) – Possibly Atlantic Ocean, 1/3 of all water there
- (3) 1/3 of all creatures in sea die (8:9)
- (4) 1/3 of ships destroyed (8:9)
- e. 3rd Trumpet (8:10)
 - (1) Great star burning like torch – probably comet (8:10)
 - (2) 1/3 of all fresh water becomes poisonous (8:11)
- f. 4th Trumpet (8:12-13)
 - (1) 1/3 of sun struck (8:12)
 - (2) 1/3 of moon struck (8:12)
 - (3) 1/3 of stars struck (8:12)
 - (4) Announcement of the Three Woes (8:13)
- g. 5th Trumpet / 1st Woe (9:1-11)
 - (1) Abyss / Bottomless Pit opened (9:1-2)
 - (a) Holding Cell for angels that married human women
 - (b) Genesis 6:1-4 -- Sons of God married daughters of men
 - (c) Jude 4-6 – Everlasting chains under darkness for judgment
 - (2) Demons in form of locusts released (9:3-10)
 - (3) Led by Abbadon/Apollyon/Destroyer (9:11)
- h. 6th Trumpet / 3rd Woe (9:12-11:13)
 - (1) 4 demons bound at Euphrates (9:13-15)
 - (2) 1/3 of mankind to be killed (9:15)
 - (3) 200 million man army on demonic horseback (9:16-19)
 - (4) No further repentance by mankind / no further Gentile salvations (9:20-21)
 - (5) Angel with little book (10:1-2)
 - (6) 7 Thunders (10:3-4) – Contents unknown
 - (7) Angel swears that with 7th Trumpet, Wrath of God will be done (10:5-7)
 - (8) John takes little book from angel (10:8-11)
 - (9) Holy City trodden underfoot for 3 ½ years (11:1-2) -- 1st 3 ½ years of 7
 - (10) Two Witnesses (11:3-6) [Zech 4:1-5,11-14]
 - (a) Prophecy 1,260 days / 3 ½ years (11:3)
 - (b) Two olive trees and two lampstands of Zechariah
 - (c) Fire comes out of their mouths
 - (d) Power to shut heavens so no rain falls
 - (e) Power to turn waters to blood
 - (f) Power to strike the earth with all kinds of plagues
 - (g) Killed by Abbadon from Abyss
 - (h) Bodies lay on streets of Jerusalem for 3 ½ days
 - (i) People send one another presents, just like Christmas
 - (j) Resurrected by voice from heaven as world watches
 - (k) Ascend into heaven with everyone watching
 - (l) Great earthquake in Jerusalem
 - (m) 7,000 people die
- i. 7th Trumpet / 3rd Woe (11:14-19:21)
 - (1) 24 Elders announce what will happen (11:15-18)
 - (2) Temple of God opened in Heaven (11:19)
 - (3) Woman clothed with the sun (12:1-6)
 - (4) Dragon cast out of heaven (12:7-13)
 - (5) Woman flees into wilderness (12:14-17)
 - (6) Beast out of the SEA / Anti-Christ (13:1-10) [II Thes 2:3-7, Daniel 7:1-28]
 - (a) 7 Heads (13:1)
 - (b) 10 Horns (13:1)
 - (c) 10 Crowns (13:1)
 - (d) Blasphemous name on heads (13:1)
 - (e) Like a Leopard / Pan-Arabic Union (13:2) [Daniel 7:6]
 - (f) Feet like a Bear / Russia (13:2) [Daniel 7:5]

- (g) Mouth of a Lion / England (13:2) [Daniel 7:4]
- (h) Given power by dragon (13:2)
- (i) Mortal wounding of one head (13:3)
- (j) Given authority to continue for 3 ½ years (13:4-5) -- 2nd 3 ½ years of 7
- (k) Granted power to overcome the saints (13:7)
- (l) Authority given over whole world (13:7-10)
- (7) Beast coming out of the EARTH / False Prophet (13:11-18)
 - (a) Causes everyone to worship the Anti-Christ (13:11-12)
 - (b) Performs great signs and wonders (13:13)
 - (c) Makes fire come down on earth like Two Witnesses (13:13)
 - (d) Animates / demon possesses images of Anti-Christ all over world (13:14-15)
 - (e) Mark of the Beast (13:16-18)
- (8) Rapture of the 144,000 (14:1-5)
 - (a) Male, virgin Jews
- (9) Angel preaching everlasting Gospel (14:6-7)
- (10) 2nd Angel announcing Babylon has fallen (14:8)
- (11) Final warning about taking Mark of the Beast (14:9-13)
- (12) Reaping of the earth (14:14-20)
- (13) 7 Plagues / Bowls (15:1-18:24)
 - (a) 1st Bowl/Plague – Sores on people (16:2)
 - (b) 2nd Bowl/Plague – Sea dies/becomes like blood of dead man (16:3)
 - (c) 3rd Bowl/Plague – Rivers & Streams become like blood (16:4-7)
 - (d) 4th Bowl/Plague – Sun scorches earth (16:8-9)
 - (e) 5th Bowl/Plague – Beast’s kingdom blacked out (16:10-11) [Exodus 10:21-23]
 - (f) 6th Bowl/Plague – Stage set for Armageddon (16:12-16)
 - [1] Euphrates dries up (16:12)
 - [2] 3 unclean spirits like frogs performing signs (16:13)
 - [3] 1 from satan, 1 from Anti-Christ, 1 from False Prophet (16:13)
 - [4] Paves way for kings of the East (China, Far East) (16:12)
 - [5] Gather kings of the whole world for Armageddon (16:14)
 - (g) 7th Bowl/Plague – Final devastation of the earth (16:17-19:21)
 - [1] Global earthquake of epic proportions (16:18)
 - [2] Rome broken into three parts (16:19)
 - [3] Cities of the world fall/collapse (16:19)
 - [4] All mountains, islands disappear (16:20)
 - [5] 100 lb hailstones fall (16:21)
 - [6] Great Whore of Babylon / Rome judged (17:1-18)
- C. Invasion from Heaven (19:1-21)
 - 1. Bride has made herself ready / Now complete (19:1-10)
 - 2. Rider on White Horse / Christ (19:11-13)
 - 3. Armies of Heaven follow (19:14)
 - 4. Christ destroys enemy armies (19:15-21)
 - 5. Anti-Christ, False Prophet captured (19 :20)
 - 6. Cast into Lake of Fire (19:20)
 - 7. Satan cast into Abyss / Bottomless Pit for 1,000 years (20:1-3)
 - 8. Completed Bride rules over earth with Christ for 1,000 years (20:4-6)
 - 9. Satan released from Abyss (20:7)
 - 10. Deceives the nations (20:8)
 - 11. 2nd Battle of Armageddon -- Gog and Magog (20:9) [Ezekiel 38]
 - 12. Satan thrown into Lake of Fire (20:10)
- D. Destruction of Heavens and Earth (20:11) [II Peter 3:10]
- E. Great White Throne / Bema Seat Judgment (20:11-15)
 - 1. 2nd Resurrection – General Resurrection
 - 2. Books were opened / Record of works of all men (20:12)

3. Book of Life opened (20:12)
4. Sea, death and Hades give up dead that are in them (20:12-13)
5. Dead judged according to their works (20:12-13)
 - a. Matthew 25:31-46 -- Sheep and Goats
 - b. Romans 2:11-16 – The consciences now accusing, now excusing them
 - c. Daniel 12:2-3 – Some to everlasting life, some to everlasting shame & contempt
 - d. I Corinthians 3:9-15 – The Day will reveal it, but only as through fire
 - e. II Corinthians 5:10 – We must all appear before the Judgment Seat of Christ
 - f. Death and Hades thrown into the Lake of Fire (20:14)
 - (1) The Second Death – eternal
- F. New Heavens and New Earth (21:1-22:21)
 1. New Heavens and New Earth (21:1)
 2. New Jerusalem descends from Heaven (21:2-4)
 3. I make all things new (21:5-7)
 4. Lake of Fire in existence eternally (21:8)
 5. John shown New Jerusalem (21:9-22:2)
 - a. Great wall with 12 gates (21:12)
 - b. Twelve angels at the gates (21:12)
 - c. Names of the tribes of Israel written on gates (21:12)
 - d. Three gates on north, south, east & west (21:13)
 - e. 12 foundations with names of the 12 Apostles (21:14)
 - f. Dimensions of the city – cube @ 1,500 miles in height, width and depth (21:16)
 - g. Wall made of jasper (21:18)
 - h. City is pure gold, like clear glass (21:18)
 - i. Foundations of city adorned with precious stones (21:19)
 - (1) 1st – Jasper (21:19)
 - (2) 2nd -- Sapphire (21:19)
 - (3) 3rd – Chalcedony (21:19)
 - (4) 4th – Emerald (21:19)
 - (5) 5th – Sardonyx (21:20)
 - (6) 6th – Sardius (21:20)
 - (7) 7th – Chrysolite (21:20)
 - (8) 8th – Beryl (21:20)
 - (9) 9th – Topaz (21:20)
 - (10) 10th – Chrysoprase (21:20)
 - (11) 11th – Jacinth (21:20)
 - (12) 12th – Amethyst (21:20)
 - j. 12 Gates are 12 Pearls, each gate a single pearl (21:21)
 - k. Street of the city is pure gold, like transparent glass (21:21)
 - l. No temple in the city (21:22)
 - (1) The Lord and the Lamb are its temple
 - (2) No need of sun or moon, glory of God illuminates it (21:23)
 - m. Nations will bring their glory and honor into it (21:24-27)
 - n. Pure river of water of life (living water) flowing from the Throne (22:1)
 - o. Tree of Life (22:2)
 - (1) In the middle of its street
 - (2) On either side of the River of Life
 - (3) Bears 12 fruits
 - (4) Each tree bearing fruit every month
 - (5) Leaves are for the healing of the nations
 6. No more curse (22:3)
 7. They shall see His face, and His name will be on their foreheads (22:4)
- VI. Closing Statements (22:7-21)
 - A. Warning – Behold, I am coming quickly (22:7)
 - B. John confirms that he saw and heard these things (22:8)

- C. Do not seal the words of this prophecy, for the time is at hand (22:10)**
- D. Too late to change (22:11)**
- E. Blessed are those who do His commandments (22:14)**
 - 1. They may have right to the Tree of Life**
 - 2. They may enter through the gates into the city**
 - 3. Outside (in the Lake of Fire), are dogs and sorcerers and sexually immoral, etc. (22:15)**
- F. I, Jesus have sent my angel to testify (22:16)**
- G. The Spirit and the Bride say, "Come!" (22:17)**
- H. If anyone adds to the words of this Book, God will add the plagues in this Book (22:18)**
- I. If anyone takes away from the words of this Book, God will take away his part from the Book of Life, from the Holy City, and from the things in this Book (22:19)**
- J. Surely I am coming quickly (22:20)**
- K. Amen! (22:21)**

**Thank you for your interest in Unrolling the Scroll
For additional materials or information, please contact us at:**

**Final Great Awakening Ministries
42 Forest Drive
Jeffersonville, IN 47130
(812) 590-2395
www.fgam.org
pastorray@insightbb.com**

Episode Master Outline

Day Title

Scripture

Episode One – The Revelation of Jesus Christ (20 Days)

- | | |
|--|------------------|
| 1. Pre-, Mid-, Post-, Pan-, What? | Revelation 5:1-5 |
| 2. Rightly Dividing the Word | II Timothy 2:15 |
| 3. Getting the BIG Picture | Revelation 1:19 |
| 4. New Business | Revelation 4:1 |
| 5. Many Will Become Offended | Matthew 24:10 |
| 6. <u>The</u> Revelation Of Jesus Christ | Revelation 1:1 |
| 7. Things Which Must Take Place Shortly | Revelation 1:1 |
| 8. Blessed Is He Who Keeps | Revelation 1:3 |
| 9. Who Is, Who Was, and Who Is To Come | Revelation 1:4 |
| 10. Firstborn From the Dead | Revelation 1:4-5 |
| 11. First In Everything | Revelation 1:4-5 |
| 12. Upholding All Things | Hebrews 1:3 |
| 13. Kings and Priests | Revelation 1:4-6 |
| 14. Coming With Clouds | Revelation 1:7 |
| 15. Jesus In the Cloud | Revelation 1:7 |
| 16. Meeting On the Mountain | Revelation 1:7 |
| 17. Every Eye Will See Him | Revelation 1:7 |
| 18. Even They Who Pierced Him | Revelation 1:7 |
| 19. They Cast Lots For My Garments | Psalms 22:18 |
| 20. Alpha and Omega | Revelation 1:8 |

Episode Two – Things That Are (15 Days)

- | | |
|---|--------------------|
| 1. Tribulation, Kingdom and Patience | Revelation 1:9 |
| 2. In The Spirit | Revelation 1:10 |
| 3. Write In A Book | Revelation 1:11 |
| 4. Seven Golden Lampstands | Revelation 1:12 |
| 5. One Like the Son of Man | Revelation 1:13-15 |
| 6. I Have the Keys | Revelation 1:18 |
| 7. The Hinge On the Door | Revelation 1:19 |
| 8. The Seven Churches | Revelation 1:20 |
| 9. Ephesus – Leaving Your First Love | Revelation 2:1-7 |
| 10. Smyrna – Don't Be Afraid Of Suffering | Revelation 2:8-11 |
| 11. Pergamos – Beware Of Balaam | Revelation 2:12-17 |
| 12. Thyatira – Tolerating Jezebel | Revelation 2:18-29 |
| 13. Sardis – Hold Fast And Repent | Revelation 3:1-6 |
| 14. Philadelphia – An Open Door | Revelation 3:7-13 |
| 15. Laodicea – Because You Are Lukewarm | Revelation 3:14-21 |

Episode Three – The Things That Shall Be (31 Days)

- | | |
|------------------------------|---------------------|
| 1. After These Things | Revelation 4:1 |
| 2. In the Spirit | Revelation 4:2 |
| 3. Twenty-four Fine Fellers! | Revelation 4:3-5 |
| 4. The Throneroom of Heaven | Revelation 4:3-5 |
| 5. Cross in the Desert | Revelation 4:7-8 |
| 6. It's About Time | Ecclesiastes 1:9-11 |

Day Title

7. Time Traveler
8. The Order of Melchizedek
9. The Man from Eternity
10. Who Is Worthy?
11. The Scroll
12. The Four Horsemen
13. The White Horse of War
14. The Red Horse of Ethnic Genocide
15. The Black Horse of Crop Failure
16. The Pale Horse of Plague & Famine
17. The Tribulation
18. Decoding the Discourse
19. The Sign of Your Coming
20. Tectonic Boogie
21. Smoke Gets In Your Eyes
22. Planetary Heart Attack
23. Catch Your Breath Before It Runs Away
24. The 144,000
25. Sitting on the Bench
26. Three Strikes, You're Out!!!
27. But Wait, There's More!!!
28. No Private Interpretation
29. Every Nation, Kindred, Tribe and Tongue
30. Who Are Those Guys, and Why Do They Keep Following Us?
31. Who Are Those Guys, Really?

Scripture

Hebrews 7:1-3
Hebrews 7:1-3
Hebrews 7:3
Revelation 5:1-4
Revelation 5:1-2
Revelation 6:1-2
Revelation 6:1-2
Revelation 6:3-4
Revelation 6:5-6
Revelation 6:7-8
Revelation 6:9-11
Matthew 24:3
Matthew 24:3
Revelation 6:12-14
Revelation 6:12-14
Revelation 6:12-14
Revelation 6:12-14
Revelation 7:3-4
Revelation 7:5-8
Judges 18:30-31
II Peter 1:20-21
Revelation 7:9-10
Revelation 7:13-15

Revelation 7:13-15

Episode Four – The Crucified Bride (34 Days)

1. When Will These Things Be?
2. One Question, Three Answers
3. The Times of the Gentiles
4. The Blinding of Israel
5. The Fullness of the Gentiles
6. The Restoration of Israel
7. They Never Knew What Hit 'Em!
8. Five Wise, Five Foolish
9. The Door Is Shut
10. Good and Faithful Servant
11. You Did It Unto Me
12. The First Shall Be Last
13. Many Are Called, Few Are Chosen
14. As Through Fire
15. MEGA Tribulation
16. The Dilemma of Daniel
17. A Pig In A Poke
18. Head of Gold, Feet of Clay
19. Writing on the Wall
20. He Is My Shepherd
21. Ten Toes to Go, Please!
22. Lions and Leopards and Bears, O My!
23. Beware the Bear
24. The Lying Leopard
25. The Mad Mahdi
26. Monster on the Loose

Matthew 24:3
Matthew 24:3
Luke 21:24
Romans 11:25
Romans 11:25
Romans 11:25
Matthew 24:36-39
Matthew 25:1-4
Matthew 25:6-10
Matthew 25:20-21
Matthew 25:37-40
Matthew 20:8-16
Matthew 20:13-16
I Corinthians 3:12-15
Matthew 24:21-22
Matthew 24:15-20
Matthew 24:15-20
Daniel 2:31-35
Daniel 5:3-6
Isaiah 44:26-28
Daniel 2:41-43
Daniel 7:2-5
Daniel 7:2-5
Daniel 7:6
Revelation 13:11-14
Daniel 7:7

Day Title

- 27. "Then"
- 28. Abomination of Desolation
- 29. "Then" – The Sequel
- 30. Till My Change Comes
- 31. Swat Team from Heaven
- 32. Just Like Jesus!
- 33. Old Body, New Body
- 34. Daniel's Master Timeline of Empires

Scripture

- Matthew 24:9-11
- Matthew 24:15-16
- Matthew 24:21-22
- Job 14:12-15
- Matthew 24:30-31
- I John 3:2-3
- I Corinthians 15:48-49
-

Episode Five – The Time of the Beast (30 Days)

- 1. The Worst Is Yet to Come
- 2. 7-7-7, not 6-6-6
- 3. Woe, Woe and...Whoa!
- 4. Silence in Heaven
- 5. The Prayers of the Saints
- 6. Hail, Fire and ...Blood???
- 7. Oxygen Shortage!
- 8. Mountain from the Sky
- 9. Splitting Mountains in Two
- 10. Bitter Waters
- 11. Smoke Gets in Your Eyes
- 12. Locusts from Hell
- 13. The Mutant Menace
- 14. Float Like a Locust, Sting Like a Scorpion
- 15. Math Whiz!
- 16. 200 Million Man Army
- 17. The Seven Thunders
- 18. The Little Book
- 19. Don't Bug Agabus
- 20. Blueprints from the Future
- 21. Elijah Who Is to Come
- 22. My Two Witnesses
- 23. A Woman Clothed With the Son
- 24. Disgruntled Employee
- 25. Cast Out of Heaven
- 26. The Beast from the Sea
- 27. Strange Critter, Strange Bedfellows
- 28. Cheap Imitations
- 29. Fire from Heaven
- 30. Mark of the Beast

- Revelation 8:8-9
- Revelation 1:12-16
- Revelation 15:1-4
- II Peter 3:3-4, 7-8
- Revelation 8:2-5
- Revelation 8:7
- Revelation 8:7
- Revelation 8:8-9
- Luke 24:59-51
- Revelation 8:10-11
- Revelation 8:12-13
- Revelation 9:1-2,4
- Revelation 9:1-2,4
- Revelation 9:3-6
- Revelation 9:13-15
- Revelation 9:16-19
- Revelation 10:1-4
- Revelation 10:8-10
- Acts 21:10-11
- Revelation 11:1-2
- Matthew 11:10-14
- Revelation 11:3-5a
- Revelation 12:1-5
- Revelation 12:3-4
- Revelation 12:7-9
- Revelation 13:1-2
- Revelation 13:1-2
- Revelation 13:3-4
- Revelation 13:11-13
- Revelation 13:16-18

Episode Six – Invasion from Outer Space (14 Days)

- 1. The Whore Of Babylon
- 2. 7 Heads
- 3. 10 Horns
- 4. Demon Prison
- 5. Come Out Of Her
- 6. In One Hour
- 7. The Marriage Of the Lamb
- 8. Getting Ready For the Wedding
- 9. The Spirit Of Prophecy
- 10. I Have Horses, Don't I?
- 11. The Word Of God

- Revelation 17:1-6
- Revelation 17:7-11
- Revelation 17:12-18
- Revelation 18:1-2
- Revelation 18:4
- Revelation 18:5-19
- Revelation 19:7
- Revelation 19:8
- Revelation 19:10
- Revelation 19:11
- Revelation 19:12-13

Day Title**Scripture**

- | | |
|--------------------------|-------------------|
| 12. The Armies Of Heaven | Revelation 19:14 |
| 13. The Wrath Of God | Revelation 19:15 |
| 14. Thrown In Jail | Revelation 20:1-3 |

Episode Seven – All Things New (23 Days)

- | | |
|---------------------------------|---------------------|
| 1. Rule and Reign | Revelation 20:4 |
| 2. The First Resurrection | Revelation 20:5-6 |
| 3. The Millennial Reign | Revelation 20:6 |
| 4. The Final Temple | Ezekiel 40 – 46 |
| 5. The River Of Life | Ezekiel 47 |
| 6. The Lake Of Fire | Revelation 20:14-15 |
| 7. The New Israel | Ezekiel 48 |
| 8. Rebuilding the Planet | Matthew 24:22 |
| 9. Shock Probation | Revelation 20:7-10 |
| 10. The Great White Throne | Revelation 20:11-25 |
| 11. The Gentile Escape Clause | Romans 2:12-16 |
| 12. The Second Death | Revelation 20:14-15 |
| 13. The New Universe | Revelation 21:1 |
| 14. The New Earth | Revelation 21:1 |
| 15. The New Jerusalem | Revelation 21:2 |
| 16. The 12 Foundations | Revelation 21:14-21 |
| 17. The Lamb Is It's Light | Revelation 21:22-23 |
| 18. The Tree Of Life | Revelation 22:2 |
| 19. No More Curse! | Revelation 22:3 |
| 20. "Come!" | Revelation 22:17 |
| 21. Breach Of Contract | Revelation 22:18-19 |
| 22. I Am Coming Quickly | Revelation 22:20 |
| 23. Epilogue – Where From Here? | Revelation 1:1-3 |

NOTE: As I have written this series of books, a strange, wonderful and frustrating thing has occurred. When I first began this project, I walked systematically through the Revelation of Jesus Christ and outlined what I thought would be an iron-clad list of articles which would make up each of the episodes. I couldn't have been more wrong. Once I began a series of articles for a given episode, I found that the articles took on a life of their own, and literally began writing themselves. I now understand what the Psalmist said when he proclaimed that he was the "*pen of a ready writer*". As the Holy Spirit has taken over this project, the articles have grown longer, more detailed, and have taken directions which I would never have anticipated. In doing so, I have been the beneficiary of fresh revelation from God as I wrote. Time and time again, the Holy Spirit would quicken my understanding of the topic I was writing about, and I would begin to add additional materials which I had never understood or even thought of before that very moment. For that reason, this list of articles may or may not end up being an exact match for another episode which has yet to be written. For example, I have already written Episodes One, Three and Four, so that list is pretty well carved in stone. But as for the other episodes, your guess is as good as mine as to whether or not this list of articles will match the finished product. I do know this: the general topic and time frame for each of the episodes is pretty well defined, and not likely to change (famous last words!). So please don't be surprised if, when you purchase the NEXT episode, the article titles don't always agree. I can guarantee you another thing: you will be getting MORE for your money, because the Lord will have given me deeper insight into His precious, Holy Word, and I will be sharing it with you in longer, more complex and more numerous articles. Thanks in advance for your patience in this matter. I hope and pray that you will enjoy the entire series and learn much about the End of Days in doing so.

Dr. Ray Young

Meet Dr. Young



Dr. Ray Young has been studying the **Revelation of Jesus Christ** for over 15 years. He has been in the ministry for over 30 years, and is a **teacher, prophet** and **apostle** in the body of Christ. Dr. Young is also a professional educator, and taught at a university level for 18 years. He is the President and Founder of **Final Great Awakening Ministries** and **Revival Nation Movement**. He is also a published author, having published **Episode 1 – The Revelation of Jesus Christ, Episode 3 – The Things That Are, Episode 4 – The Crucified Bride, Episode 5 – The Time of the Beast, Making Sense of the End Times** and **How to Survive the Coming Crash** and is currently working to complete the full **Unrolling the Scroll** series of seven devotional study guides to the Revelation of Jesus Christ. He can be reached at any of the phone numbers, email address or web site URL's listed below.

Dr. Ray Young
Final Great Awakening Ministries
42 Forest Drive
Jeffersonville, IN 47130

Home Phone: (812) 590-2395
Cell Phone : (513) 227-5416
URL: www.fgam.org
Email: pastorray@insightbb.com

ISBN 978-1-60743-950-9 \$30.00
53000>
9 781607 439509